

# Around The World

---

E. W. Stephens



Class G440

Book 583

Copyright N<sup>o</sup> \_\_\_\_\_

COPYRIGHT DEPOSIT.

















GRAND CANYON, ARIZONA



AROUND THE WORLD

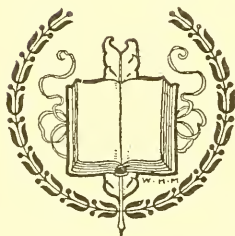


# AROUND THE WORLD

A NARRATIVE IN LETTER  
FORM OF A TRIP AROUND  
THE WORLD FROM OCTO-  
BER, 1907, TO JULY, 1908

BY

E. W. STEPHENS



Columbia, Missouri

E. W. STEPHENS PUBLISHING COMPANY

1909



G440  
.983

---

Copyright, 1909, by  
E. W. STEPHENS

---



© Cl. A261435

## PREFACE

In the years 1907-8 the writer made a trip around the world. He wrote to newspapers some sixty-seven letters in narration of what he saw. It has been suggested that these letters be republished in a book. This has been done in this volume. Its contents are the letters as they were written, with a few corrections and additions.





# TABLE OF CONTENTS

## *THE START—*

I. SOMETHING OF THE JOURNEY AND THE REASONS FOR IT .....	13
II. FROM MISSOURI TO THE SANDWICH ISLANDS..	17

## *HAWAII—*

III. A PARADISE OF THE PACIFIC .....	25
IV. THE TRIP ACROSS .....	34

## *JAPAN—*

V. FIRST IMPRESSIONS OF JAPAN .....	41
VI. FURTHER IMPRESSIONS OF JAPAN .....	47
VII. THE JAPANESE AND THEIR WAYS .....	54
VIII. THE JAPANESE ARMY, EMPEROR'S RECEPTION, JAPANESE THEATER AND SOCIAL CUSTOMS— UNIVERSITIES—THE CITY OF TOKIO .....	61
IX. ART AND OTHER THINGS JAPANESE .....	69
X. NUMEROUS FACTS OF INTEREST ABOUT JAPAN..	76
XI. A FINAL WORD ABOUT JAPAN .....	82
XII. FROM JAPAN TO CHINA—KOREA .....	90

## *CHINA—*

XIII. CHINA .....	99
XIV. FROM THE INTERIOR OF CHINA .....	105
XV. CHINESE CUSTOMS AND CHARACTERISTICS.....	113
XVI. FROM SHANGHAI TO PEKIN .....	120
XVII. PEKIN .....	127
XVIII. THE GREAT WALL, THE EMPRESS DOWAGER AND OTHER CHINESE CURIOS .....	137
XIX. CHINA AND THINGS CHINESE .....	145
XX. HONG KONG AND CANTON .....	153
XXI. SOME CHINESE AFTERMATH .....	160



## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

GRAND CANON OF ARIZONA . . . . .	Frontispiece
IN HAWAII . . . . .	17 ✓
ON BEACH AT HONOLULU . . . . .	23
IN JAPAN . . . . .	39
SACRED BRIDGE AT NIKKO, JAPAN . . . . .	48 <sup>1</sup>
JAPANESE WOMEN, RIKSHAS AND TEMPLES . . . . .	64
SCENES IN CHINA . . . . .	97, 112 <sup>✓</sup>
IN PEKIN . . . . .	128 ✓
SUMMER PALACE IN PEKIN . . . . .	145 <sup>✓</sup>
IN THE PHILIPPINES . . . . .	169 <sup>✓</sup>
IN MANILA . . . . .	193 ✓
IN JAVA . . . . .	207 ✓
IN BURMAH . . . . .	231, 240 <sup>✓</sup>
SCHWE DAGON PAGODA, RANGOON . . . . .	256 <sup>✓</sup>
WOMEN BURDEN BEARERS IN INDIA . . . . .	265 ✓
GREAT MOSQUE IN DELHI . . . . .	272 <sup>✓</sup>
DRINKING OUT OF COCONUTS, SNAKE CHARMERS . . . . .	280
BURNING DEAD BODIES IN INDIA . . . . .	288
BATHING IN THE GANGES . . . . .	296 ✓
TAJ MAHAL . . . . .	304 ✓
KUTAB MINAR MONUMENT . . . . .	312
AT JEYPORE, INDIA . . . . .	320 ✓
ELEPHANTS IN CEYLON . . . . .	328 <sup>1</sup>
SUEZ CANAL . . . . .	343 ✓
EGYPTIAN PYRAMIDS . . . . .	352 ✓



## I.

### SOMETHING OF THE JOURNEY AND THE REASONS FOR IT.

A desire to see the world is, I think, neither unreasonable nor unnatural. So far as I have observed this desire is well nigh universal. That is surely a strange, even an abnormal sort of man or woman who would not behold the world in which he lives. I confess that I am no exception to the general rule. I thought it would be an education. It was. It gave, within a brief period, a knowledge of other countries and a subsequent interest in them which a lifetime of study had not acquired. Repeatedly an hour, even a few minutes of observation, dissipated years of incorrect conception. It is difficult to form a definite or tangible idea of any place which one has not seen. The imagination is a poor substitute for observation.

It is a strenuous physical proposition, this taking of a tour of the globe. The changes of climate, the exposure to disease, the bad food and worse water, the strain of incessant travel, and of contact and worry with all kinds of curious and stupid and unreasonable people, the sensation of loneliness when one realizes he is separated by many thousands of miles from home and native land, these and many other trials and difficulties render travel of that distance an undertaking to which only the physically strong are equal. Hence I concluded to take it while I was yet in the possession of physical strength, while eyesight and hearing were sound, before many ills might come to disqualify for the task.

I regarded it a safe investment. Stocks and bonds and lands and various branches of business are subject to depreciation and may be swept away. But a knowledge gained by travel, which is by far more vivid and permanent than any that can be obtained from books, abides. Memory preserves it as an ever present joy and profit. I did not miscalculate. Now that the tour is over I have an asset which I would not exchange for the time and money it cost. Nothing so broadens and benefits as travel. Nothing so narrows as a limited environment.

Another reason which impelled the trip was that a knowledge might be acquired which would be helpful to others. Visits to the mission fields, contact with the social, religious, commercial and political conditions of the various peoples, a study of their habits, life and systems of thought, and of their history and peculiarities awaken a sympathy for humanity and a knowledge of their needs which must stimulate every intelligent and human observer to a loftier purpose and a broader philanthropy.

Our party of four, all of Columbia, Missouri, left that city on Tuesday, October 8, 1907.

We went westward, because we preferred to undertake the long ocean voyage across the Pacific at the beginning than at the close of our tour, and because we felt that it would be wiser to attempt the strenuous journeys and experience among the yellow races while we were yet fresh.

The journey consumed nine months and nine days. We spent one week in Honolulu, one month in Japan, seven weeks in China, a month in the Philippines, the Malacca States and Java and traveling, a month in India, three weeks in Egypt and traveling, seven weeks in Palestine, and a month making the trip

from the latter country home. We were compelled, on account of the heat, to make our visits to Turkey, Greece, Italy, France and England very brief. But as we had previously visited all of these countries except Turkey and Greece we did not care to linger upon our return journey.

We traveled 36,000 miles, 25,000 by water and 11,000 by land. We were upon twenty-five steamships, visited eighteen countries and over one hundred points of interest. We were not in a storm nor in a steamship or railway accident. We were not ill, not even sea sick. But we did long for home. The natives and the food and climate got fearfully on our nerves. Outside accidents of a not dangerous nature to two members of our party we were not detained an hour by illness or mishap. Nor did we meet with any discourtesy or unfriendliness. Two facts were made manifest: That the provisions for travel are comfortable and excellent the world around, and that among travelers, none receive better treatment, and few so good as Americans. One who travels around the world returns with the profound conviction not only that America is the greatest and freest and happiest country of all, but that Americans are held in esteem by other nations as are no others.

Summing it all up: The trip is well worth while for every one who can afford the expenditure of time, energy and money. Such expenditure is not materially greater than is the same amount which the person of average intelligence and ambition puts forth in the ordinary occupations and outlays at home. The facilities for travel are so excellent, the paths so well beaten that the way-faring man, though he only speak the English language, need not err therein. In the very few places where English is not spoken interpreters are easily available. The

dangers from disease and accident are not more serious than they are at home, and as has been said the interest on the investment is a large one which increases as the years roll on.

Railroads are rapidly penetrating the regions hitherto inaccessible. Within a few years it will be possible to reach, by rail, the most hidden recesses of Asia and Africa. Already facilities of travel extend far enough to satisfy the curiosity of all but the most restless and ambitious explorers, and there is practically no place reached by railroad or steamship to which one cannot go with safety. The white wings of peace overspread the world.







*IN HAWAII*

## II.

### FROM MISSOURI TO THE SANDWICH ISLANDS.

It goes without saying that no land is equal to ours. One of the comforts of a trip around the world is that one is confirmed in the belief. When we had finished the first five days of our journey, that from Missouri to San Francisco, we felt satisfied that we would behold nothing to surpass that which we had traveled over. It is a pleasure to be able, at the end, to realize that our opinion was correct. For where else are there such prairies, such woodlands, such rivers, such soil, such farms and cities, such products, such live stock, such enterprise and progress as in Missouri and Kansas? Where such cosmopolitanism and such manifestation of the progressive spirit of modern civilization?

Where such scenery as that in Colorado and Arizona? Where such mineral wealth as that which lies embosomed in the Rocky Mountains? Where such climate, such prodigality of fruit and flowers as in Southern California? And where such another illustration of recuperative energy and indomitable pluck as that demonstrated in San Francisco, in its resurrection from fire and earthquake?

We went by way of the Santa Fe Railroad upon one of its splendid vestibuled trains, with its observation, sleeping and dining and parlor cars, its electric lights, barber shops, a great hotel on wheels, running at rate of thirty miles an hour through scenery of unsurpassed beauty. No other experience more readily recalls the marvelous progress that has been wrought within the last

half century as does the transformation of the Great American Desert into an abode of flourishing cities and smiling farms, and of the method of traversing it from the ox wagon to the modern express train.

The most noteworthy bit of scenery along the route is the Grand Canon of the Arizona, lying north of the main line of the Santa Fe sixty-four miles, which is reached by a branch railroad from Williams, Arizona. Nowhere have we beheld, nor do we believe there is a more wonderful, beautiful, sublime freak of nature. In richness of coloring, in curious and diversified conformation, in majestic grandeur it has no parallel. The Colorado river, by ages of erosion, has rent a defile in the earth two hundred miles long, fifteen miles wide and a mile deep. The earth has been cut into all manner of curious and fantastic shapes, until it resembles a vast field of architecture extending as far and farther than the eye can reach and it does not require an active imagination to fancy it a vast aggregation of castles and minarets, and towers and temples of every style of architecture. Upon a former visit we descended to the river, which from above, looks to be but a mere branch. But the trip requires a day, is tiresome, and not altogether free from peril. Our party was caught in a thunderstorm, and the writer came near being thrown over a precipice. The trip is not worth the risk. The best view of the canon is from the river. There is a fine hotel there, and the climate during the spring, summer and fall, is delightful. No tourist to the west can afford to miss a visit to this, the greatest curiosity in America, not excepting Niagara Falls, the Yosemite, or Yellowstone Park.

In various portions of Arizona and New Mexico are remains of the ancient cliff dwellings. We visited several galleries of

them in a cliff near Espanola, New Mexico, north of Santa Fe. Rising abruptly from a beautiful natural park of pines is a lofty hill of soft yellow stone, called tufa, out of which has been chiseled over a hundred feet from the base and for over a mile, many chambers, of which there are several tiers and which are accessible from anterior galleries. These are ten or twelve feet in depth and width and seven feet in height, and some of them contain several chambers.

Upon the summit of the hill are the remains of a large stone building of probably a thousand rooms, surrounded by a wall, and probably once used as a fort. The location commands a view of the plain for many miles and was probably selected as a protection against enemies. The dwellings, which were once occupied by Pueblo Indians, have been abandoned for many centuries. The fragments of broken pottery indicate the nationality and occupation of the inhabitants.

California is ever interesting. It is unique. By which we mean that it is unlike any other State or country. Its scenery, its fruits, its climate are *sui generis*. Its fruits are bigger and different from those elsewhere, but we are not prepared to admit that they are better. With the exception of oranges they are hardly so good. They lack flavor. Its flowers are incomparable. There the possibilities of irrigation have been demonstrated. Unirrigated Southern California is largely a desert. What irrigation has done for California it is destined to do for New Mexico, Arizona, and all the arid plains.

Where else in America do we find any region so nearly resembling our conceptions of paradise as in Southern California? Where such profusion of fruits and flowers, as in Los Angeles and Pasadena and Riverside and Redlands and San Bernardino?



Where such health and pleasure resorts as Los Angeles, Pasadena, Santa Barbara, Monterey and Catalina? No wonder that wealth, which gets everything good, has fastened its covetous eyes upon this beautiful region, and that in few sections of America, if in the world, there is a larger number of magnificent homes of the very wealthy than are to be found all over it.

From the time one enters California at Needles until he leaves it at San Francisco or the Oregon line the scene is one of ceaseless interest. The State is one great valley with ranges of mountains upon both west and east. Great fields of wheat and raisins and barley and alfalfa, mammoth vineyards, groves of lemon and orange trees, stretch to the blue sky on the mountain ranges upon either side, except where the arid desert lies, and here the beautiful mirage greets the eye, and one may easily fancy he discerns ships sailing over a placid sea and amid green islands, when all is in reality a sandy plain.

Bakersfield, Stockton, Fresno, Merced, San Jose, Sacramento, Santa Rosa, and many other beautiful and prosperous cities lie along the route, and not far from the coast, Palo Alto, the site of the Leland Stanford University, many of whose buildings were yet in ruins, is passed.

Among the most interesting features of California are the enormous stock ranches owned by men of great wealth. They may be found in the central and northern sections, where the rainfall is ample and the country does not rely upon irrigation. Immense pastures afford grazing for thousands of blooded horses, sheep and cattle, and the life upon these ranches and the fortunes they yield their owners read like stories of romance.

When we reached San Francisco it was in the midst of its rebuilding from the great earthquake and greater fire. That

was over a year ago, and the scene of confusion was such that one took his life in his hands to find his way through the streets. But since then a new San Francisco has risen upon the site of the old one, and is about as different as 1909 is from 1849. Time will come when there will be no greater city in America or in the world. For is it not the gateway to the Pacific? And is not the Pacific destined henceforth to be the chief center of political and commercial activity?

Already the city is growing with rapid strides. Together with the adjacent cities of Oakland, Alameda and Berkeley its proportions have become enormous, and they will grow in the ratio of our rapidly increasing commerce with the Orient. The city has long since passed the era of the pioneer and the adventurer and is in every sense a great metropolis.

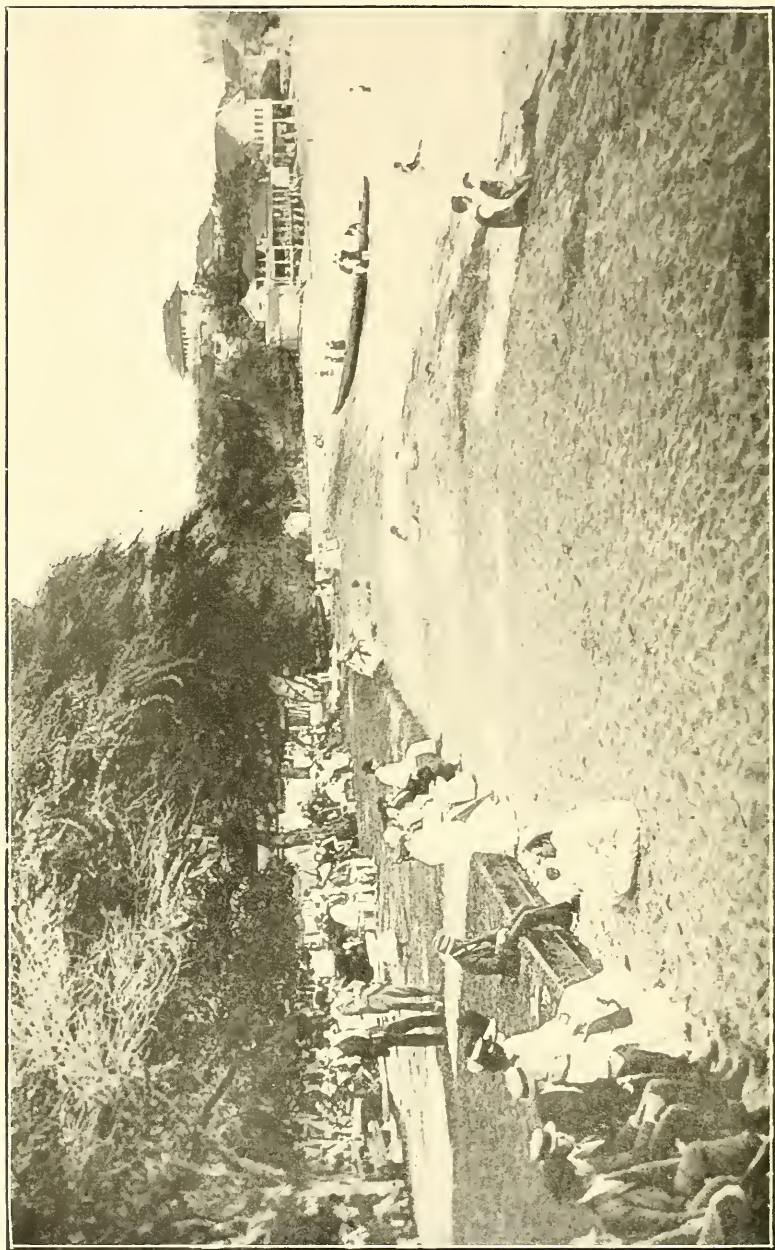
After a few days spent in San Francisco we sailed on October 16 upon the steamer *China*, once regarded the largest steamship upon the Pacific, but now the smallest of the Pacific Mail steamers. Several of the latter are nearly twice as large.

On board were several missionaries sailing to various countries in the orient, and about half of the passengers were bound for Honolulu, where they resided, and which we reached after a fairly pleasant and uneventful voyage of a week.









ON THE BEACH AT HONOLULU

HAWAII.



### III.

#### A PARADISE OF THE PACIFIC.

HONOLULU, November 1, 1907.

This is the name which travelers have given to the Hawaiian Islands. After a visit of eight days to one of them, the Island of Oahu, upon which the city of Honolulu is situated, I am prepared to confirm the wisdom and fitness of the name. Nowhere with the possible exception of Switzerland have we beheld such a composite picture of mountain, valley and ocean, and such a symphony of emerald color of them all. The scene is one of almost entrancing beauty. But what heightens its attractions is the delightful climate, the balmy air, the glorious sunshine, never too hot, and which alternates with almost daily rains, the latter giving a fresh and radiant hue to the vegetation to which the sun adds a yet more brilliant color. The soil is a bright red, which contrasts beautifully with the grass and flowers, plants and trees.

The islands lie two thousand miles southwest of San Francisco and in the same latitude as southern Cuba, Vera Cruz, Mexico, Hong Kong, Calcutta and Central Africa. The climate is distinctly tropical and the heat would be great but for the trade winds which blow incessantly and preserve a temperature the year around which rarely rises above eighty degrees or sinks below seventy. They tell us that they bathe in the ocean on Christmas and New Year's and that the water is not much chillier on those days than it is on the Fourth of July. On November 1 we found sea bathing fully as comfortable as Missouri waters are in August.

## VEGETATION AND HOMES.

The most attractive feature to a Missourian, who for the first time visits a tropical country, is the profusion and luxuriance of the vegetation. Stately cocoanut palms, banyan trees and numerous others give to the landscape a rich tropical aspect, while the beautiful flowers, which bloom perennially, and well-kept lawns add a variety of coloring that is highly attractive. The city of Honolulu, where our ship lands, contains some forty thousand people and is the largest city upon the island. It has many large business houses, wide and well-kept streets, but its chief beauty is in its dwellings, many of which are of the bungalow architecture and are surrounded by large and beautiful yards in which the trees and flowers grow in luxuriant profusion. There is much wealth among the white residents, many of whom have lived here many years and some of whom were born here. No expense has been spared by the wealthier classes in the adornment of their homes. As a place of residence, Honolulu possesses many features that are unique.

## LOCAL INSTITUTIONS.

There are three splendid hotels, the Alexander Young, the Royal Hawaiian and the Moana, all owned by Mr. Alexander Young, and nearly without guests at this season of the year. We stopped at the Moana and have not seen its superior in America or Europe. It not only has a fine table and delightful rooms, but it is upon the seashore at Wakiki Beach, affording its guests the additional attraction of bathing in the surf.

Oahu College is an institution of learning attended by six hundred boys and girls, young men and women, and under excellent management. It has a large faculty presided over by Mr. Matthew Griffith, formerly of New York, and among the teach-


ers is Miss Isabel Gregg, who graduated from Missouri University in 1887. The school has an endowment of over \$300,000, has grounds covering nearly seventy acres, dormitories for girls and boys and several buildings for educational work. In company with Mr. P. C. Jones, treasurer and chief benefactor of the institution, we had the pleasure of attending chapel exercises and addressing the students and we were deeply impressed with the admirable equipment and management.

There is a large central church in which all denominations worship. But there are also Christian, Methodist and Catholic churches and a large native church, the oldest church building on the island. We attended services at the last-named church and were impressed especially with the music. The Hawaiians are natural musicians. Their voices possess a melody we have heard nowhere else.

A Queen's hospital, a large canning factory for pineapples, a penitentiary, state house and judiciary building, the latter the former palace of the king, are among other places of interest.

#### THE ISLANDS.

There are eight islands in the Hawaiian group. The largest is Hawaii, with an area of 4,000 square miles. Oahu, upon which Honolulu is situated, has an area of 598 square miles. The distance around all the islands is 957 miles and around Oahu is 177 miles. The total population of the islands is 154,000. Of these 60,000 are Japanese, 35,000 natives, 25,000 Chinese, 15,000 Portuguese, 7,000 Americans and 1,730 British. The total area of the group is 6,449 square miles, about one-tenth that of the State of Missouri. The chief industry is the growing of sugar, of which it is claimed twenty-six millions of dollars' worth are annually exported. Pineapples are





also being grown considerably. I visited one plantation which is said to produce more pineapples than any other in the world. Rice is also produced in large quantities and among the fruits bananas and alligator pears and papia and poi, the latter three being popular native fruits, are grown in abundance. The poi is made from the root of a plant called taro and is very popular food with the natives. It is a pasty, fermented food, something like mush and when sweetened by sugar is very palatable. The natives live upon it largely and eat it without sweetening it. Papia is a melon and a sort of compromise between a cantaloupe and a squash. Oranges are not grown to any extent. There is a native orange but it is not popular. There are no apples or peaches, or in fact, any of the fruits of the temperate climates. Nor are there any of the cereals, as wheat or corn or barley or any of the grasses common to America. But the grass grown on the lawns is fully as green and tougher than our Missouri bluegrass.

Riding on a railroad train through a large sugar plantation in the island of Oahu I asked a young man sitting opposite if he could tell me what manner of grass we were passing through. He answered that it was sugar and looked at me and smiled. I at once inquired of him if he had ever seen a wheat field or a corn field and he said no. I looked at him and smiled. We got better acquainted and mutually smiled. I confess I had never before seen sugar growing, although I have been in Louisiana more than once. Nor had I ever seen a pineapple plantation. I would not be surprised but that this volume has readers who never saw either. For the benefit of such I will say that sugar cane grows as thick and rank as rye does in Missouri and looks something like it. The stalk becomes as heavy as corn. It has to be constantly irrigated and fertilized.

•



## PINEAPPLES.

The growth of pineapples has not been as long continued as sugar, but it promises to be equally as profitable. The pineapple plant does not require irrigation, but has to be enriched with fertilizers heavily charged with iron. The plant resembles the old-fashioned Missouri flower known as the Devil's Darning Needle, and is set in rows several feet apart. The ground is frequently cultivated and kept free of weeds. It yields about \$180 worth of fruit to the acre and is a very sure crop. In few other places in the world is the growth of the fruit more successful.

## FISH AND SEA FOOD.

An universal and delightful article of diet is the fish, crabs, lobsters and other of the aqueous tribe taken from the ocean. They possess an especially fine flavor. The fish are something wonderful. Probably the most interesting institution in Honolulu is the aquarium. Nowhere else in the world can fish be found of more remarkable and diversified shapes and coloring. It has to be seen to be appreciated. Green, striped, speckled, purple, orange, blue, fishes of most grotesque and curious shapes, reflecting every color of the rainbow and of all shades and designs are to be seen. It is almost worth a trip to Honolulu to see this piscatorial marvel.

## BEAUTIFUL SCENERY.

Several miles from the city of Honolulu is an elevated point called the Pali, to which we were taken in automobiles and from which there is a magnificent view of the island and ocean. The scene is rarely equaled anywhere in the world. The mountains and valleys and ocean, in multifarious coloring, present a scene of gorgeous beauty. The Pali overlooks a dizzy precipice, over

which it is said Kimamahaha I drove thousands of an army when he first took possession of the island of Oahu over a century ago. The bones of some who were thus destroyed, it is claimed, can still be found in the valley below. Most of the island is mountainous and all was evidently of volcanic origin. Only the valleys are susceptible of cultivation. In the island of Hawaii, where the city of Hilo is situated, there is a large volcano still in eruption. Near Honolulu is the extinct crater of a volcano called Punchbowl, in the rear of which is a lofty mountain called Tantalus, from which there is a splendid view of the island. We took an excursion by rail around one half the island, returning by a different route, part of the way by carriage. We do not remember having seen in the same distance more attractive scenery.

#### RELIGION.

The Hawaiian Islands, while first discovered by Capt. Cook in 1778, were originally settled by the Christian missionaries, the descendants of many of whom are now among the wealthiest of the resident population. The development of the islands and their great wealth and commercial importance are the direct result of Christian missions. There are two hundred and seventy-six heathen and religious organizations of different kinds in the islands, with a total membership of sixty-seven thousand, three hundred and thirty-eight. But of these, forty thousand are Buddhists. Of the Christian churches there are one hundred and fifteen Catholic, containing twelve thousand members, and one hundred and forty Protestants, with a membership of fifteen thousand, three hundred and eighty-eight. The Protestant churches are divided as follows: Congregational, ninety; Latter Day Saints, twenty; Methodist, twelve; Episcopal, ten; and Christian, five. In Honolulu there is a flourishing Y. M. C. A. organization under the supervision of Mr. Paul Super, formerly

of Columbia, Missouri, who is doing efficient work. Moral conditions, so far as we could observe, are as wholesome as they are in the States.

#### A LEPER ISLAND.

On one of the islands is a leper colony, where are some one thousand lepers. The disease has been brought from the Orient, but the number of lepers has been reduced nearly one-half by efficient treatment. The disease is not regarded contagious, nor is it always hereditary. There are institutions on the islands for the children of leprous parents and many of them never develop the disease. The disease is incurable, but its effects are greatly mitigated, and it is said, hopeless as are the conditions of the lepers, they are about as happy as other people. The United States will soon erect an institution called a Leprosarium, upon the island, in which indigent lepers will be treated, and scientific men are making strenuous effort to discover an antitoxine to destroy the germ which has already been clearly defined.

#### A UNIQUE EXPERIENCE.

It is a novel and interesting experience to observe how a busy and prosperous population gets along with but one mail in one or two weeks and but one method of reaching the outside world, two thousand miles away. Think of waiting two weeks for the mail or to go away or to get a daily newspaper and you will probably be better satisfied in not living on a main line of railway. A pathetic story is told of the period when there was no cable communication with America. King Kalakaua had been upon a visit to this country and was expected to return upon a certain steamer. A great festival had been prepared and the city was decorated and a public holiday given in honor of the event. A large concourse of people had gone to the wharf to receive him,

when to their consternation and horror the steamer arrived bearing not the live king, but his corpse. He had died in San Francisco only the week previous. Rude shocks often come to those who live in these isolated places.

#### ANGLO-SAXON DOMINATE.

The island also illustrates how the Anglo-Saxon race will dominate all others, even in isolated conditions. While there are not over eight thousand Americans and Englishmen on the island, they are practically in control of all the business enterprises and sway nine-tenths of the social, political and religious influence. The natives are a kindly disposed people of dark complexion, but they do not possess great strength of character, have the easy-going and self-indulgent natures common to the tropics and are gradually diminishing in number and must ultimately be absorbed by the dominant race or disappear. The Japanese comprise by far the largest part of the population, but are chiefly utilized as laborers and do not undertake to cope with the white race in the control of the government or in commercial affairs. There are not so many Chinese, but they too, while liked and regarded more trustworthy than the Japanese, are a subordinate and serving class. I do not remember to have seen, in proportion to the size of the population, more college bred men. The intelligence and ability of the white population, their social position and their moral and religious influence is of a high order.

#### A UNITED STATES TERRITORY.

For ten years or more these islands have belonged to the United States. Mr. Cleveland opposed strenuously the effort to annex them and they were acquired under the administration of Mr. McKinley. It must be admitted they were a valuable acquisition.

They hold the key to the Pacific and when the Panama Canal shall have been finished, they will be of great value to our country. It behooves the United States to fortify them and to establish such a means of communication with them, to make them so accessible as to render impossible a seeming present menace that any other nation, especially the Japanese, shall get control of them.

The government is territorial. There are a governor and other territorial officials and a system of courts appointed by the President of the United States and a legislature elected by the people. Laws are enforced and conditions are quiet and peaceful.

We left this Ocean Oasis with deep regret, doubting whether in our circle around the world we would find any one spot that is more interesting and attractive. Yet, beautiful as they are they do not hold out attractions to men of moderate means, or to laboring people. The land is practically all owned by a few large syndicates, while the labor is monopolized by Japanese and Chinese. There is practically no room for more people, for large corporations have a monopoly of nearly, if not all, the arable land.

#### IV.

##### THE TRIP ACROSS.

When we boarded the good ship Manchuria at Honolulu and waved our adieus to its hospitable people, who in accordance with a beautiful custom had, as we departed, garlanded us with flowers, we realized for the first time that we had cut loose our moorings from native land, and were indeed upon our journey around the world. We could not repress a sigh of regret in bidding farewell to that land of flowers, lovely climate and delightful scenery which we scarcely expect to see surpassed.

As voyages across the Pacific are not as familiar to most people as are those over the Atlantic, a somewhat detailed story of our trip from Missouri to Japan may be of interest.

The distance is 7,873 miles, or nearly one-third that around the globe. It consumed thirty-two days. It could have been made in twenty. We stopped twelve days en route.

There was no delay or accident or discomfort. We were not sea sick. The accommodations were all that could have been desired. The officials were uniformly courteous. The trip was made in October and November and the weather was uniformly pleasant.

While the steamships upon the Pacific may not be as luxurious as some of the larger ocean liners on the Atlantic, they are fully as comfortable and the larger ones equally as steady. We had no storms to test the vessels, but do not believe that the Manchuria, upon which we made most of the trip, would have tossed us about very badly.

We were upon two ships en route. We sailed from San Francisco upon the China, once regarded the largest steamship upon the Pacific, but now the smallest of the Pacific mail steamers. It is 440 feet long. Twenty years ago there was not a ship upon the Pacific that large.

We left that ship at Honolulu and after remaining there eight days, took the Manchuria. It is what might be called a floating palace. It is 640 feet long, has a capacity of 27,000 tons, and can carry two thousand people, 350 first class, 1,400 steerage and its crew, which consists of 273, of whom 46 are white and 227 Chinese and Japanese. It is a twin-screw steamer, and its two shafts, to which are attached the propellers, are 265 feet long and eighteen inches in diameter. It consumes 170 tons of coal daily and leaves with 3,663 tons of coal and 3,000 tons of water. The officers are courteous and the service throughout is excellent. The fare is all that could be desired. The speed of the vessel is between fifteen and sixteen miles an hour. The distance from San Francisco to Yokohama is 5,580 miles. The trip was made in 17 days.

There were one hundred and twenty cabin passengers aboard. Most of them were from the United States, but there were English, Chinese and Japanese. Some were returning to their homes in Asia, some were going to take official positions in foreign consulates, some were globe-trotters like ourselves, and there were twenty-five who expect to engage in missionary work in foreign lands. It was a cosmopolitan, congenial and interesting company who employed themselves in reading, music, games, conversations and in amusements improvised aboard.

There is no rest like that of an ocean voyage. Its isolation and quiet and its pure and invigorating air, as well as the restful-



ness imparted by the limitless and ever sounding sea have a tranquilizing and health-imparting effect unequalled by any other experience with which I am acquainted.

In this busy age when we are so tired and torn by business there is inexpressible relief in the emancipation of ocean travel.

A trip of twelve days with people of so many nationalities, of diverse experiences, of high intelligence and broad information is a rich contribution to one's stock of knowledge, and if the time is properly utilized in extending acquaintance with fellow passengers, the results are of incalculable value.

In crossing the ocean we lose one day. This takes place at the 180th degree of longitude and it makes up for the time lost between Greenwich and the 180th degree. Therefore, when we had spent Sunday night we woke up on Tuesday morning. Monday we cut out. So we have lost one day out of our lives. Unfortunately, however, it is not the only day we have lost. We wish it had been, for the others were lost through our fault and not by reason of the calendar.

Our experience upon the Pacific, different from that upon the Atlantic, is its utter loneliness. Between San Francisco and Honolulu we descried but one ship, while from Honolulu to Japan in a trip of twelve days we did not see one, and besides an occasional bird and a few flying fish not a sign of life. Some of the passengers claim to have seen a whale or two, but these have practically abandoned the track of sea ships and the journey from the Americas to the Asiatic coast may be said to be one unbroken monotony of sea and sky.

Among those aboard the Manchuria were Mr. Mitsui, the Rockefeller of Japan, and Mr. Masuda, his secretary, who is said to be the highest salaried man in Japan. They were traveling around



the world. Mr. Mitsui is said to be worth over a hundred million of dollars and to own coal mines, banks, steamship lines and other properties without limit. Dr. H. M. Hamill, formerly of Mexico, Missouri, now of Nashville, Tennessee, was among the passengers. With his wife, he was en route to Japan to remain some months in Sunday School missionary work.

There are three routes across the Pacific, one starting from Seattle, another from Vancouver, and the Pacific mail from San Francisco, but the latter is said to be the most pleasant at this season of the year.







*IN JAPAN—Our Party Touring in Rikshas—Statue of Buddha—  
Procession of School Children in Kioto*

JAPAN.



## V.

### FIRST IMPRESSIONS OF JAPAN.

Standing upon deck about ten o'clock on Sunday night, November 10, we descried a light at sea, which was followed by another and then another. The captain informed us that the lights were from Japanese fishing boats. A thrilling, almost uncanny sensation crept upon us as peering out into the darkness at this gruesome hour we beheld these flickering warnings that we were nearing the Orient. They were the first physical evidences of the far-away land to which we had been sailing for eighteen days and which had existed heretofore only in our dreams. The captain gently urged us to be quiet and retire to our stateroom and sleep peacefully in the confidence that we would wake up in Asia. We endeavored to follow his directions, but tossed restlessly in our berth as visions of the morrow perpetually haunted our slumber. At three o'clock a. m. the ship stopped, and we knew we were there. At the earliest dawn after a hasty toilet we rushed upon deck and sure enough there was—Asia. At first only the twinkling of the myriad electric lights from hundreds of ships and from the city of Yokohama were visible. But quite soon the mists lifted and we found ourselves in a beautiful harbor, in some respects similar to New York, wherein were ships from all parts of the world, while beyond lay the mountains of Japan. We will never forget it.

#### THE SPECTACLE THAT WAS ABOUT US.

Directly in front lay a large French steamer, floating the colors of that Republic. Just beyond was the Korea, one of the finest

liners of the Pacific Mail. To the right were numerous Japanese steamers, while to the left lay helplessly upon its side a large ship, which we were told had been upturned in a typhoon. Whereat we grew nervous, as we remembered that we were in the latitude of typhoons. All about were countless smaller craft. There is always vexatious delay in entering a port for the doctor must come aboard and go through the farce of an inspection of the passengers. While this comedy was being enacted we had opportunity to survey the shore. The most conspicuous object in sight was Fujijama, Japan's largest and sacred mountain and chief physical glory. It is fourteen thousand feet high, the same height as Pike's Peak, and is covered with perpetual snow. It is a perfect cone, and claimed to be the most symmetrical mountain in the world. Only Popocatepetl in Mexico or Mount Rainier in Washington are said to rival it in beauty. The Japanese are justly proud of it, and pictures of it are to be found surmounting many of their works of art, ornamenting postal cards and letter heads and much attractive advertising. The shore was lined with a mountain range, at the foot of which lay a strip of valley in which was the city of Yokohama with over three hundred thousand people and one of the chief seaports of the Orient.

#### OUR FIRST STEP ASHORE—THE RIKSHAS.

By eight o'clock a multitude of small boats has swarmed about the ship. We board one of them, marked Grand Hotel, and waving reluctant adieus to our friends aboard, we take one last grateful look at the monster vessel that has borne us so safely across and are conveyed rapidly to shore. Here a great crowd, looking not unlike those seen at other ports, is assembled, while near the wharfs are lined up a long row of tiny vehicles looking



to us like large baby carriages. They are jinrikishas, popularly known as "rikshas," and almost the exclusive means of locomotion for those who do not walk. They are pulled by one man each and the rapidity and endurance of these man-horses is something remarkable. It is said they can make over sixty miles a day. Their charges are twenty-five cents for the first hour and ten cents each hour thereafter; or they can be secured for an entire day for seventy cents. There are few trolley lines, and scarcely any buggies or carriages. The riksha man has it all to himself. By the way, the horses here are the scrubbiest of plugs. They would not sell for \$25 apiece in Missouri.

#### IN JAPAN.

Japan comprises four thousand small and four large islands. The island of Nippon constitutes much the largest part. It is one thousand, one hundred miles long by eighty broad. Its climate extends from frigid to temperate, the country reaching from the thirtieth to the fortieth parallel of latitude, from the Northern to the Southern border of United States. Japan contains fifty millions of people, about half that of the United States, although not one-twentieth so large in area. It has sixty-four cities of over thirty thousand people, twenty-five of over fifty thousand and ten of over one hundred thousand. Its largest city is Tokio, which is the capital and has a population of nearly two millions. Its next largest is Osaka, its chief manufacturing city, with a million. The other large cities are Kioto, the former capital, with three hundred and eighty-one thousand; Nara, two hundred and eighty-nine thousand; Yokohama, three hundred and twenty-six thousand; Kobe, two hundred and eighty-five thousand and Nagasaki, one hundred and fifty-three thousand. The cities

of chief interest to visitors are Tokio, Kioto, Nara, Osaka and Yokohama. Much of the country is mountainous, and most of the population is in the cities. The nation is several thousand years old, and was closed to foreigners until 1853, when Commodore Perry effected a treaty between it and our government. It has made great progress since that time.

#### YOKOHAMA.

The city of Yokohama has been more anglicized than any other city in the empire, and is hardly typically Japanese. However, the vast majority of its population is native. Having located ourselves at the Grand Hotel, our first impressions were favorable, for the Grand is a fine hostelry, and worthy to rank with the best American hotels. We were anxious to get out and see the city. So we took rikshas and away we went. We found the streets not over thirty feet wide, made of macadam, with narrow sidewalks of cobblestones, where there were any. Many streets have no sidewalks and are not over twenty feet in width. The buildings are distinctly inferior to those of American cities. I do not recall a single four-story building. The postoffice and banking houses are of fair proportions and are built of inferior brick and stone. Most of the business houses are one or two stories, and for the most part are small shops, in which the occupants are squatted tailor fashion. Here and there may be found fair sized stores of about the size of large business establishments in Missouri rural towns. The impression made by the city is that it is distinctly inferior to any American city of equal or much smaller size. Practically all the business buildings are covered with tiling, while many of the dwellings of the humbler or middle class are thatched, and roofed with a thick mass of earth and veg-

etation, the latter of which is green and growing upon the apex of the roof.

PEOPLE ON THE STREETS.

The streets swarm with people, chiefly Japanese of the lower class. There are, however, many Americans, and people of all other nationalities. All the women and a large majority of the men are bareheaded. For this reason the women have an unusual abundance of hair. They dress in characteristic Japanese style, a kimono of some bright material, fastened with a sash, called obi. Both men and women wear wooden sandals, which stand upon two transverse wooden cleats or stilts about two inches high. These sandals are held to the feet by leather thongs which pass between the great and next toe and are fastened to the wooden soles. How they keep them on their feet is a mystery. They keep up an everlasting clatter upon the streets and at the stations. There are no fat men or lean women. The men are sinewy without being lean and the women are plump without being fat. Practically every other woman has a baby strapped to her back. Surely there never was such a country for children as is this one. I thought when I visited Naples that I would never see its like for children. But Italy is not even a rival to Japan. You may see children from five years old to women eighty-five carrying babies as they go about their play or work. I saw one woman washing clothes with a baby on her back. A strange fact is that they never let the babies fall, and up to this date I have not heard a baby cry. The little creatures sleep soundly with the sun blazing down upon them as their nurses or mothers jostle them about in all sorts of rude ways. Evidently there is no danger of the population of Japan

running short. If Mr. Roosevelt wishes to see a country where his theories of reproduction are illustrated to the fullest he should visit Japan. He would find here his heaven. I have not observed an automobile in Japan. I asked an intelligent gentleman the reason for their absence. Very promptly and with the utmost sincerity he answered: "It would be impossible to run automobiles in Japan on account of the children." I am sure that there is no other country in the world where children are so thick that they stop the running of automobiles. Very appropriately the sacred bird of Japan is the stork.

## VI.

### FURTHER IMPRESSIONS OF JAPAN.

NIKKO, JAPAN, November 14, 1907.

The Japanese are a polite people. They are courteous, suave and bow more frequently and profusely than any other people. They are innately gentle and amiable. They will not say or do anything to wound feelings. The better class will not stare at you, nor will they smile at your mistakes. And that is more than can be said of Americans. They are also cleanly in their homes and in their persons. They are justly famed for neatness. They are quite healthy, due to the climate, their eating of rice and fish, and to the fact that they are industrious. They are thrifty. You rarely see a Japanese beggar, and it is astounding upon how little they can subsist. I was told by a president of a boy's boarding school that the cost of boarding at his institution was just three dollars a month. And the principal of a girls' school informed me that the cost of board and tuition at that institution was three dollars and seventy-five cents a month. The students are comfortably provided for. Managers of boys' boarding clubs or female colleges may be startled at these statements, but I visited the different departments of both colleges and I feel sure the facts were correctly stated.

#### WHAT THEY EAT.

Naturally the next question is what do these people live on? Chiefly rice, supplemented by fish and vegetables. They eat but little if any meat, and no milk and butter. Up to date I have not

seen a cow. Butter sells for 65 cents a pound and milk is rare, and is only used by the wealthy. The people eat no bread, and but few sweets. The vegetables are potatoes, tomatoes, rice, corn, beets, turnips, cabbage, onions, lettuce, carrots and radishes which are the largest I have ever seen, being as long as two feet. The fruits are oranges, apples, peaches, strawberries, raspberries, the finest persimmons I have ever seen, figs, pears, and gooseberries. Coffee, sugar and meat cost about as they do in America, but tea, of which great quantities are drunk, sells for one-half the American price. Among the meats at hotels and in the better class of homes are chicken, pheasants, birds, duck, beef. If there are any hogs, cattle or sheep in Japan I have never seen them, and I understand they are scarce. For which reason pork, beef and mutton are delicacies. The cooking and fare in hotels where we have stopped have been excellent, and indications are that Japanese women are fine housekeepers. They make ideal servants.

#### THE JAPANESE HOME.

The Japanese dwelling is something unique. There is no other home at all like it anywhere else in the world. It is scrupulously neat. It looks very much like a toy house. Outside it is not unlike the bungalow, but inside the walls are simply sliding partitions of very thin rice paper in wooden framework. Conversation in one part of the house is heard all over. It is almost destitute of furniture. The floors are overspread with matting two or three inches thick, which yield under the feet. But no one is allowed to walk upon them with boots or shoes. Sandals or shoes are left at the doors and exchanged for socks or slippers. There are no chairs, tables or bedsteads. The bedding consists of cushions which are kept in closets and laid on





*SACRED BRIDGE AT NIKKO, JAPAN*





the floor for the inmates to sleep upon at night. There are no furnace or steam heated houses, except among the very wealthy classes, and there are rarely any stoves. The means of heat is an iron brazier about twelve inches in diameter and two feet high, which is filled with charcoal and is portable, being carried to different parts of the house. At these the people warm their hands. The remainder of their person either has to suffer or never gets cold. In southern Japan the mercury rarely sinks below 40 degrees. The better hotels have grates in which a good quality of coal is burned. They have no other means of heat. There is very little wood. What there is the horses or people carry on their backs. The Chinese have less fire in their houses than do the Japanese. They keep warm by wearing several suits of clothes. Fuel is very scarce in oriental countries.

#### THE AMERICAN RESIDENTS.

Residing in Yokohama are a large number of American and English families, nearly all of whom are prospering in their various vocations and are living on pleasant terms with the native population. They maintain the same method of living as in America. Some of them are quite wealthy and have splendid houses. Our party visited the residence of a Mr. Horne, formerly of Georgia, who has amassed a large fortune in American machinery and who resides in a home, which in all the appointments of splendid architecture and furnishings has few superiors in any land. It was our good fortune to be the guests at lunch ("tiffin" they call it here), of Mr. and Mrs. John L. Dearing, of Yokohama. He and his wife are cultivated and delightful people. For thirteen years he has been conducting a theological seminary, which is now attended by twenty-two students for the min-

istry, who he tells me manifest an aptitude for study and a mental and spiritual grasp not inferior to Americans. He has erected a fine building where the students board and a visit to it convinced me he was doing a great work. We also visited a female college founded by Miss Mary L. Colby, of the United States, and were deeply interested in the progress being made by the girls taught in the institution. Rev. and Mrs. W. B. Parsley and Miss Edith Wilcox, of the faculty, showed us through the various departments and it was almost incredible that an institution attended by one hundred students and with a faculty of thirteen members could be successfully conducted upon an income of \$1,500 per year.

#### EDUCATION.

Japan is alive to the education of the people. It has 27,000 public schools, well organized, in which are taught practically the same branches as in the United States and by competent teachers. It has 2,000 schools devoted to higher education. Among these are two large universities, attended by several thousand students each and well equipped. It expends fifteen millions of dollars a year on education. Larger children are uniformed according to grades and smaller children wear tags showing their names and ages.

#### HEATHENISM AND CHRISTIANITY.

While Christianity has not made the headway that is to be desired it is evident that heathenism is losing its hold upon a people so intelligent and progressive. We have visited the mammoth Daibutsu or statue of Buddha at Kamakura, near Yokohama. It is nearly 700 years old and is the greatest statue of the kind in Japan. It is 50 feet high by 35 feet wide, is of

bronze and represents Buddha in a sitting posture. It is a great work of art. We visited the greatest Shinto temple in Japan, located at Nikko and erected during the Shogun dynasty nearly three hundred years ago. Near by is a fine Buddhist temple. They are coarse, but brilliant products of barbaric genius. They are approached by hundreds of stone steps and located in the midst of a magnificent forest of cryptomeria trees over a hundred feet high and three hundred years old. I will not attempt to describe the temples, for space would not permit, but they are gorgeous in their architectural beauty. And yet they stand as monuments to the superstitious ignorance of a past age rather than as significant of any present vital religious condition. For instance there is a sacred horse which stands in one of the courts, only a plain horse, made sacred because he was given to the temple by a prince. He is fed by visitors, nearly all of whom laugh at the superstition of the simple minded creatures who worship him. Here also stands a lofty monument of bronze set on a stone pediment and erected three hundred years ago to avert evil spirits. There are other similar silly products of heathenism. But few intelligent worshippers are observed about these temples. Only the ignorant go through with the absurd mummeries, while the priests are using the whole for obtaining money from the people. It is plain that heathen worship is upon the wane and cannot stand before the onward march of an enlightened Christian civilization.

AT NIKKO.

The city of Nikko is claimed by the Japanese to be the most attractive spot in the empire. It is located in a mountainous region one hundred miles east of Tokio and the scenery is not superior to many mountain resorts in the United States. Eight

miles away at the top of the mountain is Lake Chuzenji, to which travelers are transported in chairs, borne by Japanese coolies, four to each chair. You can imagine the imposing spectacle our party presented as it was borne along by sixteen coolies attended by two guides. They carried us up this height of 2,000 feet without being wearied. The lake is a pleasant sheet of water resembling somewhat lakes in Switzerland. Besides the mountains and lakes are a long avenue between lofty trees, a sacred bridge, a rushing mountain stream and the heathen temples above described.

#### THE EMPEROR AND CROWN PRINCE.

But what we desire particularly to mention at risk of making this communication too long was what we saw en route to Nikko. Just as we were leaving Yokohama a Japanese fleet of eight battleships, two cruisers and twelve torpedo boats and destroyers, hove in sight. They were escorting the Crown Prince of Japan from Corea, where he had been upon a month's visit. The evident purpose of the expedition had been to make an awe-inspiring impression upon that subjugated people who are manifesting some restlessness under Japanese domination. It was calculated to have that effect. It was certainly an imposing spectacle. Cannon were fired, flags unfurled and all Yokohama turned out to do honor to the prospective sovereign. Having to go by riksha to the station along the line of and in advance of the royal procession we had the opportunity of witnessing the enormous crowds which thronged the streets for miles. The public schools in uniform were in line and we had another opportunity to be confirmed in the opinion that Japan can outstrip all the remainder of the world in the matter of children. The boys were dressed

in uniform, each one an incipient soldier, and the girls sang patriotic songs as the Prince drove between them. It was an inspiring sight and led one to feel that Japan was not only patriotic but a formidable proposition in war.

Our train preceded that of the Prince to Tokio, the capital, an hour's run from Yokohama, and where the same kind of mammoth demonstration was repeated, except that it was bigger because Tokio is the larger city and also because at the hour of the Prince's arrival the Emperor was leaving to attend the army's maneuvers. So all Tokio was out.

Then came an experience. I had to go to the American Embassy, while the ladies of our party were sent to another station where we were to take the train two hours later for Nikko. I transacted my business with Mr. O'Brien, the American Ambassador, who was very courteous, and hastened through the great throngs to join the remainder of the party. I found them at the station surrounded by a great crowd of Japanese who were standing about them with open mouths and eyes, in evident wonder and admiration, while the ladies were alternating between laughter and anger. They shouted with joy upon my arrival. For once they were glad to see me. I perceived the situation and explained to them that as the Emperor and Prince did not have their wives and daughters with them the crowd, thinking the latter were belated, had mistaken them for the royal family, supposing one of them to be the empress, another the crown princess and another the princess. Whether they believed me or not the effect was to quiet them, and to maintain them in a calm and quiet state afterward, with the exception that occasionally there was a contention between the girls as to which was the crown princess and which the princess.

## VII.

### THE JAPANESE AND THEIR WAYS.

NIKKO, JAPAN, November 16, 1907.

The Japanese have a proverb that you do not know the meaning of magnificent until you shall have seen Nikko. Hence we tarried several days beneath the mountain shades and within the sound of the mountain torrents of this beautiful region whence starts the great Kaida road which runs twenty-five hundred miles through Japan, and which embowered by colossal trees is a thing of joy and beauty. Here, also, are the finest temples in Japan. Heathen as they are, they are an interesting study both for their architecture and as illustrating heathenism in its deepest type. This is one point where Christianity seems to have made but little progress. I attended a service in a little Episcopal church here. There were just eight persons present besides the rector, and all were tourists. It is the only Protestant church here. The community seems to be bound by the shackles of heathenism and yet we are persuaded that it will not be long before Christianity will assert supremacy even here.

#### THE RAILROADS AND WHAT IS SEEN EN ROUTE.

There are 4,000 miles of railway in the empire. Japan has adopted municipal ownership. The government has bought many of the railroads, the telephone and telegraph and other public utilities. It has gone into the tobacco and several other branches of business on its own account, but the experiment which is of recent adoption, is not proving altogether successful. The government has a way of taking possession of any business when it is not conducted to public satisfaction. The trains do not run as rapidly as in Europe or America. The cars are of the carriage

kind as in Europe, being entered from the side instead from the ends as in America, and there being first, second and third classes. The rates are about two cents a mile for first class, one cent for second class and three-fourths of a cent for third class. In our trip from Tokio to Nikko, a distance of 100 miles, consuming five hours, there was in the same car with us a number of Japanese military officers en route to attend the maneuvers. They were courteous and had all the bearing of gentlemen of the higher order. There is as much difference between the higher and lower classes as in our country, between whites and blacks. When they left the train a number of citizen Japanese entered the car. They wore plug hats, and all but one, Prince Albert coats. They had been at the station to meet the Emperor, whose train was the one ahead of ours. One of the gentlemen was attired in a full dress suit and silk hat. Think of that happening at midday in America. After he sat down he called for a bowl of rice and eels. By the way, eels are one of the delicacies here. Then he proceeded to devour the food with chop sticks, and to drink a pot of tea. Everybody drinks tea and at all hours of day or night. The handling of chopsticks in eating and keeping on sandals in walking are two things Japanese do at which all Americans constantly wonder. To eat rice with two sticks not much larger than lead pencils and to hold wooden boards resting upon cleats, by strings tied to the toes are feats, possible only to Japanese and Chinese.

#### KINDLINESS TO AMERICANS.

If there is any unfriendly feeling towards Americans it is not upon the surface. On the contrary our countrymen are not only shown deference, but marked preference. There appears to be every disposition to cultivate friendly relations with America. The Japanese exclusion problem is candidly discussed, and



while there would be a loud and just protest against exclusion of the better class of Japanese, who go to America to engage in the higher branches of trade or to acquire education it is not probable that objection would be made to prohibitory laws against too strong influx of the coolie class. I have had long interviews with Consul-General Miller and our Ambassador, Mr. O'Brien. Neither express any apprehension of trouble between the countries, but they are free to say that it would be unwise in the United States to adopt radical exclusion laws or for newspapers and public men to indulge in intemperate criticisms of the Japanese. They believe that all differences may be easily adjusted. I have been impressed with the ability and good sense of our diplomatic representatives in Japan, and believe they will act with wisdom in all international affairs.

#### AGRICULTURAL PRODUCTS.

Traveling through the country opportunity is afforded to study agricultural conditions. Like Europe this is a garden truck country. They grow wheat and corn and like products, but in a limited way. There are few large farms or fields as in America. Both women and men work in the fields, and hay is carried on the backs of horses or of the people. There are carts, but no large wagons as we have them. There are few farm houses, and they are small. The people live in the towns and go out in the country to work in the day time, when the towns present a deserted appearance. At nights the towns are full of life. The most beautiful tree is the <sup>Japanese</sup> cryptomeria. It looks like a pine, but grows to a great height, from 100 to 200 feet. Besides there are maple, oak, cherry, pine and other trees, but they are different from trees of that name with us. The sacred tree is the



Ghinko, of broad and luxuriant foliage. The forests are limited and scrubby. In flowers the chrysanthemum leads. This is the chrysanthemum season and the shops and houses are full of the flower. There are also the azalea, the wistaria, the peony, the iris, hibiscus, cherry, and lotus, which is the national flower.

#### MORAL CONDITIONS.

The saloon is unknown. While some beer is drunk, whiskey is hardly known among the natives, who indulge in a drink called Sake, made from fermented rice mixed with alcohol. It is drunk hot and tastes like cherry. It cannot be as intoxicating as our American liquor, for of the hundreds of thousands of people I have seen I have yet to observe a drunken man. It is said to stupefy, but not intoxicate. Social conditions are said not to be as pure as they should be. Nor are they anywhere. There is no outward appearance of any lower social morals than elsewhere. So far as honor in trade is concerned I have had no one to try to cheat me.

#### NO PROFANE WORD IN LANGUAGE.

The Japanese have no word in their vocabulary which blasphemes the name of their or any other deity. It is a language without profanity. This accounts, no doubt in a large degree for their refined and polite natures, for their considerate regard for others. And this is why so many Americans are rude and brutal. The tongue defiles the whole body, and it is a shame to Christianity that the nations which claim to be Christian are the only nations whose people desecrate and blaspheme the name of the God they worship. We may learn from heathens.

## AS TO MARRIAGES.

The marriage compact is easy and simple. There is no religious or magisterial ceremony except when requested. The expectant bride and bridegroom file with the proper officer an application to marry, giving the age, residence and occupation of themselves and parents, and so they are married. That is all of it. Marriage is looked upon purely as a contract, which when registered becomes legally binding. The contract can only be dissolved by divorce proceedings. By the way, the judicial procedure here is said to be something wonderful. One novelty is that a man is made a judge before he becomes a lawyer. In America it is reversed. The highest ambition of every lawyer there is to be a judge. Speaking again of marriage, it is proper to say that the Japanese pay deference to women, more than do most of the orientals, and there is something winning about the Japanese women, as they go mincing along in their little kimonos. They are all ruddy-faced, earnest, little busy-bodies.

## LABORERS.

The country is overrun with the laboring class. Consequently wages are low. An average day's wages is fifty cents. Many receive less than half that amount. A skilled mechanic will earn seventy cents. The foreman of one of the principal daily papers in Yokohama receives five dollars per week and the printers from two to three dollars. There are no type-setting machines. There need not be at those prices. Clerks are also poorly paid and Christian preachers, of whom there are many, receive from \$20 to \$30 per month. There are no labor unions, and the labor question has not entered politics.

## FINANCIAL CONDITIONS.

Notwithstanding the great loss of money and life incurred by the Russian war, Japan is enjoying prosperity. While carrying a heavy war debt of three hundred millions, her bonds float at a premium and there is abundance of money in her banks. The people manifest an optimism born no doubt of their success in war and there seems to be a general good feeling. Educationally, financially, socially, religiously the face of Japan is towards the rising sun and it can no longer be denied that she is one of the great powers of the world.

## THE GOVERNMENT.

For several years the government has had a constitution which limits the powers of the Emperor. There is an Imperial Diet or congress composed of 300 members of the House of Peers and 369 of the House of Representatives, who frame the laws subject to royal approval. The peers hold office for seven years and the representatives for four. Both are elected by the people. There are two parties, called Liberal and Progressive. The empire is divided into states, counties and towns, with governors and representatives and mayors and councils similar in many respects to ours. It is gradually approaching the republican form. Education is leavening society, and is evidently at the basis of the commercial, political and religious regeneration of Japan, and has already wrought wonders in that direction. Nearly all of the higher classes are educated, most of them in the United States, and this culture is extending to the lower classes, although there is yet a vast amount of ignorance. Before the light of this intelligence must flee, is now fleeing the mists of superstitious heathen-

ism and ignorance which have so long enthralled this people, and there will be admitted, is being admitted that Christianity which for two thousand years has been liberating the minds and consciences of men.

## VIII.

### THE JAPANESE ARMY, EMPEROR'S RECEPTION, JAPANESE THEATRE AND SOCIAL CUSTOMS—UNIVERSITIES— THE CITY OF TOKIO.

TOKIO, JAPAN, November 21, 1907.

We witnessed a sham battle of the eastern division of the Japanese army, near Shemodate, a point midway between Nikko and Tokio. Some forty thousand troops were engaged in the battle, which was the culmination of several days' maneuvers, and was interesting and exciting to a high degree. Artillery, infantry and cavalry and a war balloon, all took part and the battle was conducted in pursuance of the most scientific methods and under the direction of Japan's greatest generals. The Emperor was present in person. I had the pleasure of seeing him at near range and of studying him closely. He impressed me as a man of ability who had a serious sense of the great responsibility resting upon him. An enormous throng was present, and the reverence and adulation shown him was almost pathetic. The family to which he belongs has been in authority for twenty-five hundred years, and notwithstanding numerous changes in the form of government his title to the throne has never been questioned. Millions believe that he holds it by divine right. Many believe he is divine. I feel confident that had Deity been passing along He would not have been regarded with more profound reverence than hundreds of thousands manifested towards him on

that day. Every one is expected to bare his head not only when the Emperor passes by, but whenever his portrait is in sight, and the people take mortal offense if this homage is not paid him.

People are not permitted to look down upon him from windows as he is driven along the street. All must be below him, and it is even said that a subject who is taller than his majesty must get upon his knees so that all his subjects shall ever be beneath and none above him. Children are taught from infancy that it is the highest of all privileges and duties to die for their Emperor. And those who thus die are never mourned. No wonder a people so trained are intensely patriotic and are so invincible in war. This abject homage to their ruler, this awe of him as though he were supernatural, has the effect to keep millions content with their poverty and make them submissive under all conditions.

The army is well equipped and organized, and made a fine appearance. I saw Generals Oyama, Nogi, Admiral Togo and other military men who became famous during the war with Russia. Japan has a standing army of 163,000 men. Our party were the only Americans present in all this vast multitude, the maneuvers having been purposely kept as secret as possible from foreigners. But we were kindly treated, too kindly. The ladies to their great annoyance were constantly the center of wondering and admiring crowds. They have come to the conclusion that being the royal family is not half as desirable as being plain, independent American women.

#### THE EMPEROR'S RECEPTION.

Upon our arrival in Tokio we found awaiting us the following invitation:

"The minister of the Imperial household invites (naming our

party) to the chrysanthemum reception which will be held at Akasaka detached palace at 2 o'clock, November 19. By order of the Emperor and Empress."

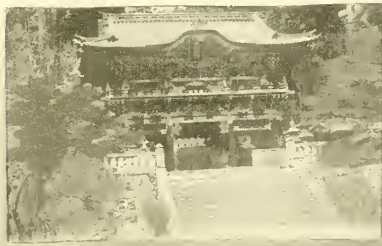
As this is the only general reception given by the Emperor and Empress during the year we regarded ourselves fortunate, and we promptly accepted and attended. The reception was held in a pagoda in a large park in Tokio. We reached the place by a winding walk through a dense grove of trees, passing several beautiful lakes. There were assembled over a thousand persons, including many prominent Japanese and foreigners of all nationalities. Surrounding the open quadrangle in which they were gathered were parterres of chrysanthemums. Very soon an avenue was made through the throng and the royal family appeared and marching to the pagoda formally received the guests. All men present wore high hats and Prince Albert suits and the ladies were dressed in their finest apparel. There was but one specification as to dress, and that was that no one must appear in mourning. The military officers were arrayed in uniform, and we were disappointed that none of the Japanese men or women were dressed in the picturesque kimono costume of the realm. The higher classes have discarded the traditional garb of Japan and are endeavoring to dress as much like Europeans and Americans as possible. This is at the distinct loss of attractiveness. The women do not look nearly so well as in their native apparel, and the men present much the appearance that Indians do who have abandoned the beautiful costumes of their race and have donned ordinary store clothes. The Japanese men on this occasion wore Prince Albert suits that did not fit them, and which together with their hats, looked like shabby-genteel hand-me-downs. There was no sort of comparison between the Japanese

and the Americans and Europeans, and as between the latter it must be said that the Americans were much the better dressed, were more at ease and were less snobbish and artificial. One feels better satisfied with Americans the more he sees them in comparison with others. After all had seated themselves at small tables upon the lawn refreshments were served, consisting of salad, raw fish, tongue, shrimp, sandwiches, charlotte russe, patties and ice cream, champagne and claret wines. There was a lack of dignity about the serving of the lunch. There was a long table to which there was an indiscriminate scramble. Two years ago I attended a reception of the King of Belgium where the same stampede of the guests to the lunch table took place. I have concluded that the ceremony and dignity which do hedge a king are not different from those which characterize ordinary people.

#### A JAPANESE THEATER.

We attended a Japanese theater. It was a novel affair. The auditorium was similar in form to American theaters, consisting of parquet, dress-circle, balcony and gallery and was semi-circular. The architecture was much plainer. There were no chairs. The floor space was divided into little pens about four by six feet, each capable of holding four persons, and the entire audience sat upon the floor, which was covered by a thick, soft matting. Two passage ways about three feet wide extended from the stage along the railing between the dress circle and the parquet to the rear of the auditorium. These passage ways were on a level with the stage, and the actors made their entrances and exits upon them. It seemed odd to hear them begin their parts near the center of the auditorium as they approached the stage and end them at the same point as they made their exits.





*JAPANESE WOMAN—RIKSHAS AND TEMPLES*



The stage was a revolving affair, and scenes would change while the actors were yet before the audience, by the scenery being turned around like a railroad engine upon a turn-table. The scenery itself was crude and Japanese. The acts were very long, and consisted of conversations of wearisome duration.

The play was deeply tragic. A man while hunting at midnight in aiming to shoot a wild hog thought he had killed his father. He stumbled in the darkness on the dead body of a man who had his father's money purse in his pocket. It being dark the hunter could not see the body and did not know whose pocket-book it was until he got to the light. The facts were that the dead man had killed his father and somebody else had afterwards killed the man. But the hunter thought he had done so, as did his mother and everybody else. Remorse seized him and he was the victim of great persecution. His wife was taken from him and his mother railed on him. Finally after an awful amount of trouble he killed himself in a most realistic manner, plunging his sword through his body, his blood enveloping and drenching his person in a truly horrible way.

An amusing feature of the performance was the presence of attendants, or "supes" upon the stage, arranging scenery, and the clothing of the actors during the performance. One of them stepped up behind the actor and supplied him with blood while he was apparently plunging a sword through his person, and arranged his hair in a disheveled state while he was dying. The voice of the actor was deep-toned and weird and tragic in the extreme, and moved the audience deeply, many reveling in tears during a large part of the performance.

We did not wait to see the play through. The performance begins at two o'clock and continues until eleven, and it is difficult

to trace any connection between the acts. The actors evince dramatic talent, and there is not the suggestion of anything improper in dress, gesture or word. Between acts tea and cakes are served, and while there is considerable smoking, no beer or whiskey is drunk. The musicians, who keep up a constant thwanging of some sort of stringed instruments are partially concealed behind lattice work on one side of the stage, while upon the other side is a prompter, who joins with the music in certain weird and mournful sounds to deepen the tragic effect of the performance.

Morally the Japanese theater is a decided improvement upon some that are American.

#### A JAPANESE LUNCH.

Naturally all visitors to Japan desire an insight into the social life of the people. To this end there are provided functions at the leading restaurants or clubs, where opportunity is afforded to see just how the people of the better class entertain guests in their homes. We attended one of these functions. It costs considerable, but it is worth while. The luncheon or dinner was in the evening in a room fifteen feet square in which there was no furniture. Having first been required to remove our shoes and put on slippers we were shown to the room and given cushions and seated upon the floor. There were no chairs or table. The floor was covered with a thick matting, soft and pliable, and arm rests were provided upon which to recline. The dinner consisted of some six or seven courses, in which soup, mushrooms, chicken, fish, shrimp, rice, cooked oranges, pickles, apples and chestnuts were the constituents. There was no bread, milk, butter, coffee or dessert, but an abundance of tea and sake for those who desired them. The food was partaken of with chopsticks, two pine sticks

about twelve inches long and of about the diameter of lead pencils. The Japanese do not use knives and forks. We had some trouble handling the food with chopsticks, but managed to get through satisfactorily. During the meal we were entertained by songs and poses by six Geisha girls modestly arrayed in brilliant Japanese costumes. It was what would be called a Delsarte performance in America and is a popular method of social entertainment. The girls were quite pretty and graceful and the function was as charming as it was novel.

## TOKIO.

In addition to being the capital Tokio is the largest city in Japan. It contains over two millions of people and extends over one hundred miles square. It has some wide streets, upon which there are stone sidewalks. But most of the streets are from twenty to thirty feet wide and without sidewalks, the people walking out in the middle of the streets. Most of the houses are one-story and the business establishments are chiefly small shops. There are few large stores, but the quality of goods is not equal to those in Yokohama. The Imperial palace and government buildings are large and handsome, and there are some fine residences. There is an efficient system of electric railways, but the rikshas are much in evidence.

It is said to be the greatest school city in the world. This claim it is easy to believe. The streets literally swarm with students of both ages and sexes. The Imperial University has an attendance of five thousand students and an annual income of a million dollars. There are two hundred professors and departments of literature, engineering, law, medicine and pedagogics. It is supported by direct appropriations from the Imperial Diet and has but little if any endowment.

The Waseda University, founded by Count Okuma, one of the three greatest men of Japan, Prince Ito and Count Kanoko being the other two, has six thousand students and two hundred professors, but has no science department. Its purpose is literary and political, and it is distinctly Japanese.

There are many private colleges, supported by Methodist, Baptist, Presbyterian, Congregational, Catholic, and Episcopalian churches, and the English language as well as Christian principles are widely taught. I visited a college for boys taught by Prof. and Mrs. E. W. Clement, and one for girls by Misses Kidder and Whitman, which are well conducted. They are both Baptist institutions.

Most of the students wear military uniform. There is no other city in the world where there is to be seen as much military clothing. All boys are required to take a certain amount of military training. The whole nation is thus a vast incipient reserve army, and the patriotism of the people is unbounded. It looks very much like Japan were getting ready to become an enormous war power, and it is plain that she would be a dangerous enemy to contend with.

The country is aflame upon the subject of education, which is compulsory and is being conducted along high lines. When it is remembered that her universities are not over twenty-five years old and that within that period her entire educational system has been constructed, it will be seen that the foundation of intelligence has but just been laid upon which Japan will surely erect a permanent fabric of national greatness.

## IX.

### ART AND OTHER THINGS JAPANESE.

KIOTO, JAPAN, November 29, 1907.

The Japanese are born artists. The art instinct manifests itself in childhood. Give a Japanese child a number of flowers or ribbons, or fans, or any articles of different colors, and he will instinctively arrange them in harmonious and attractive combination. Hence you will not wonder that Japanese art shops and studios are attractive to tourists. There can be no denying but that in production of art, whether in dress or furniture, or pictures, or bric-a-brac, or tableware or jewelry, or ornaments of all kinds the Japanese are unique and original to a marked degree. The picturesqueness of the natural scenery has left its impress upon the people and is reflected in the dress both of men and women, which is the most artistic in the world. It seems a shame that the beautiful and vari-colored kimonos should be yielding to the commercial spirit of the age and the world-wide tendency to imitate everything American, and that in place of them the people are donning the plain and unartistic English clothes so illy adapted to them. The homes are artistic also, but are entirely different from American homes. They reverse the American methods. They have no front yards and the fronts of their houses are often forbidding, while they ornament the rear, and have large gardens or lawns in that part, where are flowers or stunted trees, with little lakes and artistic bridges. Many of the humblest Japanese homes will have these artistic back yards or gardens wherein the families live and entertain their guests, while the front will be upon a dirty street, and be plain and uninviting. Many of them have kitchens in front and parlors in the rear. The Japanese have



a way of doing things opposite from the American way. They write their surnames first. The books begin where ours end and end where ours begin. The story begins on the last page and ends on the first. They mount a horse from the right side and when they meet you in the highway turn to the left instead of the right. They shake their own hands and not yours in salutation, but bow low and repeatedly.

#### ART WORK.

Their embroideries are beautiful and artistic and evince exquisite taste and most patient industry. I write this letter in a bedroom where the silk quilts are wonders of artistic skill and beauty. This is true of the kimonos and dresses and of every fabric wherein it is possible to display skill with the needle. In wood carving they are no less deft and original. Some of the furniture seen in the homes and in the hotels are prodigal in their elaborateness of handiwork and beautiful in design. Such work is only possible where people possess infinite patience and a painstaking fidelity to a single object which will lead a man or woman to spend half a lifetime carving one piece of furniture. The restless and ambitious American could not be induced to do this plodding work of hand. He would find some way of doing it not half so well by machinery or would grow tired and go at something that would pay better. It is only possible also where labor is very cheap. Artists who could do such work would command in America from five to ten dollars a day. Here they are content with fifty cents. If they get as much as seventy-five cents it is regarded very high.

I visited in Tokio the Government Printing Office where are employed 3,500 skilled workmen. I saw at least a thousand girls in the Bureau of Engraving where is printed the government money of both China and Japan. It is responsible work and re-



quires special skill. The girls get from fifteen to twenty-two cents a day and the men about seventy cents. There was a strike of the wireworkers not long since. They were receiving from five to thirty cents a day. They compromised by accepting an increase of two and a half cents. Labor is organized in what they call guilds, but it has not accomplished much for the laborers. I met a lady who complained that the guilds had raised the price of her cook to a dollar and a half a week and her housemaid to a dollar. The servants board themselves.

DAMACENE, CLOISONNE AND SATSUMA.

The most famous works in art by the Japanese are those wrought on steel, called Damacene, on copper, called Cloisonne, and on porcelain, called Satsuma. All three are industries requiring high artistic talent, painstaking and patience. In Damacene four processes are necessary, in Cloisonne twelve and in Satsuma seven, or more, and to finish some of the articles requires months. The genius of the artist and the patience and skill of the workman are evident upon every work produced and it is difficult to understand how articles involving so much labor can be produced at so low figures. However there is no especial advantage in purchasing here, as the Republican tariff makes them so high when they reach America that purchases can be made as reasonably in America where all Japanese art factories have agencies. It is interesting to visit the shops and witness the process of manufacture, how one artist draws the design upon a card case, or a vase, or an urn, another lays upon it the gold wire, another hammers in the gold leaf, another adds the coloring, another does the firing, another applies from twenty to twenty-five coats of lacquer finish and another does the polishing, until the completed product is a thing of beauty.

## FROM YOKOHAMA TO KIOTO.

After spending two weeks in central Japan visiting Yokohama, Tokio and Nikko we took the train for the western portion and had our first opportunity for a view of the most picturesque, productive, and interesting part of the country. We had left the partially Americanized section and for the first time saw only that which was strictly and deeply Japanese. The railroad lay through fertile valleys for over two hundred miles. On one side was a hazy and noble mountain range. Upon the other was the placid ocean, or rather an inlet of the ocean, alive with the fluttering sails of numberless fishing schooners, with an occasional ocean steamer. The valleys resembled checker boards of green, or yellow or black, as they perchance were dotted with the growing tea or barley or ordinary vegetable or with ripened rice, or the black soil just prepared for or not yet having yielded its increase.

It looked like thousands of miniature or toy gardens, and they were not confined to the valleys, but stretched up the mountains, terrace upon terrace, or lay like crazy quilts upon the mountain side. The whole was a scene of busy activity. Thousands of workers, men and women, swarmed upon them. Some of the men were bare from the waist, and others were arrayed only in a loin cloth, but most had on blouses and tight trousers, but were bare-headed and bare-foot. The work is almost entirely by hand. We did not see a half dozen horses upon the trip. The double shovel plow is the only piece of farm machinery we have yet seen. I asked a gentleman who has grown rich in Japan selling machinery if there were any labor-saving farm machines in the country. He said that they were only to be found in one small section. One

reason is the farms are too small. Land sells not by the acre but by the six feet square. An acre is a fair sized farm. Therefore when a man plowed out to the end of his farm he either had to run his horse a large part of the way across his neighbor's farm and incur a suit for damages or trespass, or leave the borders of his own land uncultivated. Then there are so many people and labor is so cheap that there is no need for horses or machinery.

Implements and methods are the crudest. The people are poor but thrifty, and there are no beggars and we have seen but two criminals. They were chained together and being taken to prison. They wore rude straw hats, looking like inverted milk buckets, almost entirely concealing their faces, pink yellow kimonos which came to their knees and tight, white trousers. They drew their hats down over their faces, as though anxious to conceal themselves from the gaze of others. Apparently there is but little crime.

#### MYANOSHITA AND LAKE HAKONE.

A spot in Japan which all tourists are expected to visit is Myanoshita, an attractive mountain resort about sixty miles west of Yokohama. There is a fine hotel there, located probably a thousand feet above the railroad station. Tourists are conveyed to it in rikshas. A foaming river dashes along beneath it, while from above is the constant splashing of waterfalls. Mountain peaks rise to lofty heights upon all sides. The spot is a picturesque one. We made a trip from it to Lake Hakone, six miles distant, but two thousand feet higher. The gentlemen rode on horses, but the ladies were carried in Sedan chairs. The chairs rested upon two bamboo poles and were carried by four men each. The endurance and strength of these Japanese coolies who can carry people up

these precipitous places is something remarkable. I undertook to walk up a considerable altitude, but was compelled in sheer exhaustion to give it up, when I got in a chair, and to my humiliation I was borne up the remainder of the distance with ease. Those who are familiar with the avoirdupois of the writer will recognize the strenuousness of this remarkable feat.

Lake Hakone is a beautiful sheet of water. We had a sail across it, and in doing so enjoyed our first good view of Fuji, Japan's highest mountain, whose snow-capped summit, as I once before wrote, adorns most of her works of art. It was a beautiful spectacle. By the way the three objects distinctly Japanese and which her artists most exploit are Mount Fuji, the thatch-covered home, and the kimono dress.

Near lake Hakone is a region filled with geysers not unlike our Yellowstone Park.

#### SOME JAPANESE PECULIARITIES.

As in continental Europe and all oriental countries the people dwell chiefly in the towns, from which they go out into the country to work. The towns consist of a few long streets along which are low thatch-covered houses, in which are little shops, no large stores. There are no sidewalks. In the day time they are practically deserted. At night they swarm with people. Yet strange to say there are practically no night amusements, no theaters or concerts or entertainments of any kind. Artists as the Japanese are in other respects they seem to be destitute of musical talent, either vocal or instrumental. The stillness of a Japanese city at night is marked. There is an absence of saloons or drinking places, or revelry. To this date, of the millions I have been among I have not seen a drunken man or witnessed a

street brawl. The people are quiet and orderly. To the discredit and shame of Americans there are being introduced by the latter breweries and beer-drinking it is said is getting to be quite a habit in some localities. The only whiskey drinking I have seen here has been among foreigners, who indulge in it to more excess than at home.

The Japanese are very rigid in their laws against opium-selling. They impose the heaviest penalties for it, and will punish an offender much more heavily for selling opium than for stealing. They are determined that this great curse to China shall not come to them. It was the English who introduced opium into China. To our dishonor be it said that it looks as though Englishmen and Americans are endeavoring to bring to Japan in the whiskey and beer traffic an evil as great as that which was inflicted upon China in opium. The faithful Christian missionaries are doing all they can to stay the tide. But they are few and feebly supported. Unless the Christian people of other lands wake up to a sense of the situation there is danger of Christian missions receiving a worse blow from their own countrymen than from the opposition of heathenish superstition. For the evils of intemperance in these heathen lands are not confined to its victims. When intelligent Japanese or Chinese observe people from nations claiming to be civilized and Christian introducing such a baneful curse, worse than anything even heathenism has known, they refuse to believe that the religion such nations bring to them is any better, or even as good as their own.

## X.

### NUMEROUS FACTS OF INTEREST ABOUT JAPAN.

KIOTO, JAPAN, November 30, 1907.

When we reached Japan we wondered why there were so many one-story houses, and so few of greater height. We have had it explained by a heavy earthquake, which rocked the huge hotel in which we were stopping as though it were a cradle. The shock came about two o'clock in the morning and lasted for over two minutes. But it brought the guests from their beds in a most precipitous manner. Residents did not take much notice of it, and there was but slight comment concerning it in the papers. Earthquakes are frequent, although this one is said to have been the heaviest for some time. Those who keep scientific record declare there is an average of thirteen hundred a year or nearly four a day. But if so they are not perceptible. There has been but one that was destructive. That was at Yeddo in 1871 when 10,000 people were killed and 130,000 houses were destroyed. This is one reason why houses are low and built chiefly of wood. Another reason is the constant danger of fire growing out of the peculiar method of heating houses by a basin filled with charcoal which is taken from room to room and often handled carelessly. Another danger is from the paper lanterns and coal oil lamps used in lighting houses. As a warning to the people to be careful about fires policemen thump the streets with their canes at stated hours of the night greatly to the annoyance of guests who are thus awakened from slumber; of course another reason for small houses is because the people are poor and their business is limited. Very few Japanese, however wealthy, have large homes.

## THE JAPANESE HOUSE

is a constant source of interest. I wondered at the paper partitions between the rooms. I discovered that they are so constructed that they can be thrown into one room, and that these partitions are sliding, making it possible when occasion requires to cut them up into numerous rooms. Thus there may be a large room in which the family can live in the day time, while they can divide the house into numerous sleeping apartments at night. It may seem absurd, but it is said to be true that many houses of the poorer class are so small and light that they can be folded up and carried away upon the shoulders of the owner, while the contents are so light that they can be loaded upon the owner's wife. The spectacle of a man carrying his house, and his wife the household and kitchen furniture is one that is said not to be uncommon in Japan, but which can be seen nowhere else in the world.

I have, heretofore, mentioned the fact that the houses are void of tables or chairs or bedsteads, or any furniture, even of a cooking stove. This makes housekeeping a somewhat less formidable undertaking than in America. It is said that a fair-sized cottage can be furnished for ten dollars, while some furnishings cost as low as two dollars and a half. I mention these facts for the benefit of struggling young couples, who may solve the housekeeping problem by removing to Japan. Think of a young American wedded pair furnishing a house on ten dollars, and then picking up their house and household effects and trudging off to deposit them in some other part of the town.

## HOME LIFE.

Filial love is a marked quality of every Japanese boy and girl. Every boy is taught from infancy two supreme duties, the love



of his father and of his Emperor. And he will gladly die for either. In fact ancestral worship is a part of Japanese religion, while patriotism is equally as sacred. The girl also has the same love of parents as the boy, but her position is a more servile one. The only opportunity for a woman to reach a position of authority in Japan is to become a mother-in-law. It is said that there is no possession she enjoys so much as having a daughter-in-law, for having faithfully served her husband and her children she has a taste of the sweet use of power by ruling her daughter-in-law, which she does with a rod of iron.

In the household both boys and girls are taught from infancy implicit obedience to parents, and it is to this discipline drilled into them from the beginning that Japanese owe the fact that they are such admirable soldiers. Babies from the time they can understand are taught self-control, and a crying baby is almost unknown. At the same early period they are taught all the rules of etiquette, and in the family circle there is such uniform courtesy and deference that these qualities become a second nature to the children in after life. They are taught how to bow and to enter a room and to serve tea, in fact all the graces of social life until they become the politest people in the world.

The dress of boys and girls is the same until they are seven years of age, being an outer and inner kimono. At that age the boy doffs his inner kimono and substitutes trousers while the girl adopts instead of her narrow sash or obi, a wide one.

The girl's dress is a symphony of brilliant colors, which is sobered into milder or dove-like tints when she is married and becomes somber black when she is a widow. Girls marry at sixteen or seventeen, and in the matter of marriage the girl has not as much option as have her parents, who generally select the groom themselves. But when she marries she puts on white, which



is the mourning color of the Japanese, and is to indicate that she is dead to her own family, and henceforth is wholly under the control of the family of her husband. She passes under the absolute dominion of the mother-in-law, who is no joke in Japan whatever she may be elsewhere. In all these habits the Chinese and Japanese are quite similar.

#### TAXATION.

Taxes in Japan are something terrible. Incomes are taxed, business is taxed and the property upon which the business is transacted is taxed. There are government, state, county, and municipal taxes. The public debt is enormous and the expenses of the government very great. The Emperor himself has a salary of a million and a half dollars and the civil service is quite expensive. But notwithstanding all this burden there is an optimistic spirit among the people, who are supporting a public school system, costing fifteen million dollars annually, an army of 163,000 men and a navy of 40,000, with a splendid line of war-ships, and there is no spirit of unrest visible.

#### THE FEELING TOWARDS AMERICA.

So far as I could perceive there is no unfriendliness towards America. Notwithstanding that I did not pick up a daily paper while I was in the country that there was not in it a telegraphic report of some Anti-Japanese sentiment in America, I observed no such sentiment in newspaper editorials or among the people. I mingled freely with the people, passed countless multitudes on the streets and by train, talked with many representative Japanese, and I did not hear or see any one who had heard any unfriendly expression or demonstration against Americans. On the contrary there is apparently the best of feeling towards our country with whom there are now so many intimate commercial,

social and educational relations, that any breach between the countries would here be universally deplored as a national calamity. But the fact is also evident that America would have a most serious job on her hands if she engaged in war with Japan. For not only is this nation, with its fifty million people, and its splendid army and navy, a formidable proposition of itself, but in event of war it is plain that China would in all probability be her ally, and there would be the greatest war of the ages. I feel sure that America is wise enough not to be drawn into any trouble with Japan.

#### A HARDY PEOPLE.

It is doubtful if in the world there is a people of more powers of endurance, of higher athletic qualities than the Japanese. In addition to being trained to war and of having had their recent triumphant experience with Russia, and to possessing so many educated men, young and old, the people are remarkably strenuous, and one of them can undergo more physical exertion than a half dozen Americans. There is in the city of Kioto a Jiu-jitsu or wrestling and fencing school which I visited, and I could but be impressed with the remarkable athletic strength and skill of the students and of the training they are receiving along those lines.

Then the Japanese coolie is simply a marvel of physical power and skill. So adding the educated to the uneducated classes and the fact that every Japanese esteems it the greatest of all privileges to die in battle for his country we see what Japan with her many millions and her large disciplined army and navy would have to present as her resources of power in a war. Should such a war be upon this side the ocean she would be well nigh invincible.

## JAPANESE MONEY.

There is practically no gold in circulation in Japan, although its money system is upon a gold basis. Silver and currency are in universal use. The two denominations are yen, worth just half an American dollar, and sen, worth half an American cent. Five sen, ten sen, twenty sen and fifty sen silver pieces are in circulation, while yen are in currency of one, five, ten and a hundred yen each. The fact of the two denominations of money being just half American money simplifies matters for tourists. But expenses of travel outside of railroad fare are fully as much as in America. Hotel rates in some places are higher.

## WHAT JAPAN HAS NOT.

There are some things which the American tourist misses in Japan, and which makes the country seem queer. There are practically no carriages, or buggies, or wagons, or cows, or hogs, or sheep, or birds, except crows and sparrows, and what makes the Missourian more lonesome than anything else is the absence of the Missouri mule. There are very few horses, and they are of an inferior kind, shod with straw shoes, which have to be renewed daily, and they are led, not driven to carts along the highway. Eliminate all the foregoing from a country, from the rattle of a buggy to the bray of a mule, and you can understand how sepulchral quiet is over all the land.

## XI.

### A FINAL WORD ABOUT JAPAN.

KOBE, JAPAN, December 5, 1907.

Japan is making extensive experiments in government ownership. The government owns and operates all the railroads, post-offices and telegraphs, and all the salt, tobacco and camphor and several other industries, all of which yield about fifty millions of dollars a year. As the management of these properties is exclusively in the hands of government officials who do not give great publicity to government affairs, it is difficult to ascertain how profitable the system is proving. There is considerable dissatisfaction among the people who do not relish the idea of being excluded from the most profitable branches of business. The system grew out of the fact that the trusts had grown too formidable, and this is the way the government determined to stop the evil. The chief reason, however, that impelled the government to go into these profitable branches of business was to raise money to conduct the war with Russia. Like the tariff in America it was a war measure that has become permanent. All these government products are stamped, and this stamp tax, which falls upon the dealers, yields the national treasury fifteen million dollars a year. The revenues from taxes, of which there are fifteen or twenty kinds, is over a hundred millions of dollars, and the total revenue from all sources is two hundred and fifty millions. The war with Russia cost Japan six hundred millions of dollars. In addition the government paid four hundred millions of dollars for railroads. The bonded debt is therefore above a billion of dollars. Taxation is very heavy.

## RATES OF INTEREST—FINANCIAL CONDITIONS.

The banks pay five per cent interest on deposits and loan money at eight and nine per cent. Instead of taking notes from depositors, who are engaged in active business, they charge them interest upon overdrafts, requiring them to file a statement of their financial condition, their assets, notes and accounts and indebtedness. When the borrower is not in business money is loaned him upon mortgages, notes being taken as in our country. There are not many people of wealth, the vast majority being poor. Many are in debt.

## PRODUCE, MINES, MANUFACTORIES.

The principal agricultural product is rice. After it come barley and wheat and vegetables. Silk is a leading industry and much money is made in cotton. There is a large business in coal, copper, gold and silver mining. Tea is grown in great quantities and profitably, and there is a large manufacturing business along many lines. But the rural flouring and other mills are very crude affairs.

## LAND VALUES.

Japan is a country of mountains and valleys, chiefly mountains. The valleys are very fertile and are thoroughly cultivated. About one-sixteenth of the country is arable. Land values are high. Land sells by the tsobu, an area six feet square. It requires 1,200 to make an acre. The average price of farm land is about fifty cents a tsobu, or six hundred dollars an acre. Some lands sell for several times this amount. The average farm comprises about an acre. The farmer who owns several acres is regarded rich.

## RELIGIOUS CONDITIONS.

Apparently the people are overwhelmingly heathen. There are said to be 202,000 Buddhist and Shinto priests and only 1,567 Christian workers. Many have no religion. As schools are becoming more plentiful they are abandoning the absurdities of Buddhism and Shintoism, and are becoming agnostics. Infidelity is a more serious problem with Christian missionaries than heathenism. And the heathenism is of the kind Christianity has to contend with in America, the intellectual kind. There are millions still who are steeped in superstition. But Christianity is making decided headway. There are 60,000 Protestant Christians and a million who are in sympathy with them. The visitor to the country, who comes without prejudice, can but be impressed by the high order of intelligence and the profound spirit of consecration and self-sacrifice of the missionaries. They are making steady inroads into the heathenism of the people, and if they are aided as they should be from America and England it will not be long before they will make this a Christian land. I myself have been surprised at the numbers of Christians that are to be found among all classes.

## THE WICKEDNESS OF HEATHENISM.

While the heathen religions, Shintoism and Buddhism, originally contained certain ethical rules of correct living they have degenerated into so many diverse creeds and sects and into such vague and unintelligible mummary that they are practically nothing more than empty rituals. They mean nothing, point to nothing, restrain from nothing. They are pure vents of superstition where the ignorant fancy they may ward off the evil spirits and that they may secure proper habitation for their own souls in the mystical Nirvana after death, the heathen theory being that when

people die their souls either enter other people yet to be born or into animals or birds or insects or some other living forms. Hence when the Buddhist law commands not to kill, the motive is not a moral or ethical one, but to restrain people from killing their ancestors, for the original doctrine of Buddhism forbade the killing of animals or insects equally with people. In killing a bird or a fly one might be slaying his grandfather. The heathen religions do not aim to affect the moral life. A man may be a devout Buddhist or Shintoist and yet wholly immoral in his life. The result is that while outwardly social conditions are not bad actually they are very corrupt and impure.

Marriage is not solemnized by any religious ceremony, and very many marriages result in separation. Concubinage prevails among the wealthier, it being a common thing for a man to have in addition to his wife several concubines with whom he is openly living. Prostitution exists to a frightful extent. In the city of Tokio is a section containing many thousand prostitutes where the shameless sin is open and notorious, the whole district containing a population covering six blocks of four-story houses being given up wholly to the abandoned class. The same conditions prevail in all the cities. Fathers even sell their own daughters into prostitution, and the daughters, with that filial obedience which is a part of their Shinto religion, go submissively into the horrible disgrace, returning to their homes after the time contracted to resume lives of social respectability. Such flagrant wickedness does not incur censure from the priests or involve social downfall or religious reproach. The Buddhist religion allows its votaries to do whatever they please. Conscience and the fear of punishment are the sole moral guide. A people thus misguided are in need of Christianity which elevates the lives and consciences of men and requires the highest moral standards.



## SOCIAL CASTES.

From time immemorial there have been certain social distinctions in Japan controlled largely by avocations. The highest class has been the soldiers; next come the farmers; then the artisans; and lastly business men. The lowest of all has been regarded the tradesman. This is true in most monarchical countries, and especially was true of ancient and mediaeval periods.

Conditions have changed with the advent of education and peace. Commerce is taking a more dignified place, but there are still evidences of the contempt in which the tradesman is held. The warrior still holds high position. The scholar is coming to the front.

## POLITICAL SITUATION.

They have politics in Japan. There are two parties, the Liberals and the Progressive. The Liberal party is led by Marquis Ito, the ablest man in the Empire, who has practically dictated the governmental policies for forty years. The leader of the Progressive party is Count Okuma, the W. J. Bryan of Japan. In visiting his home I observed a picture of himself and Mr. Bryan taken together, hanging in his reception room. I soon discovered that he was a great admirer of the American statesman. He cannot speak English, but talks with great energy through an interpreter and is forceful, original and interesting. He is a remarkable man. He has amassed a large private fortune which he is expending in a university, the Waseda, which he established in opposition to the Imperial University. The latter he did not think was popular or Japanese enough. For a number of years he has been a leading factor in public affairs. While premier a few years ago his leg was blown off by a bomb, but it did not suppress his energy. His party believes in larger liberties to the



people and in placing greater restraint on the Emperor. But it is much in the minority. At present the Emperor appoints the governors of the states, the House of Lords of the Imperial Diet, or Congress, and practically all the officials of the empire, the people electing only the lower house of the Diet and the subordinate officials of the states, counties, and cities.

#### GROWTH IN FREEDOM.

For over a thousand years prior to 1868 the government was a kind of feudal system, nominally ruled by an Emperor, but really under the domination of a military party called Shoguns, subordinate to whom were the Daimios or feudal lords who owned the lands and the people as well. After Commodore Perry entered the bay of Tokio or Yeddo in 1854 and effected a treaty by which foreigners were for the first time to be admitted, there sprang up a growing dislike of the Shoguns, who were finally dispossessed of power in 1868 and the capital was removed from Kioto to Tokio. The feudal lords surrendered their rights and titles to the lands, and a constitution was promised by the Emperor. But he did not fulfill his promise until thirty-one years afterwards, when Marquis Ito promulgated a constitution modeled after that of Germany. The entire legal code of Japan is largely Germanic. Since that time there has been a steady growth in popular freedom, although the government is yet far from being Republican.

While in Kioto I visited the castle of the Shoguns and the palace of the Emperor. Both, long deserted and empty, are enormous structures, but the palace is plain, while the castle is very handsome, showing that the Shoguns were the real rulers, while the Emperor was a mere figurehead. When the Shoguns were overthrown the Emperor fancied that he was to cease to be

the mere nominal cipher he and his ancestors had been for so many centuries and would have real monarchical functions. But he did not understand the progress that the spirit of freedom had made. While he is honored and loved by the people it is plain that the genius of Democracy has entered the country, and under the great educational awakening, the contact with other countries, the steady influx of foreigners and the spirit of the age is moving on to inevitable supremacy.

#### THE POTENTATES OF THREE KINGDOMS.

In the month we spent in Japan we were afforded the opportunity of studying oriental royalty at close range. Besides seeing the Emperor of Japan at the big army review we attended his reception in Tokio at which were nearly all of the Royal Family, including the Prince and Princess Imperial. At the hotel in which we stopped in Kioto for several days, was Pu Lin, son of the Emperor of China. At the same hotel, also while we were there was for a day or two the little Crown Prince of Korea, who was en route to Tokio, where he is to be educated. He was accompanied by Marquis Ito, who is actually in charge of the Korean government and is endeavoring to construct some kind of a governmental system for that stricken country. Japan has really taken Korea under her wing, and while she is allowing that unhappy nation to maintain a semblance of a government she has really entered upon a scheme of annexation or absorption which will finally make it a province of her own Kingdom, provided China and Russia will permit it. So the young prince is a prospective potentate chiefly in name. He is a cleanly, solemn, handsome little chap, twelve years old. In fact all the three princes are amiable, decent appearing young fellows, who look as though their habits are good, and that they have an appreciative sense

of their probable responsibilities. At least two of them, the Japanese and Chinese princes, are destined to be conspicuous and important factors in the history of the century.

A CLOUD OF WAR.

Speaking of the Korean prince renders it necessary that there should be related an incident in which the writer and his party figured in a somewhat interesting manner. After we had been at the hotel in Kioto about a week the proprietor informed us that we must surrender our rooms as they had been previously engaged for the Prince. The ladies of the party protested against what they regarded an infringement of American rights and asserted with some vehemence that in America all were kings and queens and they would surrender to no one of royal name, especially when his tenure to royalty was as feeble and nominal as that of a little Korean Prince only twelve years old. For a time the contest was heated and it looked as though there would be war between America and Japan. But upon the landlord showing that the Prince had claim to the rooms by prior contract and not by reason of his rank, and upon him giving us other rooms equally as good, the ladies relented and there is still peace between the two nations.

## XII.

### FROM JAPAN TO CHINA—KOREA.

NAGASAKI, JAPAN, December 10, 1907.

The trip from Japan to China is one of the most beautiful in the world. Part of it is through the Inland Sea, which extends three hundred miles from Kobe to Shamonoseki and for scenic beauty is unsurpassed by any body of water we have seen. Varying in width from ten to twenty miles, it is clear and placid and lies between lofty mountain ranges, some covered with perennially green forests and others terraced from base half way to summit by gardens and fields by the thrifty and swarming population who cultivate every available spot. At their base are frequent stretches of valley, which are either covered with villages cosily nestling under the mountains, or like the mountain sides, are smiling fields or gardens of green. Foaming rivers pour their rushing torrents through gorges into the sea, while over cliffs dash numerous waterfalls. There are frequent inlets, cosy and beautiful. Thousands of emerald islands, some of them sloping gently to the water, others rising precipitously to great heights, dot the surface of the sea and add picturesqueness and variety to the scene. The sea is a combination of the St. Lawrence river, Lake George and the Rhine, omitting the splendid mansions and castles of the latter. It embodies many of the attractive features of them all and is unsurpassed by any of them. The presence upon it of limitless sail boats give it the charm and interest of constant animation and business activity. It is said that of the fifty million of inhabitants of Japan one-third or over sixteen millions depend upon fishing alone for subsistence. Hence not only

its rivers, but its thousands of miles of sea coast, for a hundred miles from shore and its Inland Sea swarm with fishing schooners, and its markets are burdened with all varieties of fish, which constitute together with rice, the chief food of the people. In addition to these fishing vessels large steamships from all parts of the world and an occasional man of war are met.

#### OUR SAIL ON THE SEA.

We can never forget the day we crossed the Inland Sea. We embarked at Kobe, Japan's most modern city and destined to be her chief seaport. Although it was the fifth of December the air was as balmy and mild as an October day in Missouri. The sky was cloudless for most of the day. There was but the gentlest breeze stirring and the bosom of the sea was like glass. A quiet haze hung over the mountains as in our Indian summer, and the whole scene was one of indescribable sweetness and charm. Above the steamer whirled constant streams of sea gulls and the sea was alive with floating craft. Our own steamer, a beautiful boat, was not one of the scheduled boats, being upon its return from a special trip to Yokohama whence it had taken the King of Siam, and hence it had but four passengers besides our party, although it had accommodations for a hundred. It was like traveling upon a private yacht in ideal weather upon an ideal sea. A band was aboard and its sweet music was an additional charm. The fare and service were excellent. We must count our trip from Japan to China as a delightful experience.

#### OUR FINAL LEAVE-TAKING OF JAPAN.

The waters of the Inland Sea unite with those of the China Sea through the straits of Shimonoseki. Upon one shore of the straits is the city of Moji, and upon the other the city of Shi-

monoseki, famous in the history of Japan as having been the scene of the final conflict between the Shoguns and the Imperial party by which the latter permanently overthrew the former. Here also Count Ito and Li Hung Chang signed the treaty of peace between Japan and China after the war between those two countries. Farther westward, at the extreme end of Japan lies Nagasaki, one of the most beautiful harbors in the Orient. Here all vessels stop to coal. The process of coaling is novel. The coal is brought to the vessels in barges and is thence passed up ladders by a long line of men and women, chiefly women, in baskets holding about a peck each. Over a hundred people are employed in this process which reminded me of the old days in Missouri towns before the advent of fire companies when water was passed at fires by cordons of people, in buckets. The work consumes a whole day, hundreds of tons being thus conveyed to the ship at an expense of about one-tenth the cost of coaling in San Francisco. The people who do this arduous work receive not over twenty cents a day. It is another illustration of the surplusage of laborers in the orient, and of the very low wages paid them. From Nagasaki we turn westward to China, after having spent five weeks in Japan.

#### KOREA.

A hundred miles to the north lies Korea, the little country that for many years has been such a conspicuous figure in the history of the orient. It lies in between Manchuria and China and juts down into the sea as Florida does in the United States and is about the same size. It contains from ten to fifteen millions of people, an easy-going, indolent, dark complected, slovenly population, extremely poor and apparently harmless, but

they have been the chief cause of two wars on the part of Japan, one with China and the other with Russia. But Japan has finally passed into firm control of the country, and while the latter still retains a nominal Emperor and government Japan has actual possession and is doing what she can to satisfy the people and to establish her power in permanent form. No country in the world is as much written and talked about, and the reports of the treatment her people are receiving at the hands of the Japanese differ widely. The truth is that the country has been benefited by the Japanese protectorate. Her own government was wretchedly corrupt. There was no government worthy of the name. Ignorance was widespread and the people were degraded and superstitious. But under Marquis Ito, Japan's greatest statesman, who is in personal charge of the protectorate, efficiency and honesty have supplanted incapacity and corruption in the public service, a new code of laws has been promulgated, and a well organized school system has been put into operation, a thousand miles of railway connecting the cities of Fushan, Seoul, Chemulpoo and Penyang and stretching to Manchuria and China have been built, and are being efficiently managed. A train taken at Fushan, the southern port, conveys passengers three hundred miles north to Seoul, and thence connects with trains which run on to Peking. There is also a fine line of steamships on the west to Chinese ports.

#### NOT OPPRESSED BY JAPANESE.

The stories of oppression of the Koreans by the Japanese are not warranted by the facts. I myself had opportunity to witness an imposing manifestation of kindly feeling by the Japanese towards the Koreans. There stopped at the same hotel at which



I lodged while in Kioto the little Korean Crown Prince, twelve years old and looking even younger, a chubby little chap of light complexion and pleasing countenance, dressed in military clothes and looking like a drummer boy. He was accompanied by Marquis Ito and a retinue and was en route to Tokio where he is to attend school for a term of years. The demonstrations of welcome by the city were upon a grand scale. The streets were decorated with flags and bunting and all the public schools took a two days' holiday and the students to the number of several thousand joined in procession and bearing flags and in uniform gave him enthusiastic welcome. At night they formed a torchlight procession, each student carrying a Japanese lamp uplifted at the end of a pole, marched to the hotel and amid shouts and music by bands tendered the little prince as royal a welcome as though he had been crown prince of Japan instead of possessing the empty title to the nominal crown of a vanquished nation. The Koreans who had feared that their prince was being spirited away to be held by Japan as a hostage were greatly pleased with these manifestations of honor.

#### MARQUIS ITO.

Evidently this demonstration had been planned by Marquis Ito, the Japanese statesman and diplomat, who has undertaken the work of reconstructing the government of Korea, and of establishing it upon a higher plane under the Aegis of Japan. It indicated that his methods were conciliatory instead of compulsory. No one man has done as much for Japan as Ito. He is easily her greatest statesman. Born a peasant he has by sheer force of ambition and intellect risen to a position where he is a greater force than even the Emperor. He drafted the



constitution, reorganized the government when it overthrew the Shogunate in 1868, has originated most of the policies and changes which have pushed Japan to the forefront, has led her into war and prepared her treaties of peace, and now is engaged in the crowning work of his life, the unification of Korea and Japan. In no other nation is there any one man who for so long a time has been such a dominating force in his own land. In conversation he expressed the utmost friendliness towards the United States and declared that it would require extreme provocation to lead Japan into war with our country. But "once in it," he said, "Japan would sacrifice her last man and dollar rather than yield." He evidently does not regard war between the countries as even a remote probability.

#### THE KOREANS.

Korea is a colder country than Japan. Her people live in warmer houses. They also dress in warmer clothing, chiefly white. One reason for white is because it is the color for mourning and it is their custom to mourn three years for their dead. They wear long coats and tie their pants around the ankles with strings. The hats are high and narrow and sit on the tops of their heads and are tied under the chins by strings. Men who are unmarried wear their hair in a long braid, but when they marry they comb it to the top of the head where it is tied in a knot. Women are seldom seen on the street and men are not allowed on the streets at night. The chief products are rice, beans and peas. The implements of industry are the crudest. As in Japan there are few if any cows or hogs or sheep or wheeled vehicles except rikshas and carts. A great religious wave has lately swept over the country. The people have em-

braced Christianity by thousands, and it is said that there are a thousand church houses and that practically all the people are accessible to them. The religious enthusiasm and devotion of the people is remarkable, and has had a marked influence in their lives. The missionary work has been done chiefly by Presbyterians and Methodists, and there have been few parallels to the great religious awakening of the people. Seoul, a walled city, has a flourishing Y. M. C. A. to which Mr. John Wanamaker has given a building. He also gave buildings to the Y. M. C. A. at Kioto, Japan, and Peking, China.





SCENES IN CHINA—Buddhist Temple and Pagoda—Group of Natives—Boats in  
Which Natives in Canton Dwell

CHINA.



### XIII. CHINA.

SHANGHAI, CHINA, December 20, 1907.

There has not been a time when there was as much widespread interest in the Orient as at present. Of the oriental countries China is by far the most important, and is destined to increase in interest. For this there are several reasons: It has the largest population of any nation. Its population is unified. It has the longest continuous history. It covers the most territory. It is two thousand miles from Peking south to Canton, and six hundred from Shanghai west to Hankow. As these are the four principal cities and in their characteristics reflect the varying phases of the national life and in their location mark the boundaries of a large part of the empire we visited them all, remaining at each as long as possible and taking in such intermediate points as we could. Of these cities Shanghai is regarded the New York, Peking the Washington, Hankow the Chicago and Canton, the most typical Chinese city of them all. There are many other cities like Tientsin, Foochow, Hoochow, Soochow, Yangchow, Chefoo, Ningpoo, Swatow, Hankow and Nanking of between a fourth of a million and a million of people. Cities of some hundred thousand are scattered far and wide, while the country teems with villages.

#### THE COUNTRY.

China is supposed to have a population of over four hundred millions. The empire is divided into eighteen provinces covering two millions of square miles, but its tributary states increase this area to over five million, three hundred thousand. These provinces are divided into prefectures of about ten each, and these prefectures are still further subdivided into counties, which

contain cities and villages. The provinces are ruled by viceroys, there sometimes being one viceroy to two or more provinces, in which event each province has a governor. The prefectures are ruled by prefects, the counties by officials called Hsiens, and cities by magistrates. All these are appointed by the Empress Dowager,\* who is practically absolute monarch. There is no congress or parliament or supreme court. The Empress is the law-making power, her edicts being the law of the land, and she also, so far as any judicial interpretation is rendered, decides, and executes them. There is an Emperor, but he is a mere figure-head, having been set aside by his aunt the Empress in 1898 and being little more than a prisoner in the palace.

#### THE EMPRESS DOWAGER.

The Empress is very old, uneducated, but of strong character. She was the concubine of the father and sister of the mother of the present emperor. She is suspected of having caused the death of both the Emperor and Empress and her own son. She wrested the throne from her nephew when the latter began to institute certain reforms, and not long after she did so came the terrible Boxer insurrection. But of late years she, herself, has manifested a reformatory spirit. She is aided in the administration of the government by a council or cabinet of twelve who are in charge of the various departments and practically manage the civil service. The government is basely corrupt. Bribery prevails from the Empress down to the lowest official, with some notable exceptions. It is claimed that money paid to a sham eunuch of the Empress Dowager will secure from her any favor, while it is notorious that nine-tenths of the officials enrich themselves by corrupt methods. Boodling is rife in all departments of the government.

---

\* Since the above was written the Empress Dowager has died.



## SHANGHAI.

We landed at Shanghai, as do all foreigners who come to China from America by way of Japan. It is a city of possibly a million, of whom some ten thousand are foreigners, a large majority being British. The Americans, French and Germans number about a thousand each, the British six thousand. There is a native city within walls and a foreign or international city, the latter under the control of the foreign and Chinese population within it, there being some 400,000 Chinese and 10,000 foreigners. By international agreement each nationality has its own courts before which its citizens are tried, this extra-territorial arrangement forbidding Chinese with their crude ideas of justice and peculiar, corrupt and prejudicial courts from trying an offender who is a foreigner. The Chinese court is something unique. The prisoner is presumed to be guilty and if the offense with which he is charged is a capital one he is often tortured by whipping or other punishment until he confesses. There are no Chinese lawyers worthy the name, and the prisoner and witnesses are questioned by the magistrate, who is more often influenced by the money paid him than by any sense of justice. There are no higher courts of appeal, except the Emperor or Empress, and no trial by jury.

The city of Shanghai is situated about thirty miles from the ocean, on the Huang Po River, so far inland that at times large steamers cannot enter its harbor. The first impression is pleasing. The traveler is brought by steam launch from his ship to a wharf along side a broad street, or Bund, as all streets fronting harbors are called, which is lined with stately business houses, clubs and hotels and is itself a scene of great bustle and activity. Rikshas, carriages, coolies illimitable with their everlasting bab-

ble, pedestrians of all nations swarm the street and produce an impression that one is in a metropolis like unto Europe and America and in striking contrast with anything seen in Japan.

Shanghai is a great educational point. The chief institution of learning is an Episcopal College, called St. John, which has an attendance of three hundred boys and one hundred and fifty girls. It has large and handsome buildings and grounds. The charge for board and tuition is \$75 gold per year. There is a medical college and hospital. The Methodists have both a boys' and a girls' college with an attendance of several hundred. Rev. J. W. Kline, formerly of Arkansas, is president. The Foreign Mission Board of the Southern Baptist Convention owns a fine boys' and also a girls' school and several excellent residences. Both the Northern and Southern Mission Boards of the Baptists are erecting a large theological seminary on a commanding point upon the Huang Po River near Shanghai. Rev. R. T. Bryan and Rev. J. T. Proctor, the latter of Missouri, Prof. F. J. White, also of Missouri, are among those in charge of this institution, which has now some forty students for the ministry.

The streets of Shanghai are macadamized and are broad and handsome. I refer to the modern city. The streets of the native quarters are narrow and antiques Chinese. The bank and club buildings are specially imposing and the business establishments are on a modern scale. I visited a large Chinese publishing house which employs six hundred printers and book binders, at wages that would make an American Trades Union go into spasms. Printers are paid two dollars and fifty cents per week and girls and apprentices from ten to fifteen cents a day. The Presbyterian Mission Press is conducted by Mr. Clarence Douglas, formerly of Topeka, Kansas.

## HOTELS, STREETS, INSTITUTIONS, ETC.

There are two fairly good hotels, the Astor and Palace, but neither equal to first-class American hotels, although their prices are higher considering the service. I regret to say that the fare is not good. There is no steam heat and no elevators. There is a superfluous number of waiters. Labor is so cheap and laborers so abundant that where an American home or hotel has one servant over here there are three or four and they are excellent, not so obsequious as in Japan, but more efficient. We spent Christmas day in Shanghai and the weather was delightful. We attended services on that day at the English Cathedral, a very large brick edifice built in the form of a cross. The decorations were beautiful and the services impressive. Nearly all the other Evangelical denominations, here as in most Asiatic cities, worship in a Union church. We have attended it several times.

## CHANGE OF GOVERNMENT INEVITABLE.

Manifestly present governmental conditions cannot continue. They are a thousand years behind the age. Of recent years there has been such progress in education, commerce and popular intelligence as to make it inevitable that there must be a representative government at no distant day. Already steps have been taken for the promulgation of a constitution, on the lines of those of Germany or England. A new public school system is being inaugurated, and many schools, academies and colleges under missionary boards are already in operation in the principal cities. Many thousands of Chinese are attending college in Japan, United States and Europe and there is a genuine educational uprising. Most of the principal cities have large foreign concessions occupied by many thousands of foreigners of wealth and high professional and

commercial ability who are not only working a revolution, but are becoming such leading factors as to warrant the belief that it will not be long before John Chinaman will have to take a back seat even in his own land. All these conditions render it certain that the present corrupt and effete monarchy can not continue.

There is a lack of the national spirit so observable in Japan, and the vast majority of the people are less intelligent and not fitted for self-government. But by establishing an educational qualification the franchise could be permitted before many years. One of the most marked advancements made of recent years is that of examinations for the Civil Service. Formerly the only qualification required was that of a knowledge of the books of Confucius and other ancient Chinese sages. This absurd law has been abrogated and now candidates for official appointment have to undergo examinations in the special work of the office. It is said that this change in an ancient and time-honored law was one of the chief causes of the Boxer uprising.

#### XIV.

##### FROM THE INTERIOR OF CHINA.

ON THE YANGTSE RIVER, December 27, 1907.

This city of Yangchow is enclosed within walls, and is said to be two thousand years old. The walls are fifty feet high and equally as wide at base. There are several gates, all of which are locked at sundown and opened at sunrise. Each block is also locked up at night by gates called "thief gates," the purpose being to keep out thieves. All during the night at intervals a watchman may be heard beating something like a drum, the purpose of which is to scare away thieves. It would seem that it would be a warning he was coming. But there are no thieves, for every body leaves their doors open at night and there is rarely a burglary.

The Chinese officials are very severe upon the crime of theft. They cut off the thief's head. It is regarded as bad as murder. The city is situated upon the Grand Canal, one hundred and seventy miles from Shanghai and eighteen miles north of the Yangtse Kiang river. Marco Polo, the great Italian traveler, is said to have once been its governor. It has no street over eight feet wide. It contains over three hundred thousand inhabitants, but it has not a wagon or buggy or carriage, or horse or newspaper, or foreign hotel. The only means of transportation is upon the backs of little donkeys or in Sedan chairs. The streets are too narrow even for rickshas. It has no municipal council and no police court. It is ruled by a magistrate, who has all power civil and criminal, subject only to reversal by the Empress Dowager.

There are but four foreign families: Dr. and Mrs. P. S. Evans, of Baltimore, Rev. and Mrs. L. W. Pierce, of Texas, Dr. and Mrs.

A. S. Taylor, of Mobile, and Rev. and Mrs. A. Y. Napier, of Tennessee, all missionaries of the Southern Baptist Convention. Mr. Pierce and Mr. Napier have charge of the Mission and Drs. Evans and Taylor operate a medical missionary hospital. Dr. Evans' wife is the daughter of Hon. Joshua Levering, of Baltimore, and Dr. Taylor's wife is the daughter of Rev. Mr. Cox, of Mobile; all are refined and delightful people, and I could but admire the spirit of devotion and unselfishness which they exhibit in their work in this isolated field. In addition to these Miss J. K. McKenzie, assisted by Miss M. Moorman, is conducting a school for girls. There is also a school for boys.

#### STREETS, HOUSES AND STORES.

There is no gas or electric light, and the streets are in utter darkness at night, except from the lights that come from the stores and shops. I took a leisurely walk through the principal business street. It was eight feet in width and crowded at all times with pedestrians, who were frequently interrupted by warning screams from coolies carrying Sedan chairs or some burden or leading a donkey. The aristocratic ride in Sedan chairs and on donkeys. The stores and shops were small affairs, dark and low, not over twenty or thirty feet square and entirely open in front. No buildings were over two stories and most of them were one story. In these shops were offered for sale every conceivable article of traffic or merchandise, jewelry, dry goods, groceries, confections, meat, hardware and on to the end of the list. I priced some articles, but could not discover that the charges were less than in America. There are no residences with front lawns as in America. The most uninteresting and narrow streets, where the walls of the houses are blank and plain are often the residence streets. At

times the front is occupied as a store or shop, but an alley or narrow passage runs back to the home, which is situated in an area, court or compound, secluded from the street, and in this hid-away place is often the home of the rich. It is prettily furnished and has a nice yard.

The family life of the Chinese is different from the Japanese. The inmates sit on chairs about a table and not on the floor as in Japan. But they eat with chopsticks, and it is usual for all the family, the sons and the daughters-in-law and grandchildren, sometimes in large numbers, to live together and the mother-in-law is monarch of them all. I saw one house in Shanghai built by a wealthy Chinese woman for herself and fourteen children and grandchildren. It is difficult to imagine anything more offensive than the streets of a Chinese city. There is no sewerage and all the filth and offal of the homes is carried through the streets continually or sits in repugnant obtrusiveness upon the sidewalk. Many of the streets are slippery with grease and filth, and one's sense of modesty is frequently sadly wrenched by spectacles he cannot escape beholding along the way, but of which the natives take no notice. One of the most offensive sights is that witnessed along the canals or streams which flow through the cities. Frequently they are thick with scum, and they are receptacles of the city sewage, yet women will be observed washing rice and laundering clothes and men taking partial baths side by side, and the water is dipped up and drank after being boiled.

#### AS TO WATER.

The Chinese do not drink water to any extent. They drink tea almost exclusively. They do not drink coffee or whiskey or beer or wine. They are tea drinkers pure and simple. If they



drink water at all it is after it is boiled. They have a theory that unboiled water is poisonous. A gentleman told me of a young Chinese woman who attempted to commit suicide by drinking unboiled water. Tourists shy from the water and most of them substitute wine or charged or mineral waters. But our party has stuck to the boiled waters furnished by good hotels and have discovered no evidence of poison as yet.

#### THE TRIP TO YANGCHOW.

But I must tell you of the trip from Shanghai to Yangchow and of what I saw along the way. It was by way of the Shanghai and Nanking Railway, recently finished. I never traveled upon a better built or equipped railroad in England or America. Both first and second class cars were upholstered in leather and constructed like American cars, and not in the carriage or compartment shape as on most European and Asiatic railroads. I had a lunch upon it that I must pronounce the best I ever ate upon any railroad car: Soup, fish, beef, duck, rice, plum-pudding, fruit, all served beautifully and cooked in a manner worthy of a Missouri housekeeper. The railroad fare was most reasonable: For first class, two cents per mile; second class, one cent; third class, a half cent and fourth class one-third cent. Our trip lay along the Grand Canal, which runs from Pekin to Hanchow, several thousand miles and is the largest canal in the world. Innumerable branches stretch out from it in all directions and these are filled with sail boats, fishing smacks and small cargo craft, presenting a most lively appearance. The canal runs north to the Yangtse Kiang river, which pours its waters into the ocean not far above Shanghai. Within this triangle between the Canal and the Yangtse river a section of some fifteen thousand square miles, about one-fourth



the size of Missouri, dwell twenty millions of people. If Missouri were as thickly settled it would have a population of eighty million, or as many people as were in all the United States in 1900. The country is very fertile, being the results of ages of silt from the rivers, but is void of trees and is everywhere flat. It is relieved by frequent villages and an occasional walled city. The people live by raising rice and beans and cotton and vegetables and by fishing. It is incredible how so dense a population exists upon such resources.

#### THE DEAD AS WELL AS LIVING.

This section of China is literally covered with graves. In the gardens and fields, along the river banks, everywhere, are the mounds of varying sizes in which are buried the dead, a pathetic reminder that millions have lived in China in the past as well as today. No stones or monuments mark the resting places of these unknown dead and it is said that with each changing dynasty the mounds are leveled and the graves obliterated. It is certainly necessary, as otherwise the graves would so cover the face of the earth as to render its further cultivation impossible.

#### SOOCHOW.

Fifty miles north of Shanghai on the Shanghai and Nanking Railroad is Soochow, a city of a million and by many regarded the most interesting and beautiful city of China. It is called the Paris of China. It is very ancient, and like Yangchow is supposed to have existed before the Christian era, although its history is hazy. It is surrounded by a wall twelve miles in length, fifty feet high and fifty feet at base. Enveloping the wall is a broad moat or canal, similar to those encompassing ancient castles and forts

in Europe. We are taken across the moat in a house boat, and after passing the city wall we enter immediately the grounds of the Soochow University, under the control of the Methodist Church South of America. It occupies a campus of ten acres, has a number of large and commodious buildings and one hundred and fifty students, whose board and tuition cost \$125 a year each. The buildings and grounds are valued at \$75,000 gold, and would be worth twice or three times that amount in America. Its President, Dr. D. L. Anderson and its leading Professor, Dr. W. B. Nance, are well known in America. In addition to giving the students a full collegiate education it has a flourishing medical department and hospital.

#### FEATURES OF INTEREST.

A series of canals thread the city, being a reminder of Venice. As in Yangchow the streets are narrow, from six to eight feet, and there are no wheeled vehicles of any kind. A pagoda one hundred feet high and of great antiquity is the most striking architectural feature. There is also a leaning pagoda similar to that at Pisa. We were delightfully entertained at the homes of Revs. T. C. Britton and C. G. McDaniel, and besides them and their wives met Miss Sophia Lanneau, formerly of Lexington, Missouri, and Rev. P. W. Hamlett.

#### CHENKIANG AND THE YANGTSE.

A hundred miles farther north by rail we reach Chenkiang, also a walled city, but with so many foreign concessions and consulates outside the walls, that it has been practically divested of its ancient or even Chinese aspects, so far as the architecture of the buildings or the width of the streets go.

Like Soochow and Yangchow it literally swarms with Chinese. I thought the congestion of population in Japan was great, but it is even greater in China. Chenkiang sits romantically upon bluffs overlooking the great Yangtse river and in location resembles Jefferson City, Missouri. It is an open port and several consulates and custom houses are here located. It also has a large and beautiful pagoda. The view of the city from an adjoining bluff is one of the most inspiring I have seen anywhere. The railroad has been finished to it within the past two months and there is reason to expect it to become an important city. It is important already. We were pleasantly entertained there by Revs. W. E. Crocker, formerly of North Carolina, and T. F. McCrae, formerly of Virginia, the latter of whom was one of the most efficient members of the committee which disbursed a million dollars last year to the famine sufferers. The famine region was a hundred miles north of Chenkiang. The stories of suffering are horrible. A million actually starved, but a million were rescued by the timely contributions mostly from America.

#### THE YANGTSE KIANG RIVER.

At Chenkiang we beheld for the first time the splendid Yangtse Kiang River. The word means "Son of the ocean." We were startled by the size of the stream and no less so by the numerous mammoth steamers which ply upon it. It is wider than the Mississippi and is as muddy as the Missouri, and as treacherous for navigation. It widens as it flows toward the sea and also contracts and widens for hundreds of miles towards its source. It is over 1,600 miles in length and runs nearly across the empire. It is navigable for a thousand miles. We write these paragraphs while upon one of its beautiful steamers, sailing from Shanghai to

Hankow, six hundred miles west, whence we will go by rail to Pekin. It is certainly a magnificent stream. While flowing through muddy banks and adjacent to flat lands, there is in nearly constant view, in the distance, mountains wrapped in snow. The river itself is alive with steamers, sail boats, schooners and smaller craft. We pass villages and adobe houses without number. The first city of importance is Nanking, called the Boston of China, the Capital of the Province and the home of the viceroy. It is said to be the home of more educated people than any other Chinese city. There are 300,000 Chinese and 100 foreign inhabitants. It was once the capital of China, and near to it are buried some of the ancient emperors. It is enclosed in walls twenty miles long and nestles beautifully in a valley under the shadow of snow-covered mountains. Thence forward the river pursues its course by the cities of Woohoo, Kukiang and Hankow, the Chicago of China, where we land and take train for Pekin.

We have nowhere had a river trip where the scenery was more attractive and where the steamer was more comfortable, and we do not except either the Rhine or the Hudson. The Yangtse combines many of the characteristics of both those rivers added to the Mississippi. And the wonder of it all is that all this should be in China. Nothing one sees so impresses him with this country's "awakening" as that which he beholds on this great river. The center of America or Europe is not more modern, more expressive of commercial activity, and civilized progress.



SCENES IN CHINA—Temple of Heaven in Peking—Buddhist Temple—Two Views of the Great Wall—A Chinese Market Scene



## XV.

### CHINESE CUSTOMS AND CHARACTERISTICS.

HANKOW, CHINA, December 30, 1907.

The Chinaman has an individualism all his own. No one else looks, talks or acts as he does. Take his queue for instance. He wears it because it was prescribed as a mark of servitude by his Manchu conquerors in 1644. All other people would like to abolish a badge of servitude. He is proud of it. He writes his name and books backward, but in this respect he is not different from the Japanese. When he meets you he shakes his own hand instead of yours, and instead of asking "how are you?" he asks, "how old are you?" In conversation with each other, especially along the public highways, they shout in a manner that leads those who do not understand the language to imagine they are quarrelling, and will be in a fight in a minute. But while they can out-revile any people in the world they are physical cowards and never fight. They live practically on but three articles of food: rice, fish and tea, with some beans and sweet potatoes and other vegetables. They know little, if anything, of bread or butter or milk, and eat but little meat except fish.

### THE TWO NATIONAL EVILS.

The two great evils of China are opium-eating and foot-binding, one the curse of the men, the other of the women. The missionaries and public reformers have made a long and persistent fight upon both evils, until finally the government has been aroused and there have been edicts from the throne within the past few years forbidding public officials, upon the penalty of the



loss of their office, to eat opium, and providing for the gradual extinction of the evil, and the suppression of the traffic within the next ten years. But notwithstanding this action of the government the habit prevails to a great extent. However it can be said to their credit that they do not drink whiskey or beer and they have no open saloons.

The most horrible custom of the Chinese and one to which they still cling with strange and barbarous tenacity is that of foot-binding. Although anti-foot-binding societies all over the empire have been making war upon it for years, and the government has tried to stop it, the habit prevails to an alarming extent. We noticed that the number of children upon the streets was not to be compared to that seen in Japan, and the explanation given was that the little girls were imprisoned in the homes with bound feet. The binding begins when the child is five or six years of age, or even younger. Girls have been known to begin at sixteen, because they could not get a husband otherwise, and some young man had made it a condition of marriage. In many aristocratic circles, not in all, it is regarded an evidence of low birth for a girl not to have little bound feet, and among all classes it is considered a disgrace for a girl not to be married soon after she reaches the marriageable age. The toes and heel are gradually bound together by strong bandages, which are drawn together until the bones bend or break and finally after several years of excruciating suffering the foot becomes but little more than a club on the end of the ankle, but the binding has to be kept up through life or nature will partially restore the foot to a normal shape. Thus women are doomed from childhood to this ridiculous and awful torture. It is said that the wails of the little children in the homes are most distressing, while the mothers keep a rod convenient to punish



them for crying. At times gangrene sets in and the foot drops off or the entire lower limb or body is paralyzed and not infrequently death ensues. It is pathetic to see women hobbling about upon their little feet, walking as though they were on stilts. It is gratifying to notice in the different mission schools we have attended that none of the girls have bound feet. If Christianity does nothing more for China than to stop or even arrest this barbarous evil it will be worth all it costs. The more intelligent Chinese are trying to have it stopped. In this the government is aiding. The reform was started by the missionaries.

#### THE ELEVATION OF WOMEN.

In no way are Christian missions and education exerting a more marked influence than in behalf of Chinese women. From time immemorial woman has been a drudge and slave. But gradually she is assuming a more honorable and dignified place. At the schools I have attended I have been greatly impressed with the modest and refined bearing of the girls and of their sprightliness and culture. Education has the effect to divest them of the Chinese, almond-eyed appearance and to impart an expression not unlike that of the Caucasian. In several schools I heard them sing and recite both in English and Chinese and I was much impressed with the progress and proficiency they exhibited. Naturally, the Chinese boy or girl has no more music than a hawk; but these girls sang like nightingales.

#### DRESS AND MANNER.

In no manner do Chinese exhibit their contrary way of doing things more than in dress. The men wear dresses and the women wear trousers. The men have long hair and wear caps and the

women go bare-headed. The coolies or lower class of men, dress in blue or black blouses and the wealthy wear long wooden shoes or sandals as in Japan. Both men and women wear cloth slippers. I attended a girls' school where all the girls wore a uniform of light frock coats and black trousers, and in the same city I was at a boys' school where the boys wore long skirts. The Chinese are not as obsequious as the Japanese, do not bow as many times, but they impress you more with their sincerity. They are apparently a stronger people intellectually and morally.

#### HUMAN HORSES.

Men and women are the beasts of burden. Repeatedly I have seen as many as twenty men hitched to a roller or wagon, and men not only haul the rickshas and pull wagons of lumber and merchandise through the streets, but drag great ships along the canals. Women work in the fields and bear as heavy and grievous burdens as the men. They may be seen hauling carts and rowing boats and doing other menial work. But my observation has been that the woman's lot is not as hard as in Japan. She, however, still occupies a menial place in the home. The birth of a girl is regarded a great misfortune.

#### WAGES.

The cheapness of labor as in Japan is almost incredible. Ordinary laborers are paid from ten to fifteen cents a day and carpenters and masons twenty-five cents and feed themselves. Native preachers are paid from \$5 to \$7.50 per month, and the best prices paid educated boys and girls as clerks and in professional work is from \$10 to \$30 per month. But when it is known that the cost of living of the laboring class is but little over six cents a

day it will be understood why they can live on these wages. The house servants and cooks receive about \$6 per month. The Chinese make ideal servants. They are faithful and capable.

#### MONEY, INTEREST.

Banks loan money at eight and nine per cent., taking mortgages as security. But Chinese in loaning to each other exact usurious interest, two per cent. or more per month. All interest is compounded quarterly. Banks pay two per cent. interest on current deposits. The money in universal use is Mexican dollars, whose price varies daily. At present it is worth about forty-six cents of American money, and a tael is about sixty-five cents. Mexican dollars are lower now than for years. This fluctuation in the valuation of money makes business a vexatious matter, as the prices have to be constantly altered as the value of money changes.

#### LAND PRICES AND TRANSFERS.

Land is measured by the mow, which is a sixth of an acre, and sells near Shanghai at from \$300 to \$400 gold an acre. Prices vary in different parts of the empire. Taxes are levied on land only and at the rate of from \$5 to \$6 per acre. There are some interesting and amusing features about the transfers of land. When a sale is made by a native to a foreigner that is not the end of it. There is first given a "sighing deed," the meaning of which is to give the seller an opportunity to think over the sale and complain if he thinks he has not been paid enough. When he thus complains and is paid a little more there is then executed an "add a little more deed." If he is still not satisfied there is given "a pull up root and go deed," which ends the transaction, and all these deeds are placed on record, showing that the seller had

complained, had been given more than first price and finally had consented and acknowledged satisfaction. All this is stamped on the deed in both English and Chinese, for this peculiar form of transaction only prevails between Chinese and foreigners, it having been adopted to keep foreigners from cheating the natives.

#### THE POPULATION AND AGRICULTURE.

While there are so many millions in China and the congestion of population is tremendous the rural districts do not give evidence of it. They are barren frequently for great stretches of distances. There are no fences, no large farm houses, no farm machinery, no horses or mules or cattle. The farm implements are the crudest, the same as the country has had for thousands of years. Plows are rarely seen, and where used, have but one handle and are pulled by a water buffalo or a steer. China has an amount of awakening yet to do in agriculture. The people live in the villages and isolated farm houses are rarely observed.

#### LOSING FACE.

The most grievous misfortune that can befall a Chinaman is to "lose his face." Its meaning is mortification at failure. If he attempts to do anything and fails, or makes an assertion that is controverted or in any way suffers defeat or reversal he is said to "lose face," and such is at times his humiliation that he will commit suicide. "Losing face" means rather detection in a failure or a wrong than any inward compunction or suffering for the thing itself. It is the disgrace which ensues upon being discovered.

#### BIRDS, DEER, DUCK AND OTHER GAME.

China is a paradise for hunters. Many of the forests are full of deer and wild hogs, and the rivers and lakes swarm

with wild ducks and geese. The pheasant is found in large quantities and is the best fowl for the table in the world, is equally as good as quail and they are as large as chickens. The one bird here that reminds the Missourian of home is the crow. In some places they nearly blacken the air and they have the identical caw, caw, caw, of the Missouri crow, and are like him in all respects.

#### RELIGIOUS AND SOCIAL CONDITIONS.

As is well known the vast majority of Chinese are worshipers of Confucius and Buddha. But, as in Japan there is evidence here of a falling away from the heathen religions. Many of the temples are little more than junk shops and there is practically no reverence for them. But the Chinese continue to be very superstitious and it will be some time before they will change.

Christian missionaries are kindly received, and while they are moving slowly, they are making some progress and it cannot be long before the darkness of heathendom will disappear. Social conditions here, as in Japan, are bad, but hardly so bad as there. Concubinage is rife and a regard for marital ties is not what it should be. But no one can go throughout China without being convinced that it will not be many years before the onward tide of commerce, civilization and christianity will penetrate all departments of Chinese life and make this one of the greatest civilized nations in the world.

## XVI.

### FROM SHANGHAI TO PEKIN.

PEKIN, CHINA, January 3, 1908.

My last letter was written upon a steamer on the Yangtse River between Shanghai and Hankow. I do not now recall what I said about that river, but this experience was so delightful that I must again refer to it at the expense of repetition. The distance between Shanghai and Hankow via the Yangtse is six hundred miles. The river is navigable for large steamers for the entire distance, and several lines have boats constantly running, which with the innumerable freight vessels and fishing schooners make it a scene of never-ending life and activity. It resembles in this respect the Hudson between New York and Albany. The steamers are equally as handsome and well equipped. But the river is much wider, being fully as broad as the Mississippi between Memphis and New Orleans. The steamer upon which we had passage was one of the finest upon which we have travelled either in America or Europe. The officers were courteous, the fare excellent and the cabins large and clean. The boat was so steady that it was necessary often to look out upon the shore to be certain it was moving.

#### ALONG THE RIVER.

The boat landed at all the important cities. Their names are Chinkiang, Woo Hoo, Kinkuiang, Nanking and Hankow. All are large cities of several hundred thousand inhabitants, and most of them are surrounded by walls. The scene on the shores

at landings is most animated. The river front resembles the levee at St. Louis, except that in place of the tumbledown old buildings to be seen there is a line of handsome modern structures occupied by consulates and custom officials. These streets along the river front are called Bunds. Thousands of Chinese swarm the banks and the river itself is full of all varieties of craft. At one place was the welcome spectacle of an United States man of war.

The largest and most important city between Shanghai and Hankow is Nanking. The name means "Southern Capital," it having once been capital of China. Peking, the present capital, means "Northern Capital." Nanking has a population of over a million and is surrounded by a wall twenty miles long. It has several interesting temples and there are located near to it the tombs of former kings. The Northern Methodists have a large university and there are several other mission stations. The city is picturesquely situated in a valley surrounded by mountains, which at this season are covered with snow. The steamer is never out of sight of villages and frequently mountains loom up either near or at a distance from the shore. The spectacle of walls extending along the mountain sides or reaching to the summits and from one peak to another, while the cities they once enclosed have long since disappeared, are striking reminders of the antiquity of the region through which the river flows. Every foot of ground is under constant cultivation. The river itself, like the Missouri, is treacherous, constantly shifting its channel, and it requires skill to successfully navigate it.



## HANKOW.

The city of Hankow is called "The Chicago of China." It is near the center of the empire, and is already the focus of its trade. It has the longest and most impressive bund or river frontage of any city in China. The long row of handsome buildings occupied chiefly by consulates and floating the flags of many nations is truly inspiring. The sight of "old glory" is not the least of the attractions which greet the eye from the steamer, and make the itinerant American think of far away America and awaken pleasant sensations of home. The cordial greeting extended our party by Consul Martin and daughter and his assistant, Mr. Hull, was a genuine touch of American hospitality, and added to the homelike feeling awakened by the sight of the flag. The city has broad streets and many handsome business buildings and residences, besides several schools and churches. Across the river is Wuchang, where is located a large Episcopalian university and hospital, and separated by a creek or small river is Hanyang, where we were pleasantly entertained by Dr. J. S. Adams and family and Dr. G. A. Huntley of the Baptist Mission. They are conducting a flourishing mission station and hospital, the latter having a new and well-equipped building.

Adjoining Hanyang is a high bluff, the sides of which are covered with graves and upon the summit is a Buddhist temple. The view of the three cities from this spot is one of the most inspiring we have seen anywhere in the world. They contain a combined population of nearly two millions. Within the limits of vision are all three cities, while for many miles the Yangtse and its tributaries and many lakes and valleys and long ranges of mountains are in view. We beheld this splendid panorama at sunset, and it left



an impression which can not be effaced. We were delightfully entertained by Rev. Arthur Sherman and wife at their beautiful home. Mr. Sherman is rector of the Episcopal church and Mrs. Sherman is a daughter of Hon. Joshua Levering of Baltimore.

FROM HANKOW TO PEKIN.

For five years past an English and Belgian company has been operating a railroad between Hankow and Peking. The distance is seven hundred miles and the direction from south to north. An express train runs through once a week and makes the trip in thirty hours. There are daily passenger trains which do not run at night, and are three days making the journey. The sleeping cars are divided into compartments and are fairly comfortable. Meals are served on the trains. The most important feature of the trip is the crossing of the Hoang-Ho or Yellow River, on which is claimed to be the longest bridge in the world. This and the Yangtse are the two great rivers of China, but the Yellow is so wide and shallow and shifts its current so frequently that it is of but little value for purposes of navigation.

With the exception of one range of mountains, not very high or wide, the entire distance is one dead level plain, an apparent mixture of soil and sand, but all under cultivation. Not a spray of grass and but a few trees relieve the monotony of what in this January season seems to be one dreary waste. But the interesting feature is a never-ending succession of walled cities, towns and villages, many of them but a few miles apart. At times three or more are in view at once. The buildings are almost uniformly constructed of mud bricks and the people are very poor. Not a stately building of any kind is to be seen. Occasionally there is a pagoda or Buddhist temple. The cold

weather keeps the people in the cities, but the multiplicity of the latter is indication of the enormous population. I understand that the country is equally as thickly settled in all sections of the empire. There are no rural dwellings. All the people live in the towns, whose walls are said to be necessary as a protection against robbers. There are no fences either here or anywhere in China. So far as we have seen America is the only country except England that has a comfortably established rural population.

Everywhere are little mounds wherein are buried the dead. They are unmarked by stones and are located any and everywhere without reference to locality or convenience. The donkey and the water buffalo are the only visible beasts of burden, and they are diminutive specimens. There are no farm implements, except an occasional one-handled plow. Hoes and rakes are the solitary utensils of the farmer. The products are barley and wheat and cotton and rice. The latter is, however, not cultivated in Northern China as much as in other sections.

#### CAMELS AND HORSES AND MULES.

As we draw near to Pekin we have our first sight of a train of camels, which we see frequently in that city and farther North. They are patient, dull, lonesome looking quadrupeds and trudge along one after the other, a man walking in front, while each is led by a ring in his nose, the rope being attached to the camel in front, the man leading the front camel. They carry enormous burdens, and there may be seen in some places as many as three thousand in one train, all loaded with coal. The horses which also we begin to see as we draw nearer to Pekin are shabby, long-haired, scrubby specimens, and almost invariably pace instead of

trot. We do not remember to have seen a first class horse since we left America. But the most interesting, welcome and familiar being we have met in North China is the old fashioned, genuine Missouri mule. We have looked in vain for him since we have reached the Orient, searched for him in Japan and all through Southern China, and when in the suburbs of Pekin he for the first time loomed in sight and we later heard his familiar bray, a regular old fashioned Missouri bray, we felt like embracing him as a long-lost brother. But we were destined to see much of him in Pekin, where he is seen by thousands hauling little two-wheeled carts or doing service under the saddle.

#### RAILROADS.

It seems strange that the ancient city of Pekin, which in our country we regard as one of the most remote and inaccessible in the world, should be reached by railroad and in a palace car. But this suggests the interesting fact that in no respect has China made more progress than in the matter of railroads. Ten years ago in the whole country there was but one short railroad. Now there are between three and four thousand miles and these are being added to constantly. It will be but a few years before a railroad will be built from Hankow to Canton in the extreme South. It will then be possible to travel in one car from Pekin to Canton, from the North to the South, across the empire, nor will it be many years before there will be a railroad from the Western to the Eastern limits of the empire. Quite a controversy is in progress now as to whether the road shall be owned and operated by foreigners or Chinese, and there is a slight danger of serious trouble from this source, but the chances are that foreigners will finance and build them. It is plain that the Chinese must take many steps forward before they will be able

to handle enterprises on a large scale or can cope with foreigners in that respect.

#### CUSTOMS.

A curious illustration of the reliance of the natives upon foreigners to handle big things is to be found in the fact that for nearly fifty years the entire customs service of the country has been under the supervision of one man, Sir Robert Hart, who controls forty stations for the collection of customs in the empire, all there are. Through them there are paid into the Chinese treasury annually over twenty-five millions of gold dollars. Sir Robert Hart is an English gentleman and resides in Peking. He came to China as a translator for an English consul at Hong-kong in the fifties. About 1859 a rebellion occurred which so disorganized the customs service that the foreign powers had to organize a method of collecting the revenue from this source independently of the Chinese. Sir Robert was placed in charge of it and did his work so successfully that he has been continued in the place since. When foreign nations have since made loans to the Chinese government a condition imposed was that its payment was to be guaranteed through the revenue from customs, and a further exaction was made that the customs service should be continued under the management of Sir Robert. It was well known that the Chinese themselves were not competent to handle it, and that if they attempted it their officials would steal nine-tenths of it. In this way alone were they able to secure loans or guarantee their heavy indemnities after the Boxer troubles. Although a suspicious people they have full confidence in Sir Robert. I had the pleasure of calling upon this remarkable man in Peking and in hearing from him a full history of his work in China. It has no parallel in the history of nations.

## XVII.

### PEKIN.

PEKIN, CHINA, January 5, 1908.

It is a habit of travelers to regard the last great thing they see the greatest. But I am sure I am not following this habit in pronouncing Peking, or Peking as it is more frequently written, the most interesting city we have visited in the orient. The verdict is just from any standpoint. It is of great interest on account of its antiquity. It is doubtful if there is an older city in the world. Its history extends so far into the hazy ages of the past that it is not known how old it really is. The best authorities place its birth at four thousand years ago. But even if they add a trifle of a thousand to its age it is old enough to be regarded as one of the world's antiquities. It is one of the largest cities in the world, containing over three millions of people, and ranking with London and New York. It may have a larger population than either for it contains a multitude difficult to number. It is the most curious city in the world. It has more diverse and singular types of people. It also occupies an unique place in history, present, past and future.

#### THE GREAT WALL.

The first object to engage the attention and excite the admiration of the visitor is the great wall which surrounds it. It has stood for thousands of years; but is as solid and well preserved as when first built. It is constructed of huge blocks of stone laid with remarkable skill and regularity and is forty-one feet high, sixty-two feet at base and fifty feet at top. We read of the ancients having chariot races and driving six chariots abreast on the walls of Babylon. This could be easily done on the walls

of Pekin. The wall extends around the entire city and is fourteen miles in length. It has numerous massive gates all of which are closed at sunset.

These gates are most imposing. Some of them are surmounted by beautiful pagodas, but as the Chinese have a superstition that good spirits do not cross at a greater height than a hundred feet no pavilion surmounting the gates is over ninety-nine feet in height. The visitor is deeply impressed when he first enters one of these high gates, not only by the colossal proportions of the structure, but by the dense throng pouring through it, the mule carts, the rickshas, the trains of camels, the people riding donkeys and horses and mules and the enormous number of pedestrians of every nationality and every costume in the world.

#### THE CITY, ITS STREETS, HOUSES, ETC.

Pekin is subdivided into three cities, the Tartar or main city in which dwell most of the population and where are all the business houses and dwellings and public buildings and temples, the Imperial City which contains the officials and the soldiers and those connected with the government, and the Forbidden City where are the Palaces of the Emperor and Empress Dowager. These latter are approached by a series of seven gates surmounted by lofty towers. The three cities are separated from each other by walls not so high as the main outer wall. The gates to the Imperial and Forbidden City are strictly guarded from entrance by all except those permitted to dwell within them or who by special permit are allowed to enter them. The streets of the Tartar City are wider than those of any other Chinese city we have visited. Many of them are a hundred feet in width, measuring from the distance between the line of buildings. Most of them were thus widened after the Boxer trouble. Only the





IN PEKIN—Chinese Woman with Small Feet—Empress Dowager's Marble Boat—  
Touring Cart—A Prisoner—Sedan Chair—Temple





side streets are narrow. The streets are about fifty feet and the sidewalks twenty-five feet on either side. Both streets and sidewalks are built of macadam and are separated by open gutters or sewers. The business buildings or shops are nearly all of one story and the roofs are of tiling. All the business establishments are small shops. There are no large business houses.

#### THE LEGATIONS.

The most attractive quarter is that set apart for the foreign legations. Most of these buildings have been erected since 1900 when the Boxer uprising occurred, and were constructed out of the money from the indemnity funds exacted after that awful catastrophe. Most of the legation buildings were either destroyed or rendered unfit for occupancy as were the mission stations and schools and much of the remainder of the city. These buildings are of grey brick and are built in hollow squares inside of walled areas or compounds. All of the great countries of the world have buildings for their diplomatic corps. The American Legation has five large two-story structures. The largest is occupied by Mr. Rockhill, the minister, as a residence. One other is set apart for the business office. The other three are occupied by Mr. Fletcher, the First Secretary, Mr. Haskins, the Chinese Secretary and Mr. Fred M. Dearing, the Second Secretary of Foreign affairs, each of these gentlemen having a separate residence. Our party were the guests of Mr. Dearing in his beautiful home, and we could not have been more pleasantly situated. His residence is handsomely furnished and he has a corps of excellent servants. We shall count our stay of five days with him as one of the most delightful experiences of our tour around the world. He is filling his position with great efficiency and is popular with all the other delegations. No foreign representative in Peking is more highly esteemed. Our party also

had the pleasure of dining with Sir John and Lady Jordan, the British minister and his wife, and were entertained at beautiful functions by the German and Russian ministers. There is a fine social life among those engaged in the diplomatic service, and the round of gayeties is unceasing. Soldiers' barracks are attached to most of the legations, where some fifteen hundred soldiers have been kept since the Boxer troubles. They also add to the social life.

#### TEMPLES.

Buddhism, Confucianism and Taoism are the prevailing religions of China. Confucianism has not until of late years been regarded a religion. Confucius was simply a philosopher and never claimed to be a deity. But recently he has been worshipped as a god, and it is understood that the government has issued an edict commending his philosophy as a religion. Taoism is a worship of ancestors. But Buddhism is universally regarded as the Chinese religion and Buddha is worshipped as Christians worship Christ. What the religion stands for no one seems to definitely understand. It is a mingling of philosophy and superstition, and most of its adherents have no clearly defined conception of it beyond a mere idolatrous superstition. There are said to be ten thousand temples erected to these different religions, chiefly Buddhist, in Peking. Most of them are only little shrines. There are but three important structures dedicated to heathen worship which attract the attention of visitors. One of these is the large Confucian and the other are Buddhist temples. To describe them would hardly be possible. They are elaborate and ancient, but both impress the visitor as degenerating into disuse and decay. Erected at enormous expense and representing an ancient and beautiful type of architecture they are in-

teresting from a historic and architectural standpoint, but the most important lesson they teach in their dingy walls and images, their broken doors and general appearance of neglect is that the superstitious idolatry for which they stand has lost its hold upon the people and that they are patronized only by the ignorant and degraded. A few wretched beggars and mendicants hang about them, wresting such money as they can out of visitors, and there is an absolute lack of any reverence on the part of the attendants, no more than would be exhibited for a theater or a junk shop. I came away from them with the conviction that idolatrous worship no longer has a hold upon the intelligent and self-respecting Chinese.

#### THE MISSION CHURCHES AND SCHOOLS.

In striking contrast with the dilapidated and neglected heathen temples are the bright, flourishing and up-to-date Christian churches, chapels and schools to be found in various sections of the city. There are six large and successfully conducted mission compounds, the American, London, Presbyterian, Methodist, Episcopal and Catholic missions. There is also a Union Medical Hospital, in which all the evangelical denominations join and a successful Y. M. C. A. to which Mr. John Wanamaker of Philadelphia has given \$50,000 for a building. In the American Mission several denominations, Methodist, Congregational, Baptist and possibly others join. There is a large and well attended girls' school connected with the American Mission under Miss Minor, formerly of America. This mission has next to the finest church building in China. I attended a service at it led by a Chinese Presbyterian elder at which there were five hundred Chinese. The services were intelligently conducted and there was a

spirit of profound devotion. I enjoyed very much meeting Dr. Ament and Mr. Stelle of this mission and spent an enjoyable hour with Dr. and Mrs. Young there.

The Presbyterian Mission under Dr. Martin, who for over fifty years has been a Christian leader in China, is doing a fine work. There are also boys' and girls' schools attached to the mission. The largest mission station and schools are those conducted by the Northern American Methodists. They cover twenty-seven acres of ground and have buildings which in America would be easily worth a million of dollars. The mission has handsome church building and colleges attended by five hundred boys and two hundred girls. Dr. H. H. Lowry is the president, ably assisted by Prof. John M. Gibb, who kindly showed us through this splendid institution. Its name is the Peking University. I was greatly impressed by the fine equipment both of the girls' school at the American Mission and the two schools at the Methodist compound. I looked in on the classes during recitation, and there was an atmosphere of intelligence and capability on the part of professors and students that would compare favorably with similar institutions in our own land. Those in charge spoke in terms of the warmest hopefulness of their work. They express themselves as confident that the day is not distant when there will be a widespread religious and educational awakening in China. They declare this has already come, and that China will before many years be as strongly Christian as it is now heathen.

#### INTERVIEWS WITH DISTINGUISHED CHINESE OFFICIALS.

Through the effort of the American Legation and by letters of introduction I had the pleasure and honor of interviews with Yuan-Shih-Kai of the foreign office and Lu Hai Huan, head of

customs. Next to the Empress Dowager and the Emperor no two officials of China stand higher. Yuan-Shih-Kai is recognized the world over as the most forceful personality in China. He has progressive ideas and has done much to improve the educational and civil service systems of the empire. He received me courteously and talked freely. He declared that the government was not unfriendly to Christianity and that Christian missionaries would be protected. He recognized their good work and declared that along with all other religions Christianity would have full opportunity for reaching the people. He evidently believes in the largest religious freedom. Lu Hai Huan expressed similar views and added that he knew that the Empress Dowager cherished kindly sentiments towards foreigners. Both declared their opposition to opium and foot-binding and a desire for a higher education of their people. The distinct impression left upon my mind from these interviews with these two representative Chinese leaders is that the Chinese government, whatever it may have been in the past, is now friendly to Christianity.

#### VISIT TO THE SUMMER PALACE.

The day succeeding these interviews our party had the unusual honor of receiving an invitation to visit the summer palace of the Empress Dowager and Emperor ten miles outside the walls. We were furnished an especial military escort and arriving at the palace found a battalion of one hundred soldiers drawn up in line in our honor. Nowhere in any land have we seen anything more beautiful than this palace. Its architecture is elaborate and gorgeous. Picturesquely located upon a high hill overlooking a beautiful artificial lake, adorned by handsome arcades, marble balustrades and tropical plants, a splendid pagoda and

temple crowning it all it is a poem of beauty, or as it is called "a harmony of wood and water." We were given a sumptuous luncheon in the Empress' marble boat upon the lake and the event was delightful throughout.

#### ALTAR AND TEMPLE OF HEAVEN.

The most interesting sight in Pekin is the Altar and Temple of Heaven. It is one of the wonders of the world. It is located in a large park, surrounded by a wall three miles long. The altar itself is of pure marble, is open to the sky and is about twenty-five feet high and 210 feet in diameter at the base. It is three stories and is reached by three series of steps. At each landing is a narrow terrace or court, and a marble balustrade. At the top is a space 90 feet in diameter over which is a marble slab resting upon an elevated platform, before which the Emperor prostrates himself in prayer at midnight three times a year, just before Christmas, when he returns thanks, the first month in the Chinese year, when he is supposed to receive his mission as a ruler for the year, and again early in the spring, when he prays for rain and a good harvest. The altar itself sits inside a large inclosure, surrounded by a wall in which is a brick furnace where oxen are burned as sacrifices. This furnace is reached by a flight of green porcelain steps. There are also several large iron braziers in this area wherein are burnt offerings of silk and paper, all death decrees being burned there.

Several hundred yards from the altar is the Temple of Heaven, a beautiful structure where the Emperor concludes his worship. The people are not admitted to the Altar or Temple, only the royal family and their attendants having access to it. The altar and the large area around it, the series of courts in ascent to it,



the sacrifice of the animals, and the iron braziers, are very like the ancient altars, and incense, and sacrifices of the Jews. The area recalls the court about the tabernacle and the space around Solomon's Temple. There are the same courts, on a smaller scale, which were in the approach to the temples of Solomon, Zerubbabel and Herod and the prayers of the Emperor for the people is in striking analogy to the intercession of the Israelitish priests as described in the Old Testament Scriptures.

Near by is the Temple of Heaven, where the Emperor goes to worship after leaving the altar. This worship of the Emperor is said to be the most ancient ritual in the world. Whether this be true or not there can be no doubt of its antiquity. But the intercessory prayer, the sacrifice of the ox, the shedding of blood, the name of Heaven, the brazier of incense, the succession of small courts as the ascent is made to the top of the altar and finally the temple itself are remarkably similar to the Hebrew Temple and worship, and are suggestive of the atonement contained in the scheme of salvation prototyped by ancient Israel and fulfilled in Christ. Who knows but that heathenism descended from the same origin as Christianity, of which it is but a hideous perversion? Or can it be that these heathen rites are attempts to copy those of the Hebrews?

#### CHINESE AND MODERN LEARNING.

In no one respect is China showing more progress than the rapidity with which in many places it is supplanting the old Confucian schools with those of modern type. The former schools were devoted only to the study of the Confucian classics, the memorizing of ancient effete maxims from Confucius, the effect of which was of no practical value in the development of the

mind or for the purposes of either public or private life. The single qualification of a public official was that he should be an encyclopedia of Confucian philosophy, regardless of the fact that it was of no possible value to him in his office. The effect was to abnormally develop memory and dwarf the reasoning powers. Hence the people are but mere children. Many of them, especially the women, are densely ignorant. But few have any learning of any kind. But they take kindly to Western learning, many of them are apt students and the prospect now is that it will not be many years before they will be a well educated people.



## XVIII.

### THE GREAT WALL, THE EMPRESS DOWAGER AND OTHER CHINESE CURIOS.

SHANGHAI KUAN, CHINA, January 10, 1908.

I write this within sight of the great Chinese wall. It is less than a half mile distant and I have just returned from a walk upon it. The wall starts at this point, which is on the Gulf Pechilli, and it runs fifteen hundred miles west. Like all things Chinese it is ancient, how ancient no one knows definitely, but it has probably been here two thousand years; it may be three thousand or even longer. It is said to have been built two hundred years before the Christian era. At this point it is about thirty feet wide at the base and twenty feet at the top, and is thirty feet high. Its dimensions vary at different points. It consists of two walls, three feet thick each and filled in between with dirt and stone. These walls are built of stone or cement cut into regular sizes of about fifteen inches in length, seven in breadth and three in thickness. They are laid in cement and the work is well done. It is not so high or well built as the wall around Pekin, but is remarkably preserved and is a great piece of engineering. It is built at places in zig-zag shape and there are towers at stated intervals which were used as forts. At other places there are parallel walls constructed as double protection. Apparently it represents an immense waste of energy, judging from the standpoint of modern conditions. But it must be remembered that it was a necessary protection in those barbarous ancient days and

it is the most significant monument in the world of the days of cruelty and bloodshed now gone forever. While wholly useless the law forbids its demolition, as the Chinese prefer to retain it as a relic of the past. It is not even of use as a boundary any longer as the Chinese territory now extends a thousand miles farther north. We have seen no one thing that so impressed us with its antiquity, or which is such a link to the remote ages of the past.

EMPRESS DOWAGER.\*

The other great object of interest in China is the Empress Dowager. She is even of more interest, for she is alive and doing things, while the wall has served its purpose. While in Peking I had opportunities of learning at close range some interesting facts concerning this remarkable old lady. It is doubtful if there is a sovereign in the world who is an object of greater interest or who wields such power. I learned from officials close to her and who have constant official relations that there is no doubt but that she is the dominant personality in the empire. Her word is law not only for the five hundred millions over whom she reigns, but for the big officials who constitute her court or advisers. There is a privy council of eight or twelve who have charge of the various departments of the government, who formulate its laws and control all its propaganda, who stand at once for the Presidential Cabinet, Congress and Supreme Court of our country. But she is over them all, and to her fiat they must bow. When they enter her presence they fall upon their

---

\*The Empress has died since this was written.

knees and while in this suppliant attitude make all their communications or present their memorials and prayers. One of the biggest of these officials told me that his limbs at times were nearly paralyzed while in this prayerful position, but he dared not rise until she in mercy bade him do so. She has a strong grasp upon public affairs and her superior ability is as well recognized as her official authority. She has facial paralysis, and appears to be frowning upon one side of her face, while she is laughing upon the other. She is fond of apples and has a pile of them on a table before her as she sits upon the throne. By her side upon a lower seat usually sits the little emperor, looking meek and bored, a mere negative quantity. She has a passion for dogs. There are several hundred of the pug variety in the palace, and now and then she gives them away to friends.

A gentleman with whom I dined showed me several which she had sent him. She has receptions but rarely, but is said to be quite gracious. A lady, the wife of a United States consul, gave me an interesting account of attending one of her receptions in which she discussed freely the Boxer insurrection. She declared that her action towards foreigners at that time was based upon misinformation, that she thought that the foreigners were the aggressors. She expresses now the kindest feeling to foreigners.

#### THE GOVERNMENT, PRESENT AND PROSPECTIVE.

It seems incredible that a country so vast in territory and population should be ruled by an old woman in her dotage. It is evident that there is a condition of unrest, and that a dismemberment of the nation into independent states is not a remote improbability. Several of the eighteen provinces are exhibiting

a discontent that may break out at any time. The arrant physical cowardice of the people is the sole protection against national dissolution. There could not be a greater absurdity than the Chinese soldier. There is nothing chivalrous or soldierly about him. The Japanese put the soldier first in the scale of social distinction. The Chinese put him last, the business man next, the farmer next, the laborer next and the scholar highest. This is a good order for a peaceful, but not for a patriotic people who love liberty and progress. With the increase of schools and the spread of intelligence there will no doubt be an augmenting demand for a representative government. But even Yuan-Shih-Kai, the nation's most progressive statesman, does not regard the people prepared for the franchise and so declared to me in a personal interview to which reference has been made in a previous letter. But notwithstanding all this the way things are moving there may be expected a breaking up of the present governmental conditions in China in the near future.

#### THE BOXERS.

One hears much of the terrible Boxer massacres in 1900. Their horrors could not be exaggerated. Peking, Tien-Tsin and north-east China seem to have been the center of them in their worst form. The condition of the foreign population and their Chinese sympathizers during the two or three months of the siege in Peking and Tien-Tsin was terrible. Some twenty-five hundred or more were confined in the British and American legations in Peking and were in daily expectation of destruction. The walls of the compounds were battered with cannon balls daily and the interior was constantly bombarded with shells. Many were killed

and wounded and all were brought to a point of starvation. A gentleman who was one of the besieged, told me that eighty-six mules and horses were eaten as food. The conditions were even worse at Tien-Tsin and thousands were tortured, murdered and mangled in all parts of the empire. But good has come of even a catastrophe so terrible. The heavy indemnity exacted of the governments enabled the legations and missionaries to rebuild their houses in much better and more convenient form, while the streets of the cities were widened and improved so that at least Tien-Tsin and Pekin were made to look like modern cities. But the most beneficial results were to open the eyes of the Chinese and to bring them into a more wholesome respect for foreigners. For a long time there had been a growing hostility to the foreign population which had to culminate in blood. But it is hardly possible for it to occur again. While the Chinese do not love foreigners they now fear them, and their leaders realize the fearful mistake they made in encouraging the outbreak. They will hardly again attempt it.

#### THE FOREIGNERS.

The visitor is favorably impressed by the foreign residents he meets in China. As a rule they are men of a high order. It is a condition of the survival of the fittest. All the lower walks are filled by Chinese. The only place for the foreigner is at the top. A gentleman quite familiar with the subject said to me that while the Chinese are industrious they are not qualified for places of leadership or for positions requiring administrative capacity. Hence while there are occasionally to be found wealthy Chinese and scholars and strong characters, the great business establishments, the railroads, the colleges, the large hotels and all the

great enterprises are almost exclusively owned and managed by foreigners. There is some jealousy on the part of the Chinese, but it is not probable that the foreigners will be dispossessed. Great fortunes have been and will be made in China, and there is a future here for men of merit from other lands along all lines. A strange fact is that notwithstanding the isolation of the life foreigners seem satisfied and few express a desire to return to their native lands.

#### SHORT ON WOMEN.

China is long on foreign men. They outnumber the women many times. Some good missionary ought to start several thousand American girls this way. Bachelors are here galore. Most of them would like to marry, but it is so expensive to go home for a wife; and there is such doubt as to them getting one when they go that they have abandoned hope. I have seen more handsomely fitted up bachelor dens here than anywhere I have been. Many of them are fine gentlemen, and it seems a pity seeing how they are going to waste. Some of them have grown desperate and have written home for girls they left behind them and the girls have responded and have come over and married here, and happy lives are the result. But this is not always practicable. The subject is a serious one. For instance in Pekin there are but two or three marriageable girls and scores of marriageable men. The same is true in Shanghai and elsewhere. I do not know what is to be done unless our government does as the Romans did, ship out wives to supply the want.

#### TIENTSIN.

Leaving Pekin we came to Tien-Tsin, some hundred miles to the northeast and spent one day there. It is the most modern city

## The Great Wall and Other Chinese Curios. 143

we have seen in China. Its wide streets and large business buildings and hotels and its clubs and churches make one feel he is in an up-to-date American city. It contains several hundred thousand people, of whom about five thousand are foreigners and are as elsewhere taking the lead in all departments of business. Were we seeking a home in China there is no city which would present greater attractions. We are indebted to the American consul, Mr. Ragsdale, for courtesies during our visit, and also to Mr. Sheppard, of the Jardine-Matheson steamship line.

### NEWSPAPERS.

There is no better illustration of the progress China has made of late years than that contained in the growth of the number of its newspapers. Ten years ago there were not over twenty-five in the entire empire. Now there are probably two hundred and fifty and the number is continually growing. Up to the time of the Boxer trouble the old Pekin Gazette, the oldest paper in the world, was the only newspaper in Pekin. Now there are twenty, among them the only woman's daily newspaper in the world. And a remarkable fact is that they have great circulation. The people have developed into a nation of newspaper readers. The papers are intelligently edited and well filled with local and telegraphic news.

### CHINESE CUISINE.

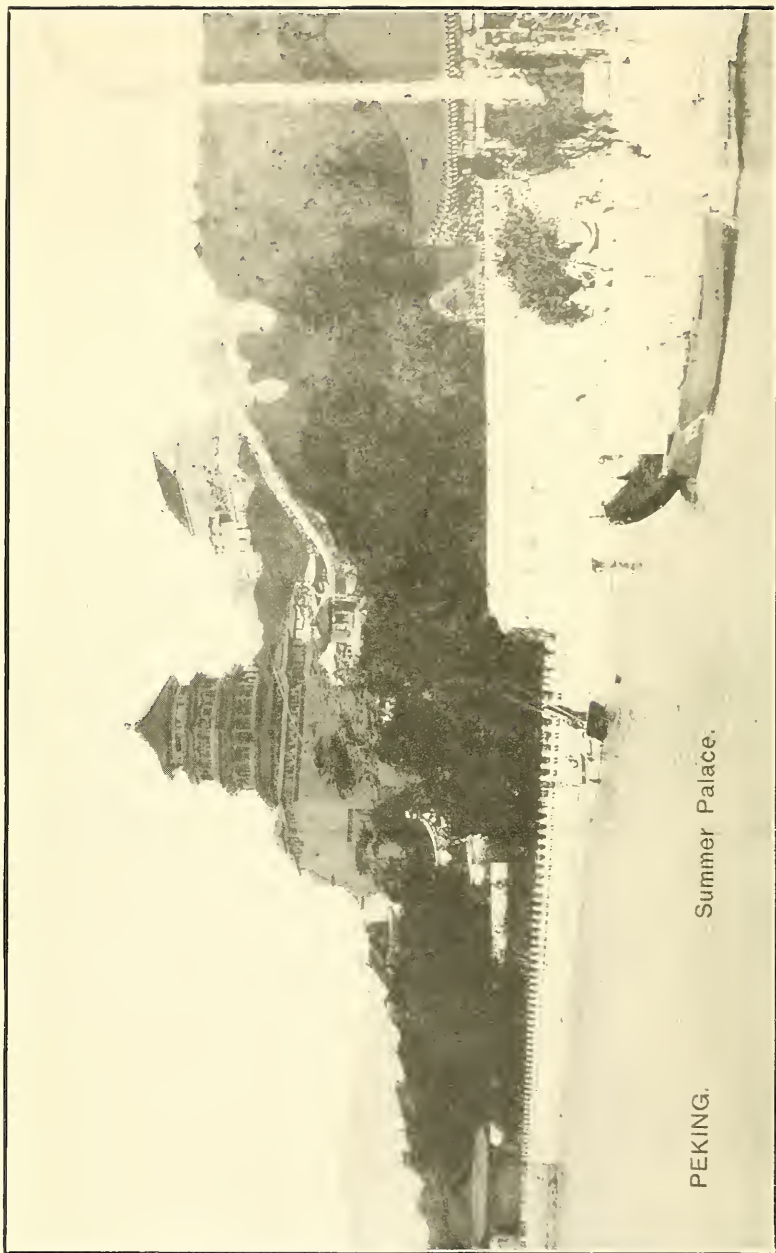
Several causes conspire to make the fare in the better home in China especially tempting. As cooks the Chinese can not be surpassed—except by the southern negroes—and they are equally as capable in serving at table and in all departments of the home. The Chinese servant is something ideal. He not only is a good



manager, taking in his own hand full supervision of the domestic affairs of the house, even to purchasing the groceries and cooking and serving and doing every imaginable necessary thing about the home, but he is reliable and does not have to be told. He resents any interference or help on the part of the head of the house. All household affairs are delegated to him, and his faithfulness knows no limit. One gentleman in Shanghai told me that he had a cook who has been with him twenty-two years, and another has been with his master, as he gladly calls him, even longer. They are but two, of many others. Such servants are fixtures and a joy forever.

China is a great game country. Wild duck, geese, pheasant, wild hog, deer, are in abundance—of these the pheasant is entitled to front rank. It is the most delicious fowl known and is found in abundance. The tables of the well-to-do simply “groan,” to use an American expression, with every vegetable and meat, while the desserts are of wide range and excellent. There is no country in the world where food is more tempting or service better. It is enough to set wild the American housekeeper so sorely put to the trouble to find enough to supply her table from the meager markets and so beset with incompetent servants.





PEKING. Summer Palace.

## XIX.

### CHINA AND THINGS CHINESE.

TSINGTAU, CHINA, January 15, 1908.

The one thing about China which most impresses the tourist is its magnitude. Take as an illustration this trip into the interior which we are just finishing and about which I have already written you in three letters. It has consumed nearly three weeks, and has covered a circuit of twenty-four hundred miles, as far as from St. Louis to New Orleans, thence to El Paso and back again to St. Louis. Yet this area, in which reside over a hundred millions of people, is not one-eighth the territory of China. The country simply swarms with people, not the country, for there is no rural population, but the cities, for they are without limit. But it is a remarkably industrious population. Rarely is there to be seen an idle Chinaman. They work incessantly all day and far into the night. I never have awakened at night that I have not heard the hum of their voices or the clatter of their carts in the streets.

In all the millions of Chinese I have seen I have not observed a drunken one. The captain of the steamer upon which this is written tells me that in twenty-five years among them he has never seen one under the influence of liquor. Such a thing as a Chinese saloon is unknown. Nor have I seen a street brawl or fight. I am also inclined to think that the reputed use of opium is exaggerated. If it is indulged in there is little manifestation of it upon the surface. Nor is there evidence of great social immorality. The Chinese women are modest and well-behaved. They are not often seen in public. The purity of the social system

in China is higher than in Japan. It can also be said of the Chinese that they are faithful. As subordinates they are trustworthy and, as has been said in previous letters, are unsurpassed as servants. A nation of five hundred millions, industrious, moral, faithful, with an area double that of the United States is no mean proposition to be reckoned with.

Those nations which have set eyes of greed upon her, looking to her apportionment, are hardly likely to realize their ambition. The countries which have exhibited this covetous spirit are Germany, Russia and France. Those which have discountenanced and opposed it are England and America. The Chinese understand those nations which would despoil them of their country and those who would not. The whole scheme is as wicked as it is chimerical. Ultimately the Caucasian race will possess the earth, but it will not be by force. It will be by the peaceful and resistless march of Christian civilization. If it is attempted by grasping methods there will result the bloodiest war of history in which it will be the yellow race against the white, and success will not be to the aggressor, for these people will die before they will yield. There is no room for more population here, and it would mean starvation to dispossess those who have right to the land by reason of thousands of years ownership.

#### AN ILLUSTRATION OF GERMAN GREED.

The city from whose port this is written, Tsingtau, is an illustration of the selfish purpose of one nation to get a foothold in China. Ten years ago on account of the murder of two missionaries, Germany forcibly wrested a large area at this point, and began the building of a city and of an army and naval station. She has expended since that time over ten millions of dollars in constructing

a harbor, in government buildings, in soldiers' barracks, in streets and storehouses, until there is here now a modern city, with wide streets, splendid buildings, hotels, business houses, residences and one of the most expensive harbors in the world. The government is still expending three millions upon the streets, harbors and public buildings annually. There are two thousand foreigners, three thousand soldiers and probably ten thousand Chinese.

One can scarcely trust his senses when he beholds such a city in the very heart of China. The work of improvement and fortification goes steadily on. There is but one explanation, and that is that Germany is preparing to get such a footing in China that at the opportune time she may strike for a much larger conquest. In fact this purpose is not concealed. It is well understood, and by none better than the Chinese themselves. The French are attempting something of the same kind at Saigon on the south-east coast and the Russians have for many years been aggressors upon Chinese territory, but since they were so badly worsted by Japan they have not been in condition to be meddling in oriental affairs. England owns a large area in the South near Hong Kong and Japan sleeps ever with one eye open upon China. In the meantime China looks to America as her friend to ward off these efforts to ruin her. The wisdom of our policy of noninterference will surely bear fruit.

#### CLIMATE AND LATITUDE.

The Chinese sea coast is 3,000 miles in length. It extends from the frigid to the tropical zone. We had an experience with the cold end at Pekin, where the winds at times were piercing, but most of the time the temperature was pleasant and bracing. We were warned against that city, that we would freeze unless

we arrayed ourselves in arctic clothing, none of which we had. With characteristic American trepidation we went wearing our ordinary Missouri wraps and did not suffer, a fact which was explained to an extent when we discovered that Pekin is upon the exact line of latitude of Missouri.

#### ALONG THE SEA COAST.

I last wrote from the eastern terminus of the great Chinese wall, where it starts at the sea and runs fifteen hundred miles westward. We have since then been sailing southward down the bay of Pechilli and the Yellow Sea towards Shanghai. The steamship travel in China is excellent, but our party seems to be almost the only passengers. On the last three trips we have made by water, from Japan to China, from Shanghai to Hankow, and now back to Shanghai there have been but three or four others on board. Either we are traveling out of season or there are few tourists, but in either event, we are fortunate, for the experience is delightful to have a steamship all to yourself, especially when the Captains and officers are as courteous and the fare and accommodations are as excellent as they have been upon these steamers. There is a great advantage in traveling in avoiding the crowd. Our first stop was at Chefoo. The sea was so rough and the day so bad that we could not land, but we were called upon by Rev. Peyton Stephens, wife and little son, and enjoyed several hours very pleasantly with them. He is the son of the late Dr. T. L. Stephens, of Stephens Store, Callaway county, Missouri, and a nephew of Mr. W. A. Bright, of Columbia, and is well known in Missouri. He has been a Baptist missionary for the past fifteen years and has been quite successful. His wife, a cultivated Christian woman, assists



him in his work and both are contented and happy. They own a nice home of some eight acres, and are most hospitable and friendly to visitors. Chefoo is quite a silk manufacturing center. There is located there a fine mission college at which the children of missionaries and others are educated. These mission stations are everywhere in China. Dr. Robert Morrison, correspondent of the London Times, and one of the ablest and best known men in the orient, said to the writer in Peking, that he had visited nearly every province in China and that he did not believe it was possible to travel for one week in any direction in the empire without encountering a mission station. The missionaries have practically covered the country, and no one can visit their stations without being convinced that they are doing a great work in educating and Christianizing the people.

#### THE MANCHUS.

Before I get too far away from northern China, I want to say something of a class of people we saw there who interested us greatly. It was the Manchus. Centuries ago they conquered the Chinese in a war, and the latter have been shaving their heads and wearing pigtails and paying tribute to them on that account ever since. They resemble the Chinamen as to color and facial appearance, but the men are larger and of course do not wear queues. But the distinguishing and striking portion of their population is their women. They dress gorgeously and paint their faces with a brilliancy of white and red which would make a wax doll ashamed of itself. Their deep vermillion which they spread over their cheeks contrasting with the dead white on the remainder of their face not only removes all expression from their countenances but gives them a most grotesque appearance. To

add to the peculiar effect they paint their lower lips a brilliant cherry red. No other women in the world are so reckless and prodigal in the use of cosmetics. They have a profusion of black hair and wear a high head dress decorated with flowers which is not without an element of taste, being quite "becoming," as the ladies say. The Manchu women are larger than their Chinese sisters and do not have the almond eye or the peculiar Chinese expression, nor do they bind their feet. They look like a stronger people intellectually and physically than the Chinese.

#### HOW THE CHINESE LIVE.

This country is full of books on Chinese life. No two of them are alike and they contain so many improbable stories of the home life and habits of the people that we have found few of them worth while. The country is so big and the population so great that the differences in the habits of life are as many as the sections of the country. There are about a hundred dialects spoken. People in one province or city can not understand those who are their nearest neighbors. A Cantonese has no more understanding of a Pekin Chinaman's language than he has of English. There are some things the lower classes all have in common. One of these is filth. No language can describe the low Chinaman's home. Therefore we shall not attempt it. In the south the people live on rice and beans and other vegetables. In the north their food is chiefly millet and sorghum and vegetables. These form the staple products of the farm.

They have few if any fires in their houses. They protect themselves from the cold by dressing warmly, wearing often two and three suits of clothes. Their beds are of mud, walled up with brick upon which they place a straw matting. They do their

cooking in very large ovens. In the home the man is the monarch, the woman a slave. She is a mere drudge and has few opportunities of a social or educational nature. When the men have feasts women are not invited or expected. The Chinese know nothing of social life as we Americans do, such as parties, receptions and like functions. Marriages are regulated by the parents, the bride and groom not being consulted, and the groom often does not see his bride until he meets her on the wedding day when she is brought to him in a Sedan chair closely concealed until she cannot get a ray of light or breath of air, and she often faints and sometimes dies on the way. As in Japan the mother-in-law has full control of the daughter-in-law.

#### FUNERAL CEREMONIES AND BURIAL.

A Chinese funeral is an imposing affair. In Pekin I noticed along the streets, large red cars, brilliantly painted, with long poles extending in front and behind, and was told they were hearses for the dead. Afterwards I met them in processions on the streets preceded by men carrying banners and beating on musical instruments and singing. In some places the corpse remains in the house for a week, during which there is constant feasting. They wear white, not black for mourning. They will often not bury a corpse for many days, awaiting for a "lucky day" upon which to inter it. In Canton there is what is called a dead house where bodies have lain for years awaiting a lucky day and place for burial. Lights are burning near by and occasionally the friends of the deceased meet there and have feasts.

If the deceased is rich they place enough money in his coffin to defray his expenses through purgatory and to his final place of rest and happiness. If he is poor they put silver colored paper cut

into the shape of money in the coffin. The bodies of those who die must be buried if possible upon the land upon which they were born, and when this cannot be done at the time of death the body must be removed there as soon as practicable. When it is being moved a basket containing a large white rooster is carried along to frighten off evil spirits. If after one dies it is discovered that he has been guilty of a crime his body is disinterred and his head is cut off so that he cannot live hereafter. They have a superstition that people enter the next life in the same physical state in which they leave this one. While all this is superstitious it shows that they have an idea of immortality.

#### THEIR FOOD AND DIGESTION.

Foreigners do not dare eat vegetables raised by Chinese or the flour ground in their mills unless it has passed examination. Their methods of fertilization and their diseases and habits are such as to render it poisonous to others than themselves, but they appear to be immune against it. They grind grit and divers substances in their flour, which renders it dangerous to foreigners. There are many other things Chinese, but this is enough for the present.

## XX.

### HONG KONG AND CANTON.

HONG KONG, CHINA, January 30, 1908.

Among other discoveries which the Missourian who travels abroad makes and which render him satisfied with his place of residence is that he finds he is acclimated for any kind of weather which other countries have to furnish. However wide the extremes of temperature or however sudden the changes they have no effect upon him. He is equal to them all. I have just had a practical demonstration. Two weeks ago I wrote you from within a half mile of the great wall of China, where the cold was piercing and a heavy fur cap and the warmest clothing were needed in order to make a pedestrian tour along the top of the wall. Since that time we have traveled sixteen hundred miles south to where it has been necessary to exchange furs for light linen and we find ourselves as equal to one condition as we were to the other. We were warned against that region on account of its cold and also against this because of its heat. And yet the one was not as cold and the other is not as hot as we have experienced in Missouri. Thus more and more as we go around the world do we find illustration of the cosmopolitanism of Missouri. We are growing very tired of the stale and senseless saying which some idiot started that the Missourian has to be shown. As a matter of fact he can show more things of more kinds to more people than can any other man.

HONG KONG.

I think I said in a previous letter that I had resolved in these letters to expurgate all superlatives. But we reach places now and

then where this is hard to do. Hong Kong is one of these places. A just description of it is hardly possible without the use of adjectives. From what we had read and heard we had formed a faint conception of its picturesque beauty, but even a vivid imagination can not do it justice. It is without an equal so far as our observation extends in any harbor in the world. If we see anything to surpass it as we go around we will say so, but we do not believe we will. It lies upon a bay or inlet thirteen miles from the ocean. The approach is between mountain ranges clad in green and strikingly beautiful, not unlike Lake George and the Inland Sea of Japan. The harbor itself is incomparably beautiful. The city lies at the base, upon the sides and on the summit of a lofty range of cliffs over two thousand feet in height, and presents a picture from the steamer of artificial and natural attractiveness that is unique. The splendid buildings which line in successive parterres the mountain side and crown its summits, all with broad verandas and a multiplicity of windows, the profusion of verdure, the deep blue of the water in the harbor, the myriads of ships and smaller craft in every coloring and from every nation in the world, and the back ground of lofty mountains make a scene that no artist's pencil could well exaggerate.

But to get a still more enchanting view one must ascend to the summit of the cliff or mountain and obtain a view of the harbor and the city and the adjacent mountains. One of our party made the apt remark that it is a combination of Honolulu and the Grand Canyon. The streets are wide and clean and the buildings massive and handsome. There are few cities anywhere so well built. Its population is largely foreign, it being a British city, but the Chinese are here in immense number, a large part of the city being occupied by them entirely. There are numerous govern-

ment buildings, and many schools and colleges, and the city has every aspect of progress and modern life. It is not in China, but a part of British territory.

#### THE BOAT POPULATION.

A curious feature of the city, common however to all oriental ports, is the large part of its population which dwells upon the water. The harbor swarms with skiffs, or, as they call them here "sampans," in which dwell families of from two to ten persons each. How they live in them is a miracle. But they eat, sleep and earn their livelihood in the small compass of these little craft, which are not of greater size than the ordinary Missouri river skiff. They even raise pigs and chickens as well as children on them, do their cooking and laundering and incredible as it may seem drink the water from the bay which is the receptacle also of all the sewerage of the city. It is said that not less than fifty thousand people live in these little boats. In Canton, eighty miles distant, it is estimated that there are over twenty-five thousand of these boats in which reside over a hundred thousand people. But the condition of the boat inhabitants is said to be more cleanly and comfortable than that of millions who live on land. All of these people are Chinese. When one has traveled through China and observed the condition in which the people live his faith in the germ theory of disease is badly shaken. For whether the Chinaman be rich or poor he has but little notion of cleanliness in his domestic and business life.

#### CANTON.

Eighty miles from Hong Kong is Canton, the largest and in many respects the most typical city of China. It is reached by several lines of steamers and is well worth a visit. Within a radius



of fifteen miles, of which it is the center, are twenty cities with a population of ten millions, exceeding in density any other spot of equal size in the world. In all this enormous city of probably two millions of people there is not a wheeled vehicle. The streets are not over ten feet wide, some of them are but little over six. Everybody, except the well-to-do and the tourists, walk. The only means of transportation is by Sedan chairs, carried upon the shoulders of two or three coolies, according to the avoirdupois of the passenger. Our party were several times transported through the city in these chairs, and it is an experience to be remembered.

The streets are literally jammed with people, who are made to give way for the chairs by the coolies who carry them keeping up a continual yelling, and as all other freight, as well as human, is borne through the streets upon the backs of coolies, who are also constantly shouting to the pedestrians to clear the way, the noise is almost deafening. In fact it is deafening, for it is said that deafness is very common among Chinamen, caused no doubt by the constant tax upon their ear drums. There is one other method of transportation indulged in by a few and this is upon the backs of ponies. But instead of the riders shouting to warn people of their coming there are suspended around the necks of the ponies bells, the perpetual jingling of which, like sleigh bells, causes the throngs to divide and make passage ways for the trotting animals. Ponies and coolies alike go at swift pace with their burdens through the streets.

#### THE STREETS AND THEIR SIGHTS.

In Bishop Marvin's book on his trip around the world he says that there are two things that will ever be to him a mystery. One

is how a boy ever lives to reach the age of sixteen years, and the other is how any man gets through the streets of a Chinese city alive. I have thought of the Bishop's statement a great many times when I have been carried in a wholly reckless manner through one of these crowded streets. I have wondered why the coolies who carried me did not stumble and fall, breaking part or all of my bones, or why they did not run over and kill scores of people, especially children. But strange to say I have not had an accident myself, and have not seen one occur to any one else. Through these narrow streets move scores of people totally blind, sometimes a number of them together, groping their way, but none of them are hurt. The streets are built of stone and are slick with water and refuse, but still everybody gets along. The people are amiable and docile. There are no drunken men, no brawlers, and they do nothing that is offensive. They exhibit the greatest respect towards foreigners. Where they come from, what they do, and how they live is a never-ending mystery. But most of them seem to be busy even when they are begging.

There are no large stores or establishments of any kind. The business places are all one story, and about twelve or fifteen feet square. The streets are literally covered with signs and above and extending across the streets is lattice work to keep out the rays of the sun, which are said to be intolerable in summer. At this season the weather is pleasant, barring the incessant rain which fell continually during our visit. The shops are crowded with people, this being near to the Chinese New Year, which is on February 2, and to which the people look forward with childish joy. The coming week will be given up entirely to holiday pleasures and is the carnival week of the year.

## MISSIONS AND SCHOOLS.

There are over one hundred missionaries in Canton. Our party was entertained at the Baptist mission which now occupies new and handsome buildings, near the city. Dr. R. H. Graves, a veteran in the work, is President of a Theological School attended by some forty students. He is assisted by Rev. Dr. G. W. Green and a Chinese teacher. Rev. E. Z. Simmons, for many years prominent in missionary work in Canton, also lives at the Baptist Mission, and Miss Carrie E. Bostick is principal of a female college at which there have been some seventy students. Both the Seminary and the female college have handsome buildings, and Drs. Simmons, Graves and Green occupy fine brick dwellings. An academy for boys is also in process of erection upon the grounds, and a new church building is in prospect. The Baptists also have a flourishing publishing house in Canton under the charge of Mr. R. E. Chambers, a gentleman of enterprise and ability. The Presbyterians have a Theological Seminary with an attendance of seventy students, and are doing a large evangelistic work. There is also in the city a large Christian University, supported by several denominations. The Presbyterians also have a fine girls' boarding school and there are two hospitals under Christian control. There are three Presbyterian, three Baptist and two Wesleyan churches in the city. Mission work is making fine progress.

## CANTON AND THE CANTONESE.

Although not as attractive to the tourist as either Hankow, Shanghai, Peking or Tien-Tsin, the city of Canton is really the most important business center in China, and it has a great future. The Cantonese are a people superior to the Chinese of the

northern portion of the empire, respond more readily to educational influences and possess more wealth and enterprise. They are of more refined nature and of lighter complexion. The future of the city is promising. Railroad lines are in process of construction from Hankow five hundred miles north, and also from Hong Kong, and when they are completed, as they will be within five years, Canton will be an important railroad center, and it will be possible to go by rail from Hong Kong direct to Peking, and thence to the great Siberian railway in the north. In fact when these lines are built a tourist can enter a Pullman car at Hong Kong and get out of it at Paris, France. It will be another of the many agencies now at work to bring China into close relation with the outside world, and to make this great nation, so long under the shadow of heathenism and ignorance, so long stagnant and isolated, one of the most accessible and potential factors in the civilization of the world.

## XXI.

### SOME CHINESE AFTERMATH

ON BOARD STEAMER WALDEMAR, February 3, 1908.

This letter is by way of postscript. It is written after leaving Hong Kong and on a steamer running at twelve knots an hour and swaying yet more rapidly. We are enroute to Manila, which we are to reach over a turbulent sea after sixty hours' sail from Hong Kong. Looking back over our six weeks in China we recall some matters omitted from previous letters, and there are other things to be said by way of summing up.

#### THE JAPANESE AND THE CHINESE.

Coming to China directly from Japan, naturally we are continually comparing the people of the two countries. Our party of four is divided in opinion, two of us favoring the Japanese and the other two the Chinese. So would it likely be with any unprejudiced jury. The Japanese are more cultivated. The campaign of education is on in that country. It has hardly well begun in China. In Japan there are several large universities, two supported at government expense. In China there is no government university worthy the name, but there are several institutions under the control of missionaries. What higher learning there is outside of that taught in mission colleges has so much Confucianism and effete Chinese classic literature that it is not of great practical value. Primary education, excepting that of the few schools established by foreigners has not fairly begun. Western learning, as education of the kind known in America and Europe is called here, has scarcely gotten a foothold, although there are prospects of it spreading rapidly in the near future. Japan has

many thousands of primary schools, and her educational system is up-to-date.

The Japanese are the more courtly and gracious. From the highest to the lowest they are very polite. The Chinese are not. To a favor the Japanese respond by a smile and a bow; the Chinaman by a grunt. The Japanese are more chivalrous. They make good soldiers and are patriotic. As a soldier the Chinaman is a burlesque. There is practically no national spirit in China. Enthusiasm of any kind is unknown. The Japanese are fond of processions and banners and music and pomp and circumstance. None of this is seen in China. There is never a Chinese procession. The only thing that appeals to whatever sense of enthusiasm or amusement a Chinaman may possess is the fire-cracker, or a gong, and his conceptions of the spectacular are limited to a paper lantern and a silk dress. In the industrial arts of the higher order as damocene, cloisonne, satsuma and lacquer work the Japanese have made fine progress. The Chinese have made some headway in similar lines, but in these respects they fall far behind the Japanese. Neither people has any idea of music or painting or the fine arts.

The Chinese are the more industrious and thrifty, and are more successful and reliable in business. The Chinese give the farmer and the scholar a higher rank than the soldier, but the Japanese elevate the soldier above every other avocation. The Japanese are the more versatile, but the Chinese the more substantial and reliable. This, I think is a fair comparison and you may judge between them. The verdict of the foreigners who reside or have business in the orient is largely favorable to the Chinese.

#### FIVE COVETOUS POWERS.

Deny it as they may it is evident that there are five nations, which are looking with covetous eyes on China, and have stationed

themselves like hungry wolves all about her, waiting to pounce upon her at first opportunity. In the south, France has territorial jurisdiction over a large area with headquarters at Saigon. In the center Great Britain for nearly seventy years has owned a hundred miles of sea coast and during all that period has been gradually strengthening herself not only in the building up of great business interests, but of fortresses and army and naval equipment at Hong Kong. I have heretofore referred to Tsingtau in the northern sea coast where Germany has expended many millions in building up a fine city and harbor and establishing an army and naval station. Russia on the north is still awaiting her opportunity, while the most serious menace, and the best organized, and most dangerous, but most carefully concealed plotter of them all is Japan, which is not only strengthening her army and government and developing a national enthusiasm and greed, but is obtaining an insidious hold upon China in the education of thousands of her young men and in distributing teachers throughout the kingdom to instill Japanese virus into the minds of the young Chinese. Each nation is but waiting the opportune moment to seize all or part either when the Empress Dowager dies or some internal or external disturbance affords a pretext. The scheme evidently is partition between all of them, except in the case of Japan, which would probably join with China in resisting any movement of foreign powers to possess the country. And then would come the long expected and not improbable war between the white and yellow races. In any event the situation is serious and whenever the movement for dismemberment starts, war will be inevitable, for it will not be possible for the powers to agree, nor will China, with her five hundred millions, submit. No one can witness the strong foothold being obtained by these



powers, and the millions they are here expending without being convinced that China may soon be the storm center of the world.

#### AMERICA'S WISE POLICY.

From all these complications America has wisely held aloof. She has not interfered, nor is she giving indications of an intention to interfere with China's affairs. The Chinese appreciate our country's attitude towards them, and while a few years since, irritated by America's exclusion laws, they boycotted our goods, they have withdrawn the boycott and now no nation is making such progress in securing trade in China as is ours. The return by our country of part of the indemnity paid us after the Boxer troubles has also secured a most kindly feeling towards America from China. It is to be hoped that the United States will never be guilty of the folly of participating in the dangerous movement of other powers to dismember and absorb China. It would involve us in a terrible and ruinous war.

#### THE EXCLUSION LAWS.

An unprejudiced observation of conditions in China would, I think, convince any thoughtful man that it would be unwise in our country to remove its restrictions upon Chinese immigration. Not only would the result be to impoverish millions of American workingmen, but to bring on a conflict of races far more serious than the negro troubles have been. The wages paid Chinese coolies are not over one-tenth that paid for similar labor in America. Fifty cents a day is a high wage in China, is only paid to skilled workmen, while ordinary day laborers receive from but ten to twenty cents. But these people live on but from three to ten cents a day, not enough to pay for an American workman's coffee.

While it is true that many Chinamen make excellent servants, most of them are slower and inferior to the American laborer, and they would hardly be satisfactory to Americans who are only content with doing things quick and well. If the immigration restrictions were removed it is evident that many millions would at once rush to America, and it does not need the sagacity of a statesman or the vision of a prophet to foresee what the result would be in this time of labor agitation, as well as of an already too great immigration of the scum of Europe to America. Some changes should be made in the exclusion laws, but as a whole they should remain substantially as they are.

#### AMERICAN OFFICIALS IN CHINA.

I cannot close these letters from China without some reference to the favorable impression I carry away of the Americans who are in charge of official positions in this country. They are clean, capable and courteous. I have already referred to the Legation at Peking where we had the pleasure of being entertained in the home of Mr. Fred M. Dearing, formerly of Columbia, Missouri, now second secretary. I must also make reference to Mr. Fletcher, the first secretary and Mr. Haskins, the secretary of Chinese affairs, all well qualified for their positions. Among the consuls I have met were Mr. Ragsdale, at Tien-Tsen, Mr. Denby, at Peking, Mr. Bargsholz, at Canton and Mr. Amos P. Wilder, at Hong-Kong. I think I have referred to most of these gentlemen heretofore, except to Mr. Wilder. But he was so courteous that I must add a word concerning him. He was formerly editor of the State Journal at Madison and is a highly cultivated gentleman, who is an honor to his country. The American tourist has no reason to be ashamed of the representatives of his government over

here. The newspapers have contained much of the reformatory work of Judge L. R. Wilfley, of the United States Court at Shanghai. While bitterly fought by some who had to suffer he has cleansed and elevated conditions in his court, and is warmly sustained by the better element of foreigners. He has been ably aided by Mr. Arthur Bassett, the United States Attorney, of whose capacity I have heard high encomium. As both Judge Wilfley and Mr. Bassett are Missourians, and the latter a former University student, I have had my state pride to rise several degrees upon hearing of this fine record they have made.

#### THE MISSIONARIES.

I have written of several mission stations I visited and of some observations of mission work. Now that I have finished my tour of China I am prepared to pass judgment upon mission work in the country as a whole. Stripped of all sentimentalism is the conclusion that no class of workers have done or are doing as much for China as the missionaries. Their work is sane, strenuous and successful. Whatever progress China has made in commerce or education or freedom is due chiefly to them. As a rule they are competent and are doing a great deal for small compensation. Of late years the mission work is becoming more educational than evangelistic. The Methodists, Presbyterians, Baptists, Episcopalians and Congregationalists are sharing in this work, nearly equally. I should say that the Methodists are expending most money, with the Presbyterians next. They lead, in my judgment in educational work, while in evangelical movements the Baptists are in line with either of them. The Baptists are inaugurating some strong educational enterprises, but they need money and considerable of it to bring them up to the Methodists, or

Presbyterians or Episcopalians. One continues to hear criticism of missionaries as he goes along, but as a rule it is either from those who are not familiar with their work or from others who live here and are a greater obstacle by their degenerate lives to the cause of missions than are the heathens themselves. China, like Japan, has two kinds of American residents, the best and the worst.

#### NEW YEAR'S.

I write this the day succeeding Chinese New Year, it being the second New Year's day we have joined in celebrating within thirty-three days—our New Year and theirs. New Year's is the great day of the year with the Chinese. He looks forward to it for weeks and months as children in America do to Christmas, and celebrates it with the same degree of simplicity and zest. They make a great drive in business for weeks before hand, and it is required that all accounts be settled and debts paid by that day. He who fails to do so "loses face." The New Year yesterday was on the Sabbath. All Chinese stores were closed. It is rare that New Year falls upon Sunday. Hence yesterday was one of the few days when the Sabbath was observed by both Chinese and foreigners. It was a gala day for the Chinamen. They were dressed in their finest silks, were in a happy state and everything had a holiday aspect. I mingled freely among them, and yet of the thousands who were joining in this, the greatest holiday of the year, so far as I could see there was not one drunk, nor did I observe a single fight. Their solitary amusement was the firing of fire crackers, which they suspended from the balconies or tops of houses in long strings; and then fired them. The fire-cracker is the Chinaman's only idea of amusement outside of the gong and the tom-tom.

## THE END.

This closes our letters from China. We spent six weeks in that country, traveled thirty-five hundred miles within its territory by land and water, and I think we saw the country and the people, and got an insight into their life fairly well. Nine-tenths of the tourists who visit the orient content themselves with going only to Shanghai and Hong-Kong and avoid the interior, under the impression that there is nothing to see there or that conditions are offensive. In this they make a great mistake. I do not expect to have a more interesting, instructive or enjoyable trip anywhere than we had up the Yangtse river and to Peking and return. The splendid river, the palatial steamers, the walled cities, the Chinese life, the great cities of Hankow, Nanking and Peking and the government officials and representatives met at Peking, and the mission stations and educational institutions visited were a combination of attractions, a fund of interest and information rarely to be found in an equal space of time anywhere in the world, and afforded a fair view of all phases of life in China. For it is a country in which there is not much variety. One city is a type of all others, as is one Chinaman or one river or rural district. We visited all the greater cities, most of the leading institutions and were favored by meeting with a large number of representative officials and foreigners, and the tour was not marred by an unpleasant incident.









IN THE PHILIPPINES

THE PHILIPPINES.



## XXII.

### THE PHILIPPINES.

MANILA, February 7, 1908.

Because the trip is over a more or less boisterous sea, because he is told by people who know nothing about it, that it is not worth while, because he is usually in a hurry and short of money, for these and other reasons, the average American tourist avoids the Philippine Islands and skips on to India and Japan which are represented as the show countries of the orient. Not one globe-trotter in a hundred visits the Philippines, and hence in spite of the fact that our government has expended over a half billion of dollars upon them, and that they constitute about the most important problem in American politics we know but little of them outside of what we hear from those specially interested in exploiting or harming them. But we determined to break the record and like good American patriots go there and see for ourselves. And we discovered that not a single reason urged for not going was based upon the truth. The trip is somewhat unpleasant, being across the China Sea, but it consumes only sixty hours, and the islands well repay a visit even to the tourist who is in a hurry and whose letter of credit is near to depletion.

Manila lies six hundred and thirty-eight miles southeast of Hong Kong, and the ship service is fair. At this season the weather is fine. Allow a suggestion to those who travel: Do not pay much attention to the advice of the average tourist. It is best to go and see for yourself. If we had listened to tourists we would have avoided practically every country upon our itinerary, and by this time would have been back in America.

One country they will tell you is too hot, another too cold, another is infected with smallpox, or cholera or the plague, another contains nothing worth seeing, and so on. The average tourist is easily panicked, and shies away from the slightest discomfort. He is usually more concerned by the kind of hotel at which he stops, the food he eats, or the place where he sleeps than he is by the attractions the country offers. He who would see things must expect some discomforts.

#### MANILA.

We must count Manila to this date as the most agreeable surprise of our journey. We had expected an old Spanish city dilapidated and out of date. Instead we found a live, modern place, with broad, clean streets, well paved, beautiful parks, handsome public buildings, large and flourishing business establishments and with all the aspects of an up-to-date metropolis. It contains 300,000 inhabitants, of whom about 20,000 are foreign. Its most attractive feature is its Americanism. For the first time since we have been in the orient we found people with all their clothes on, and American clothes at that. Coming almost directly from Canton, China, with its narrow and filthy streets and its half-clad and filthier people it was a relief and a joy to find ourselves in a city which looks as though it were located in the heart of the United States. Instead of the rickshas, drawn by human horses, were lines of handsome buggies, landaus and carriages and instead of the disreputable donkeys and oxen were the finest horses, the best blood of America and Australia. The only oriental draught animal to be seen is the caribou, of water buffalo, which seems to be indispensable in Eastern countries. It is of dark grey color, with flat horns that slope

backwards and in shape is a cross between a cow and buffalo.

Nowhere in the world has the transforming influence of American civilization been so marked as in Manila. Ten years ago when the Americans took possession it was a sleepy, ancient Spanish city, with muddy and narrow streets and with buildings hundreds of years old. Now with the exception of the old city wall, which is still allowed to stand as a relic and a memorial of the past, of some ancient Spanish buildings on side streets, of the caribou and a few other vestiges of other days, there is little to indicate its ancient origin. It looks like New Orleans or Galveston, Texas.

#### SOME OF ITS ATTRACTIONS.

The bay is one of the largest and prettiest in the world. It is so large that our government has built a long sea wall as a break-water, it being an extension of a short wall built by the Spaniards. Inside the harbor are ships from many countries, not so many as at Hong Kong or Shanghai, but a sufficient number to give it an animated appearance. Flowing into the bay and winding through the city is the Pasig river, overarched with numerous bridges, reminding one of Paris or London, or Shanghai. The most imposing buildings are a number of unusually large and handsome Catholic cathedrals, some of them hundreds of years old and of Mediaeval Spanish architecture. Fronting upon the bay are the Public printing office, a fine establishment, the army headquarters and hospital, offices of the city engineer, the custom house and cold storage plants, and numerous other public buildings erected for government use.

The business streets have been paved with wooden blocks and a broad macadamized boulevard has been constructed on the bay

front, which is also lined by a series of parks, the largest of which, called the Luneta, is a place of universal popular resort in the evening. A music stand is near its center, which is brilliantly illuminated with electric lights in the evening and the band, of eighty pieces, one of the largest in the world, the leader of which is an American negro, gives a concert each evening. It is a splendid band, and took second prize at the St. Louis World's Fair. The presence of hundreds of carriages, of the men dressed in spotless white and the women arrayed in attractive garb, render these evening functions the most picturesque and beautiful we have seen anywhere outside of Paris. The park overlooks the bay, into which it is being gradually extended, an area of over a hundred acres having been added recently upon which are to be erected a handsome hotel and Elks' Club buildings.

The view of the bay, with its myriad of lights twinkling from the boats in the harbor, the handsome drives, the beautiful green sward, the attractive garb of the people, the splendid equipages and above all the brilliant tropical sky, and the soft, dreamy ideal atmosphere combine to make these evenings in Manila linger in the memory as among the most delightful experiences to be had anywhere in the world.

#### THE DRESS, CLIMATE AND MANNERS.

The natives have almost entirely abandoned their original dress, or lack of dress, and have adopted the American styles. Almost all the men wear white linen sacque coats and trousers, and either straw hats, caps or helmets. It is the most becoming male attire we have seen anywhere. This is where Mark Twain got his idea of dressing in pure white. He is correct. It is the best dress of all for men in the warmer latitudes. While it is



necessary to change suits every day they do not cost much and for comfort in warm weather they are unequalled. The climate in Manila makes it possible to wear this light garb the year around. It does not get so desperately hot as might be supposed. It is claimed that in forty-three years the mercury has but three times reached one hundred degrees. The average annual temperature is eighty degrees. The hottest month is May. The coldest is September. In May the thermometer stands at an average of eighty-three degrees and in September at sixty-eight. The average temperature of November, December, January and February is 78 degrees; of March, April and May 82 degrees; of June, July, August and September, 80 degrees. It is claimed that there has never been a case of sunstroke in Manila. The warmest part of the day is between 12 and 2 o'clock. During those hours stores are closed and people go to luncheon. Business does not begin in the morning much before ten o'clock. The evenings are cool and pleasant.

The women like the men are adopting American dress. The only articles of clothing that they do not give up is a three-cornered handkerchief worn about the neck, a stiff material, made of pineapple leaves, called the Panuela. They still wear the provincial shoe, without any protection to the heels, only covering the toes and the front half of the foot. They hold it on by the grip of the toes, while the heel continually flaps as they walk. How they keep from dropping them from their feet is a mystery. But they wear them without stockings on the street and dance in them at fashionable balls. Bamboo hats are also a distinctive Filipino dress worn by men and women alike. The garb of both is modest and inconspicuous and the demeanor of the people is respectful, and proper. It is said that the influence of the Americans has been elevating. At present the dress and manners of

the natives are but little different from those of the foreign population.

#### THE HOUSES AND HOME LIFE.

Evidently there are no cyclones, or typhoons or other high winds, for a good heavy breeze would overturn three-fourths of the Filipino residences. They are the frailest of structures, more so than are the houses of the Japanese. The roof, which is thatched and made of heavy mattings of Nipa leaves is built first. It is then lifted upon bamboo poles of from two to four inches in diameter. The walls are thin bamboo matting and the floors of bamboo slats or reeds about an inch wide by a fourth of an inch thick, laid close together, but wide enough apart to admit air and light. These floors are at least four feet from the ground. As no fires are needed for heat at any time during the year there is not much danger of these structures burning up, while they are sufficient to protect from the slight variations in temperature.

The home life of the Filipinos is of a higher order than that of the Japanese or the Chinese. Each man has but one wife, who as a rule possesses more force of character and greater business ability than her husband. The Philippines is one oriental country where woman is treated with respect and deference. Some of the women are quite attractive and in dress and manner will compare favorably with women of other nationalities. The people are not as industrious as either the Japanese or Chinese. Many of them are very poor and indolent. Most of them are farmers, raising rice, sugar, hemp and tobacco which are the chief products of the country. Bananas, cocoanuts, potatoes, and other vegetables are also grown and constitute the chief articles of diet. Outside of fish and chickens the people do not eat much meat.

## SOLDIERS AND FORT WILLIAM MCKINLEY.

There are some sixteen thousand United States soldiers in the Philippines. Of these about three thousand are in Manila, and most of them are in Fort William McKinley, beautifully located near the city. The officers' residences are very handsome. There is a large dance hall called Schofield hall, and the barracks and drill grounds are well appointed. The discipline is excellent. It is doubtful if anywhere our soldiers are better equipped or drilled. Fortifications are being quietly built, and with the seven millions of dollars recently appropriated by congress it is believed that the city will be practically impregnable. So far as can be observed the soldiers are demeaning themselves in a manner to reflect credit upon our country. While the civil government prevails the presence of the soldiers seems to be necessary to the preservation of law and order.

## XXIII.

### THE FILIPINO SCHOOLS AND GOVERNMENT.

MANILA, February 9, 1908.

As much as has been published concerning the Philippines since we received them from Spain ten years ago it is not probable yet that our people fully appreciate their magnitude. If you will stretch a line from St. Paul to New Orleans you will have their length, and then will stretch another line half way across Illinois you will have their average width; or, they are a thousand miles long and over a hundred wide. Three-fourths, possibly nine-tenths of this area is mountainous and unavailable for cultivation. So far the mineral resources have not proven abundant. The valleys are fertile and yield chiefly hemp, sugar, rice and tobacco. Oranges, bananas, cocoanuts, mangoes and most of the vegetables are grown. The forests are said to cover forty millions of acres and to yield much valuable lumber. The country has not yet proven a profitable business investment. But its business has grown under American control, its exports having advanced from \$14,846,582 to \$32,642,892.

#### THE SCHOOLS.

In no respect has our government exerted so important an influence as in education. The people respond to educational influences. They make apt students, have retentive memories and impressionable minds. There are now a half million of students enrolled in the public schools, of which there are nearly four thousand. Of these schools, thirty-five hundred are primary, one hundred and sixty intermediate, thirty-six high schools, and the remainder agricultural, art and domestic science institutions. A movement is on foot to establish a National University

and a National Medical School. There are twelve hundred teachers in these schools, of whom eight hundred are Americans and four hundred natives. Besides these teachers supported by the insular government there are four or five thousand under the municipalities. The government teachers are paid nearly a million dollars in salaries, ranging from \$360 to \$2,000, a large majority receiving \$1,200 per annum. The teachers employed by the municipalities receive less. The most approved modern methods are employed and the teachers are equal to those employed in our own land. I visited the Normal School, at Manila, the only one in the islands, where there are eight hundred pupils preparing themselves to become school teachers. I have not seen anywhere more capable teachers, or students who exhibited a more intelligent knowledge of the branches taught. It was novel and interesting to hear these Filipino boys and girls, but recently emerged from a condition a little above barbarism, speaking English, and demonstrating difficult problems in higher mathematics, and reciting in civil government, grammar and the natural sciences with the aptitude of students in our own land. The color of their skin is about the only difference that could be detected between them and American students. The schoolmaster will settle the Philippine problem long before the politicians will be able to do so. The expenses of these schools are borne by the Filipinos and not by our government.

#### HOW THEY ARE GOVERNED.

The United States owns the Philippine Islands absolutely. It obtained them by purchase and conquest. But it does not govern them, except in part. The President appoints a Governor-General, who is a civil officer, and has practically the same authority in the islands that the President of the United States has in our country. The President also appoints a commission of eight, five

Americans and three Filipinos, who have been the law-making power until the past year, within which time there has been created an Assembly of eighty representatives elected by the people of the Islands, which corresponds to our lower House of Congress, while the commission has the same jurisdiction as our Senate. These two bodies are now the law-making power, the Governor-General having the power to veto, and all the laws being subject to approval by our government. I attended a session of the Assembly and was much impressed by the intelligence and ability of its members. While I could not understand a word the capacity of the members was manifest in their bearing, their thoughtful faces and in the manner in which the proceedings were conducted. The body would compare favorably with any deliberative organization of like nature in the states.

Each one of the five American members of the commission is the head of a distinct department of the government, education, finance and justice, commerce and police, interior and executive, and each one receives a salary of \$15,000 per year, \$5,000 for acting as commissioner, and \$10,000 as cabinet officer, for each position is practically similar to that of a member of the cabinet of our president. The members of the Assembly receive \$15 per diem, and the Governor-General is paid a salary of \$25,000 per year in addition to being furnished with a residence and with servants and other prerequisites. It is estimated that his income from all sources is between \$35,000 and \$40,000. All these salaries are too high and ought to be reduced. They are paid by the Filipino government, but were originally fixed by the United States authorities. There is also a system of courts, composed of a Supreme Court of some seven members, who receive a salary of \$10,000 each and of a series of district courts answering to our circuit courts.

Strange to say the old Spanish code is yet in existence and is the one they operate under. There is no trial by jury, the judge having full jurisdiction. Each province has a governor who is elected by the people and has practically the same duties as are those of a governor of an American state. Associated with him are the state treasurer and one other official, who constitute a provincial board. This board answers to a state legislature in that it can enact certain laws touching taxation and roads and other matters of public concern and has charge of the affairs of the province. Thus it will be seen that the government of the Islands is quite similar to that of our own country, and that popular selection of its officials practically prevails. About the only part the United States is taking is the keeping of an army here to preserve peace more particularly in the southern or Moro provinces, and as a kind of warning that the people must not become turbulent. It is doubtful whether the government of the islands would hold together a month but for the presence of the army.

#### SOURCES OF REVENUE.

There are two principal sources of revenue, the customs and internal revenue. All goods shipped into the Islands have to pay a customs duty. The revenue from this source is about eight millions of dollars, and is all paid into the Islands' treasury. The internal revenue taxes yield about four millions. These taxes are upon much the same articles as in the United States. The tax on land is nearly one per cent. The provinces are subdivided into municipalities, the governing bodies of which are councils similar to our city councils, but their jurisdiction extends far beyond the limits of the city or town in which they are located.



The population of the Islands is about eight millions. There are some fifteen or twenty large islands, Luzon and Mindanao being the largest, and there are about as many provinces as there are islands.

The intelligent part of the population is in the north, chiefly in Luzon. Those in the southern islands are yet in a semicivilized state. The principal cities are Manila, Eefu, Iloilo, Zamboanga and Iolo.

#### THE TARIFF INJUSTICE.

The chief obstacle to the development of the Islands, and the most inconsistent and indefensible injustice being done them is that the tariff duties are permitted to remain upon their products as though they were the territory of a foreign and rival power. Although they belong to the United States and we are deeply interested in their development and prosperity we shut them from our markets even when to admit them would be to our advantage. Take hemp, tobacco and sugar for example. These are the main products of the Islands. Of neither do we grow in our country as much as we consume. We shut them from our markets by our prohibitory tariff, and at the same time admit them from Porto Rico and Hawaii free. We complain that the Islands are a bad investment, and yet we make them a worse one by throttling their industries. There can be but one explanation, and that is that this suicidal policy is in the interest of the big monopolies in our land. We might with as much justice and business sense levy a tariff upon Louisiana sugar or Dakota wheat, for the Philippines are as much our territory as are they; and more in need of our aid and encouragement. If the government is to be operated upon the theory of fostering

infant industries, here is the most helpless and needy infant we have ever had. And yet we starve the infant to help the giants who have grown rich and powerful through forty years of protection. Why does not the Democratic party take up this matter and cry aloud?

## TOBACCO INDUSTRIES.

The tobacco business here is something immense. I visited a mammoth establishment in Manila, known as "The Germinal," wherein are employed twelve hundred people manufacturing cigars and cigarettes, and which paid out last year a quarter of a million of dollars in internal revenue taxes. It is a splendidly equipped and managed institution. But this great establishment, with all of its enormous output, is excluded by the tariff from America and has to seek a market elsewhere. The same is true of several other great industries. While we are professing such love for the Filipinos that we send soldiers to protect and educators to teach them why should we keep on our statute books laws to keep them poor? The way to show that we are opening our hearts to them is to open our doors to their commerce.

## THE BILIBID PRISON.

The most interesting institution which we saw in the Philippines was the Bilibid or government prison at Manila. It contains over four thousand prisoners, the largest number inside any prison in the world and is the only penitentiary in the islands. Its buildings extend like the spokes of a wheel from a central tower from the top of which there is a view of the whole. We visited the prison at five o'clock in the afternoon and saw all the prisoners in line for inspection arranged down the dif-

ferent avenues between the buildings, and then marched by the supply station where they received their suppers. A band composed of prisoners, played in the meantime. The drill and discipline surpassed anything we have ever seen in a prison. It was an impressive spectacle. There is absolute cleanliness, and as it never is hot or cold the walls of the various departments are opened so that the prisoners are in full view while in their cells. We were shown the prisoners by the assistant superintendent, Mr. Stewart, formerly of Nebraska, who was secretary to Mr. Bryan in the latter's first campaign for the presidency, and by another assistant, Mr. Dorrington, who is a brother-in-law to Mr. David A. Ball, of Missouri. The prison they are conducting is a credit to themselves and the United States. Of the prisoners all are Filipinos, except about sixty, who are Americans, most of whom have been convicted of embezzlement. The law is being well enforced, and the penalties inflicted even for minor offenses, are quite severe.

## XXIV.

### THE PHILIPPINES—WHAT SHALL WE DO WITH THEM?

MANILA, February 10, 1908.

It has been just ten years since Dewey sailed into Manila Bay, smashed the Spanish fleet, and waked up next morning to find himself famous. We have since learned that his achievement was no great job, and that it required neither extraordinary skill nor heroism to perform it. As a result he has fallen from his pedestal, not because he gave his residence to his wife, but because he did nothing hard or extraordinary. There were no powder mines in the bay and the old Spanish fleet, to use an expression of a gentleman here who was on one of Dewey's ships when he went in, was about as capable of resisting the American squadron as a lot of sardine boxes would have been. Dewey knew all this before he went in, for the facts had been communicated to him by a man from Manila, who knew all about it. All he had to do was to sail in and go to shooting. But America went wild as it is in the habit of doing and never stopped until she bought the islands at the cost of the immense expenditure of life and treasure in the Spanish war with twenty millions of dollars added. She immediately proclaimed herself a world power and got drunk with enthusiasm, and built Dewey arches and monuments, and gave him a tremendous reception in New York and set him on a platform with her greatest heroes.

#### THE SCENE OF THE BATTLE.

By the way, the scene of the Dewey naval battle was not in the harbor of Manila, but across the bay seven miles distant at

Cavite, an old Spanish city of some sixty thousand people. We visited it, sailing directly over the scene of the fight with a gentleman who was on one of Dewey's ships. The city is ancient and sleepy, not especially changed since Spanish days, and is what Manila was then. A United States Navy yard, employing four thousand Filipinos and next to the largest navy yard we own, is there located. Some of the old Spanish gunboats still remain, and their inability to withstand the terrific fire of American guns is plainly apparent. This great navy yard at Cavite and the splendid soldiers' quarters at Fort William McKinley near Manila are an exhibition of American army and naval power to be found scarcely any where else in the world. When one beholds all this display of national strength, the American flag wherever he turns, and evidences of Americanism all about him, he can scarcely realize he is eight or ten thousand miles from home in Asiatic waters and that all this has come to pass within ten years.

#### QUESTIONING ITS WISDOM.

There were those of us who doubted the wisdom of this purchase. We did not believe the islands were worth what we paid for them. We feared that their maintenance and development would prove an expensive undertaking and that they might involve us in trouble with foreign powers, that we might get mixed up in quarrels ever prevalent in the East. But our fears were pronounced groundless and we were set down as obstructionists. McKinley was renominated and re-elected and so was Roosevelt, upon the issue of holding the Philippines and developing the Filipinos. So we went to spending money in army occupation, buildings, schools, public improvements, civil service and

otherwise, until it is estimated that there have been spent several hundred millions of dollars. We were right as to the expense, but wrong up to this date as to getting into trouble with foreign powers. As a business investment we have lost money, but we have wrought a great change in the islands and the people, such as was never wrought before in any people within the same length of time. In the end we will come out ahead financially.

SOME THINGS THAT HAVE BEEN DONE.

We have brought a large foreign population, mostly Americans, into the islands, who have invested many millions of dollars in business enterprises and are developing the country rapidly. We have planted four thousand schools, with eight hundred American teachers, and attended by a half million of pupils. We have transformed Manila from a dilapidated Spanish town into a modern metropolis with electric lights, electric cars, sewers, fine public buildings, modern newspapers, theaters, churches and all the institutions of a twentieth century city. Other cities in a more or less marked degree have been also transformed. All these children in the schools are being taught the English language and are receiving an education equal to that given American children. In their dress and manner and methods of living and transacting business the people have been revolutionized, are strikingly like Americans and are far in advance of all other orientals. The government has millions of dollars invested in army and navy equipment and other public buildings and has a well organized civil service, and judicial, legislative and executive systems of government. We have anchored an immense amount of money and education and prog-

ress and have wrought a social, commercial, political and educational revolution. We have so much there and it is so firmly fixed that we could not pull it up and haul it away if we wanted to. The two peoples have become so identified and interdependent that the partnership could not be dissolved without irreparable injury to both.

WHAT OUGHT WE TO DO WITH THEM?

In view of all this what ought we to do with the Philippines? Ought we to give them up now or hereafter? If hereafter, when? I must confess that a visit to the islands has modified my views concerning our policy towards them. I cannot see how we can surrender them without injustice to our own government, to our citizens who have located and invested money in the islands, and to the Filipinos themselves, who have made such marked advancement under our educational influences. It would be suicide and revolution and a lapse back to barbarism to release our hold upon the islands now. And I do not see how we can fix a time to do so in the future. It is not possible now to foretell when it will be wise to give up the islands, or whether it will ever be wise. It is a problem that must work itself out, and which can not be solved by legislative enactment. While the children are being educated and the people are learning and improving, they are not ready for self-government yet, nor will they be for many years under the most enlightening influences. Practically half the islands, the southern half, occupied by the Moros, is only half civilized, and there is a dense ignorance among a large majority of those in the northern or more intelligent section. To take an army away from here now or within the next few years would be to turn these half savage and ignorant



masses loose upon thousands of our citizens and upon themselves to pillage and murder and to plunge the country into anarchy and revolution. While the young are being educated the old classes remain ignorant. A gentleman who is superintendent of the public schools in a province of 260,000 inhabitants said to me that he did not believe there were fifty men in the province capable of exercising the franchise. It is true they have a nominal popular government but the elections are the merest farces, and are controlled by a few bosses.

#### INFLUENCES OF COMMERCE AND EDUCATION.

Every American business man or school teacher who locates in the Philippines and goes at his work intelligently and in a spirit of kindness and fairness is forging a bond of union between the Filipinos and Americans stronger than any legislative enactments, and is working out the problem of the final disposition of the islands more surely than either Presidents, or Congress, or armies can determine it. Every Filipino boy or girl who learns the English language and catches the inspiration of Western learning, or passes under the sympathetic and wholesome influence of intelligent American teachers becomes an additional element in the solution of the problem. The longer our business men and school teachers and Christian leaders live and work among these people the more they win their confidence and cause them to appreciate how much more our civilization has for them than had the old conditions under which they have lived. Within a few years longer the two peoples will have become so identified that under no conditions would they separate from each other.

## THE HUMANITARIAN SIDE.

Nothing could be more non-philanthropic, more non-humanitarian than at this transition period to turn this government back into the hands of the semi-civilized, the ignorant and demagogic Filipinos, who would undo all that has been done; would tear down the school houses, and the churches, and no doubt drive our people from the islands. While the islands may not have been a profitable financial investment they have afforded opportunity for elevating these people which we have finely improved, and it would be grievous folly to throw away all the good that has been done.

## THE POSSIBILITIES OF THE PEOPLE.

That the people possess intellectual and moral elements which will finally qualify them for self-government there is no doubt. But it will take time to develop them, until one or two generations can be educated and shall have passed under Christian influences. They are apt students, and good artisans. The public printer, who is conducting the finest printing plant we have seen in the East, told us that they made excellent linotype operators and printers. They do clerical work well, being fine scribes, and are faithful and reliable. They have few bad habits, do not drink whiskey, and are not immoral. Their only drink is called vino, made of the Nipa plant, but they do not drink to excess. They are temperate and amiable. There are some able lawyers and physicians among them, and many fine school teachers. Ultimately all these elements will gain control, but it will only be after a long process of education and when they do it is doubtful whether they will desire to cut loose from the people who have been their greatest benefactors and to whom they will be bound by so many ties of interest and sympathy.

## WHAT RESIDENTS OF THE ISLANDS THINK.

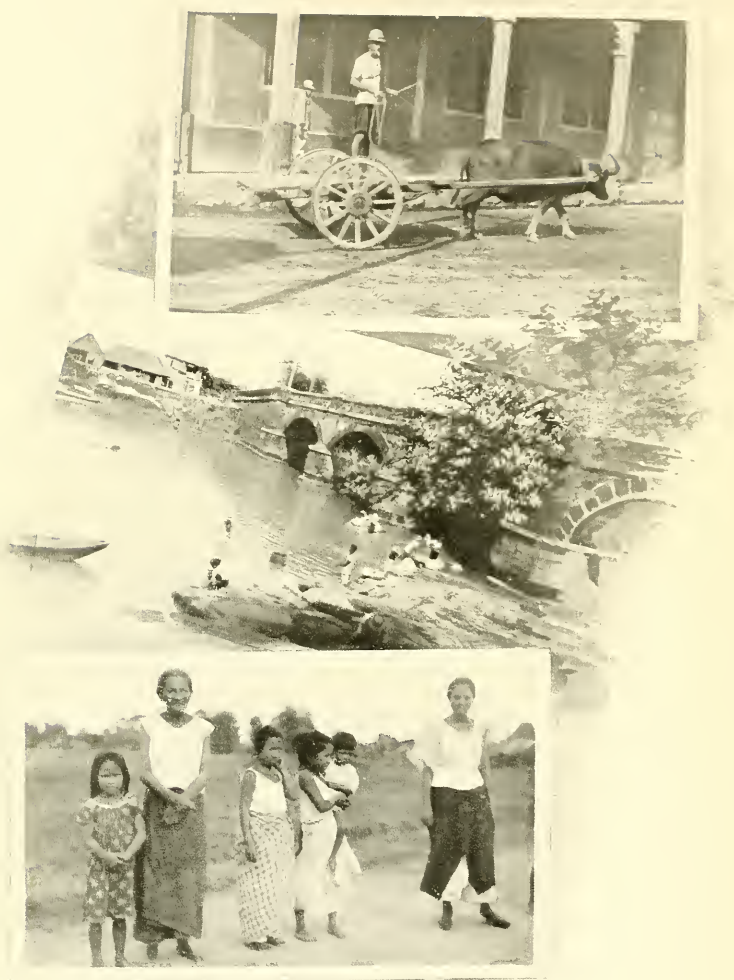
I have talked with men of all avocations and all shades of political opinion and without exception they declare that it would be the direst calamity to American interests here to surrender the islands or hold out a promise of doing so. They declare that it would result in all Americans being compelled to depart and in leaving the islands in worse condition than we found them. These are facts that I deem it my duty to state after a careful study of the situation.

## NOT ORTHODOX POLITICS.

I fear that the views here expressed may not be in accord with those of many of the leaders of the great party to which I belong, but I have deemed it my duty to give utterance to my convictions based upon a knowledge gained by actual contact with the conditions themselves. I feel sure it will be a mistake to surrender this immense territory which we own by right of conquest and purchase, which has been bought at such great expense, and where we have already done so much for the elevation and development of its people. I believe that it will not be long before it will become a source of profit instead of loss and will be the nucleus whence we may exercise a commanding influence commercially, religiously, educationally and politically in the East. We can not afford to turn these people back into barbarism when we have just brought them to the light, or to give up all we have done, and lose all we have expended when we have reached the period of harvest and fruition. I hope my party will let the Philippines alone and apply itself to the tariff and the trusts.

A visit to the Philippines has had the effect to increase my pride in my country and to confirm the judgment that in the achievements of modern civilization, in their ability to bring things to pass and to accomplish results for the freedom and advancement of the human race Americans have no rivals among the nations of the earth. Whatever may be our differences of opinion touching the wisdom of the purchase and retention of the Philippines we all will agree that no achievement in the history of our people is more creditable to their ability, genius and philanthropy, and no one has placed them in these respects in more striking contrast with other nations, or has done so much to command in the East such respect and honor for the enterprise and progressive spirit of America, or has placed our country so far ahead in these respects of all other nations in the eyes of the world.





*IN MANILA—The Central Picture is the San Juan Bridge Where the First Shot Was Fired in the Revolution*

## XXV.

### THE FILIPINOS AND THEIR WAYS.

MANILA, February 11, 1908.

Self-government is a basic principle of Republics. But even we Americans do not apply it without respect to persons. We do not permit children, or imbeciles, or lunatics, or Indians to vote. We recognize that they are not qualified. We know that three-fourths of the negroes in the south, who have lived under civilizing influences all their lives and have had the franchise for forty years, are not competent voters. We have discovered that intelligence is essential to the franchise, and even it is not always a safe condition. If these facts are applicable to those who live among us, and are familiar with our own institutions they are more pertinent to the Filipinos, who never heard of a Republican government until ten years ago and are yet in a state of ignorance as well as without sympathy for us or our institutions. They were reared under monarchial influences and most of them have no idea of what popular government means. To turn such a people loose to set up a government for themselves would be madness.

Having bought and taken possession of this country we are morally bound to protect these people even from themselves. It is true that they already have a semblance of popular government. They elect their own municipal officials and their legislative assembly. But their elections are the merest burlesques and are controlled by a few bosses and demagogues. They illustrate their unfitness for a Republican form of government. While their legislative assembly contains many intelligent men it is well known that its selection was largely directed by Americans,

(193)



and no such body would be chosen by the Filipinos if they were left to themselves. As an instance of their ideas of doing things their first act was to vote themselves fifteen dollars a day each and their speaker the preposterous salary of \$12,500 gold a year. It is well known that but for the presence of the military and a wholesome fear and regard for the American government, and that there is an American commission and governor to reverse anything they might attempt they would do all sorts of wild and reckless things. Nothing is plainer to a visitor to the islands that the people are not now and will not be capable of self-government for generations to come.

#### THE COUNTRY IS OURS.

We must not forget that this country is our property. We received it as a reimbursement for the money we expended in the war with Spain, and we paid twenty millions of dollars more for it. We expended a great deal of money in suppressing a revolution, have kept a large standing army there for ten years, and have expended very much in a military and naval armament, and in public improvements. Taking all these outlays together it has cost us between five hundred millions and a billion of dollars. We cannot afford to fool it away or give it away upon a mere sentiment just as it is beginning to pay us back, and at a time when to do so would not only sacrifice all we have expended, financially ruin many thousands of our citizens who, having faith in our government, have invested their money there, but would put the country back into a condition as bad or worse than it was before we took possession of it. It would be senseless to thus sacrifice that which is ours, and set back into ignorance and barbarism those whom we have expended so much to educate and

elevate. We are doing a great philanthropic and humanitarian work here. It would be next to criminal to stop or undo it. It would be even worse for the Filipinos than it would be for ourselves.

#### SOME CHARACTERISTICS OF THE PEOPLE.

While the Filipinos take kindly to education they have decided limitations. They are not original. They are copyists. They possess no initiative qualities. They learn language and history, and such branches as involve largely the memory, but mathematics and the sciences and those studies which require an exercise of the reasoning faculties they are short on. They are not industrious or ambitious. Like the negro when they are educated they seek to escape manual labor and want to be lawyers or doctors or teachers. They are amiable and temperate, but not sympathetic. Human suffering does not excite sorrow or grief. It is said that even death in the family calls forth no special expressions of grief. Funerals are tearless affairs, and sorrow for the dead is a sentiment largely unknown. We attended a dramatic performance in the course of which an actor died in a most heart-rending manner. Instead of his groans of anguish and his dying agony producing tears they called forth shouts of laughter, and the more piteous his wails the more uproarious was the amusement of the audience. While outwardly friendly to the Americans the universal belief is that they have a concealed hatred for our people which would burst into riot and murder the day our troops are removed.

#### EXTRAVAGANT SALARIES.

The pruning knife should be applied to some of the salaries paid to government officials. The governor receives in salary

and perquisites \$35,000, the American Commissioners \$15,000 each; the members of the Supreme Court \$10,000 each; the speaker of the Assembly \$12,500, the members of the assembly \$15 per day. All these salaries as are those of some other officials are too high, and ought to be reduced. This money does not come out of the government of the United States, but is paid out of the Island treasury. The only expense borne by the United States here is the standing army of 16,000 men, and the naval outlay. But as the soldiers and the naval expense would have to be borne somewhere else, Mr. Taft and Mr. Roosevelt object to this expenditure being charged to the Philippine account, which they claim is only responsible for the transportation of the soldiers and sailors here, which involves an outlay of some five millions of dollars per annum. Formerly there was quite an amount of embezzlements among those charged with governing the islands, but as the law was rigidly enforced against the offenders and they were sent to the penitentiary it has stopped. There is need yet of retrenchment and reform.

#### RELIGIOUS CONDITIONS.

Religion has not kept pace with education. There are many mission stations in various sections, but it is surprising that there are not more in view of the opportunities afforded by the protection of the American government. There are fine Presbyterian and Methodist churches in Manila, and the Christian church is doing a work there. The Presbyterian church building has the novel feature of a roof garden on it where the members meet for social purposes, and for worship. The Y. M. C. A. also is doing a good work in Manila. The Catholic, for a century, has been the dominating religion, and the cathedrals in Manila and else-

where are ancient, mammoth and handsome structures. The domination of the friars was the chief cause in leading to the revolution against Spain, but they have become more reasonable since Americans have had control. Large masses of the people are Pagans, and there is a great field for Christian Missions.

#### LABOR, WAGES AND AGRICULTURE.

One effect of the American assumption of government here has been an increase in wages to laborers to double what they were in this country or are now in China or Japan. Day laborers receive from twenty-five cents to seventy-five cents per day, and skilled laborers more. Printers in the public printing office are paid from one to two dollars per day. Improved machinery has been introduced not only in the manufactories, but upon the farms, and instead of the primitive plow or hoe may now be found modern agricultural machines.

#### THEATRES AND SOCIAL LIFE.

We attended four different theaters in Manila in order that we might observe the standard of dramatic taste and the social conditions. The audiences were well behaved and the performances, most of which were by natives, were not only morally unobjectionable, but about equal to those to be found in the average American or European city. They were somewhat crude but gave evidences of good dramatic talent, one performance consisting largely of fighting with swords, wherein the contestants fought for the favor of the lady. The battle was fierce and protracted, as well as amusing, and was greatly enjoyed by a large audience. We attended an opera at the Grand Opera House, a large and modern auditorium, which was a high class

performance. I was specially struck with the fine appreciation of music of the audience, as well as with its well dressed and cultured appearance. The Filipinos are natural musicians. It is said that they sow seed in the field to music. I was told this by a reliable man.

#### VISIT THE PHILIPPINES.

I shall ever regard it as a great privilege that I had opportunity to pay a personal visit to the Philippines. I obtained a knowledge of conditions there that could not have been secured in any other way. Every American who can do so should do likewise, for not only is the problem of the Philippines one of special interest to every American citizen, but there is no doubt but that the islands are to play an important part in our history and in our influence upon the nations of the world. For I here record the prophecy in spite of political platforms and at the risk of differing from some of my political brethren that the United States will never abandon them.

## XXVI.

### TRAVELING IN THE TROPICS.

SINGAPORE, MALACCA STRAITS, February 26, 1908.

Like Mark Twain, we are now "following the equator." We are within eighty miles of it and may be across it before this letter is finished. We are three thousand miles south of the latitude of Missouri, and two thousand south of New Orleans. Strange to say the climate is delightful, and we have yet to experience the intense heat we were told we would encounter in the tropics. This letter is begun at two o'clock in the afternoon, is being written under a private veranda adjoining our room, while the American flag floats on the roof above us, kindly placed there in our honor by the manager of the hotel. Although this is the warmest hour of the day a pleasant breeze is stirring, being wafted from the bay near by across a beautiful tennis park and laden with the sweet perfumes of the tropics. The heat is not greater than it would be on an average June day in Missouri.

This city of Singapore lies at the extreme southern end of the Malay Peninsula, 11,000 miles from Missouri, is the capital of the Straits Settlements, is under British control and has been since 1819, when Sir Stamford Raffles landed and planted the English ensign upon this island. It is as typically tropical as any city in the world. It is thoroughly modern, has wide streets, electric lights and tramways, handsome parks, fine public buildings and a flourishing business. It contains about 500,000 people, chiefly Chinese, with many Malays and people from all parts of India and of the world. The city is so thoroughly anglicized, the

British being in such dominance that it has but few of the characteristics of a primitive settlement. The streets are thronged with handsome equipages, including automobiles and carriages of the latest date and the best horses I have seen anywhere except in Manila. But the donkey and the Missouri mule are conspicuously absent. The costumes of the people of the better class, native and foreign, are almost exclusively white from helmets to shoes. The coolie or laboring class is divided between those of a mulatto complexion and of a color as black as midnight. But all are very lithe and active. The dress of many of them is confined to a breech clout around the loins, the remainder of their persons being that in which nature clothed them. Rikshas are much in evidence, as much so as in Japan and China. The draft animals are oxen, some of the American type, and others of the India variety, the latter having vertical horns, with bulging foreheads and humps upon their shoulders. They are hitched in spans to carts with two large wheels, and the yokes rest entirely upon their necks, there being no pressure upon the breast.

#### A RIDE IN THE COUNTRY.

We joined with a fellow traveler and spent a day going over the island in an automobile. The trip was ideal. There is a sweetness in the tropical air and a sensuous joy in the luxuriance of a tropical forest that must be experienced to be appreciated. The roads are wide and smooth, and sufficiently yielding to make travel delightful. They are made of a crushed stone of a deep red color and look like the red slate used in the driveways about Columbia and other Missouri cities. The trees are chiefly cocoanut palms which are set out in rows in orchards and cultivated as we do apple trees in America. Much of the country is wild jungle



composed of all varieties of trees indigenous to the latitude and of such dense growth as to be almost impenetrable. There were not many birds visible, but monkeys could be seen leaping about the trees as squirrels do in a Missouri forest. Pineapples are almost the exclusive vegetable grown, but they are not in as flourishing condition, as well cultivated, or as palatable as those in the Hawaiian Islands. Along the way we passed many little Malay villages, composed of wretched bamboo bungalows with thatched roofs. The only wheeled vehicles encountered were ox carts.

#### HABITS OF LIFE.

There is an ease and indolence about tropical life that is contagious. There is something about the dreamy slumbrous climate that makes one feel like lying down and suspending all mental and physical operations. The way people live is much out of line with the habits of those accustomed to the strenuous life of the temperate zones. Tea is served in bed at 6:00 o'clock, breakfast is eaten between half past eight and ten, luncheon between one and two and dinner any time after seven, with numerous teas and fruits between meals. From twelve to two and even until three or four business is largely suspended, some of the establishments closing their doors while the proprietors and employees go home to take an afternoon nap or siesta. The important period is the evening. Between seven and twelve o'clock the entire population issues forth. Every carriage and riksha and other vehicles are in requisition, while the sidewalks swarm with lounging pedestrians. Near the hotel where we are spending five days awaiting a steamer is a large park surrounded by a boulevard, which is every evening thronged with this moving

multitude, all the vehicles with lamps, and the sight of this illuminated serpent trailing around the park is one to be long remembered.

#### THE TROPICAL NIGHT.

The most enchanting visions of this southern world are not in the day, but in the night. It would require a pen more prolific than this one to describe them. The deep blue of the sky, the brilliance of the moon and stars, the dreamy sensuousness, the gentle balminess, the sweet calm of the air, made the more soothing when fanned as it always is by a soft breeze, all these make a tropical night glorious. And if it is delightful on land it is even more so on sea. When upon an ocean steamer and a smooth ocean one sits out upon deck with the canopy of the heavens above him, and only the air and the waters shimmering under the moonlight about him he must have a dead soul if he is not stirred with every sentiment that is reverential and pure and holy. It is worth a trip around the world to enjoy these nights in which we have been reveling for the past weeks and of more of which we have the prospect in several months to come, for we have so planned our journey that we are to enjoy them almost to its end.

#### LIFE AT SEA.

It has been one hundred and thirty-five days, or over nineteen weeks since we left our homes in Missouri. The time has sped so rapidly, has been so filled with profit and pleasure that we can scarcely realize that so much time has elapsed. We are grateful that with the exception of a delay of two or three weeks caused by an accident in Japan we have not had a mishap or an unpleasant experience. We have traveled sixteen thousand miles, and

of this distance over twelve thousand have been by water. One of the expensive features of a tour of the globe is that so much of it has to be out of sight of land. Of the nineteen weeks we have been from home six weeks, or nearly one-third has been on the ocean. But there are compensations for this isolation. Steamship travel is becoming constantly more pleasant. Steamers are now so steady that sea-sickness is a rare diversion. The fare is much better than at the hotels and the social life is very enjoyable. Many life-long friendships are formed, and opportunity is afforded not only for that recuperation and rest which every busy man needs, but for meeting well informed people from all sections of the world and of all phases of life under conditions favorable for drawing the best from them. One obtains nearly as much benefit from the acquaintances he meets on ship board as he does from the sights he sees on land. Then there is no tonic equal to the sea air with its freedom from germs and its life-giving influences. The man whose appetite is not strengthened and whose general health is not promoted by the sea is in a hopeless state. As to safety sea travel is regarded securer from accidents than land, and if there are any storms we are grateful to say they have shifted their course from us to this date.

#### A RULER WITH DIAMOND TEETH.

Close by Singapore lies a small province called Jahore, ruled by a nominal Sultan, whom England permits to enjoy the honors without the authority of his office. He is distinguished by the fact that he is a "high-roller," to employ an American term, is an all around sport, and has his teeth set with diamonds. He is said to have the most brilliant smile of any living man, for when he opens his mouth to laugh he looks like an electric light. We

have been wondering if Mr. Roosevelt, who enjoys the exhibition of his teeth, could not even improve that spectacular part of himself by imitating the Sultan of Johore.

#### SOME OF OUR TROUBLES.

The life of the globe trotter is not free from its exasperations. One of these is the servants who can not understand. Nearly all the servants are Chinese. If there is one quality more than another in which the Chinese are gifted it is in misunderstanding. We have had an illustration since this letter was begun. We sent the boy who waits upon us for writing paper, and he brought us bread, butter and cheese. When we have called for hot water we have received either an apple or a sandwich. Like the negro he will not wait for you to explain nor will he confess his ignorance, but will rush off before you can get through directing him, and always do the wrong thing. We have had a riksha coolie haul us all around a city, everywhere except to where we wanted to go, while we were expostulating and storming at him all the way, trying to get him to change his course. He would only answer "yes, yes," and keep on going in the wrong direction.

By the way frequently the first thing a Chinaman asks you after he is introduced is your age. I have made them guess as to mine, but when one guessed it at sixty-three, another at seventy-three and another at seventy-eight, I stopped asking them to guess and gave the correct information. I was telling this to a friend, who relieved my embarrassment by informing me that a Chinaman had no idea of people's ages. He said one had asked him his age. He replied that he was thirty-five. The Chinaman at once replied: "You are a liar, sir." A Chinaman does not consider it a discourtesy to call a man a liar. "You are a hundred sir," he

continued. "No," explained another Chinaman, "He was a hundred when he was born, but he has lived sixty-five years and now he is only thirty-five." The explanation, while not pleasing to my friend, was satisfactory to the Chinaman. The incident is given to illustrate how the Chinaman gets everything backward. He writes backward, talks backward, thinks backward. He is the most distorted and abnormal of beings, and the most difficult to fathom. And yet all over the orient he has the confidence of foreigners as has no other native, and there is not a thriftier individual, or one who makes headway more universally, or under more adverse conditions.

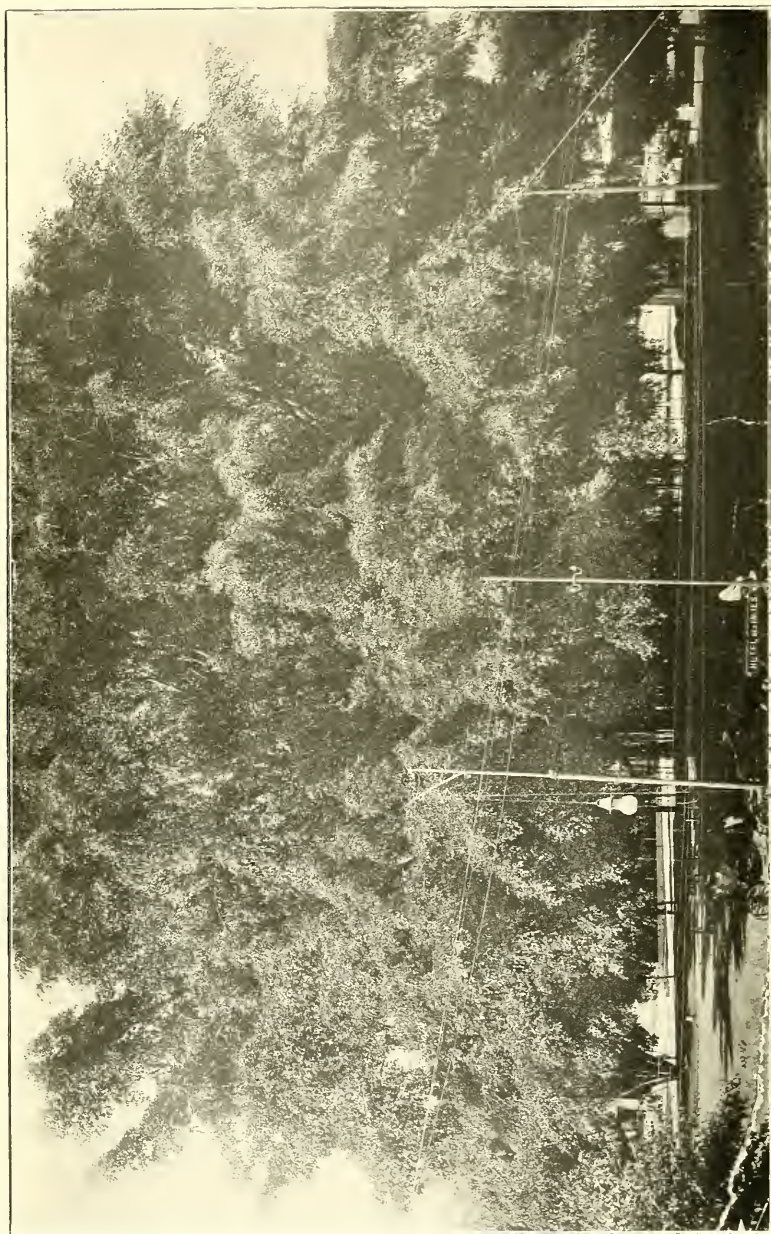
#### JAVA NEXT.

But I find I have wandered away from my subject and must close before crossing the equator. We expect to cross it within the next twenty-four hours en route from here to Java, which we hear from everyone is the most beautiful country in the world. We have therefore concluded to make a divergence from our journey and go there for ten days.









IN FRONT OF HOTEL *des INDES* IN BATAVIA, JAVA

**JAVA**



## XXVII.

### JAVA, THE BEAUTIFUL.

ISLAND OF JAVA, February 28, 1908.

If you will examine the map you will find that Asia is skirted on its eastern boundary by three archipelagoes. At the northern extremity is Japan, covering 161,000 square miles. In the center are the Philippines, extending over an area of 115,000 miles. At the south end are the Dutch East Indies, embracing 764,000 square miles or more than twice the area of the other two. The islands comprising the last named archipelago are Borneo, excepting one corner, Sumatra, Celebes, New Guinea, Malacca, Java and many smaller islands. Of these the greatest, although next to the smallest in area of the larger islands, is Java. It contains but fifty thousand square miles, being scarcely as large as the state of Arkansas, and less than half of it is susceptible of cultivation. Yet this small island supports a population of over thirty-six million of people, fully a third of that of the United States, and about the same as that of Japan. Of these thirty-five millions are natives, over a half million are Chinese and about seventy-five thousand, nearly all Dutch or Hollanders, are Europeans. There are less than ten Americans on the Island.

For nearly three hundred years, with the exception of five years, when it was in the hands of the English, it has been under the control of Holland or the Netherlands, as are all the Dutch Indies. It is not a colony, but a possession, being ruled entirely by the Netherlands, and having no popular representation in any of the branches of the imperial government. There is a Governor-General, and a cabinet, or "a court of India," who are his advisers,

but all their actions are subject to approval by the home government. There is a native Sultan and many subordinate native rulers, whose authority is largely nominal and who hold their positions as a means of placating the people. There is an army of occupation, comprising some twenty-thousand soldiers, supported by the revenues of the island. There is a limited system of public schools, but feebly patronized by the natives, not five per cent of whom can read and write. The dominant class are the Dutch, who have become very prosperous, but the natives are practically peons and serfs, the policy of the government being to retain them in this condition.

The natives are inferior to the Japanese, Chinese or the Filipinos and are content to remain in ignorance and in inferior positions. Nearly all of them are of the laboring class. They are small of stature, of the distinct Malay type, being yellow and dark in color, and are docile, quiet, indolent and thriftless. But under the management of the Dutch whom they address as masters, they are made profitable in the cultivation of the soil and in other places of manual labor. The policy of the Netherlands government is to retain them in industrial positions purely. The men wear handkerchiefs on their heads and most of the men are bare to the waist, but wear loose trousers of bright or variegated colors. Many of them, both men and women, envelop the limbs in a skirt of brilliant colors called a Sarong, and the better to do wear bright shawls gracefully folded about their bodies. The little children are robed in nature's garb only.

#### GEOGRAPHICAL AND TOPOGRAPHICAL.

The island lies four hundred miles south of the Equator and is a narrow strip of land running from north to south, and is six

hundred miles long by an average of about eighty wide. It is mountainous almost all over, and is said to contain more extinct volcanoes than any other part of the earth's surface of equal size. Some of these volcanoes are still active, but not seriously so. In 1883 one of them, Krakatao, in an adjoining island erupted, killing thirty-six thousand people. It is said to have been heard two thousand miles distant, and its smoke arose many miles. There have been no dangerous volcanic eruptions for several years. The lava from these volcanoes is said to have greatly enriched the soil and made it one of the most fertile spots upon the earth's surface. The valleys and many of the mountains, even to their summits, are cultivated. The heavy rainfall and the equable climate—the average temperature being about 82 and rarely rising above 90 or falling below 75—make it seasonable the year around and causes it to yield enormous crops. The mountains and valleys, ever green with luxuriant tropical vegetation, render it one of the most picturesque and beautiful countries in the world. The climate, except in mid-summer, is delightful.

#### PRODUCTS.

The chief product is sugar, of which about 1,200,000 tons are exported yearly. Formerly coffee was the leading industry. But the competition of Brazilian coffee and the fact that an article of as good quality cannot be grown as formerly has caused the culture to have fallen off considerably. Tea is grown in large quantities as are rice, tapioca, beans, cinnamon, rubber, tobacco, nutmegs, indigo and vegetable cotton. Java produces eighty per cent of all the quinine consumed in the world. We had the privilege of visiting a quinine or cinchona forest and taking a dose by chewing a piece of the bark. The trees grow upon the mountain



sides at an elevation of two or three thousand feet above the sea level. They are about the size of an ordinary Missouri sapling, and the bark is not unlike a paw paw or a water maple. It is nearly as bitter as the powder itself, which is ground out of it after the bark has been well dried. The adjacent country is malarial. We suffered the night previous to our visit to the forest from a slight attack of malaria, and were glad to chew the bark the next morning. It is probable that the discovery by the natives of the value of the bark as an antidote led to its manufacture into a medicine.

#### SOME FACTS AS TO SUGAR.

Great fortunes are made in sugar, the plantations being largely under the control of wealthy Dutch corporations in Holland. The Chinese also have done a considerable business in this line. There are about 180 large sugar plantations upon the island. They yield an average of about ten thousand tons each. The cost of manufacture is about thirty-two dollars a ton, and the market price of the sugar is about thirty-nine dollars. I obtained these facts from the manager of one of the largest plantations upon the island. This plantation comprises 3,400 acres, and employs 10,000 laborers, who are paid ten cents gold per day each. Last year the plantation yielded a net profit of \$230,000 or seventy dollars per acre. There are seven large factories upon the plantation, where sugar is refined, and shipped chiefly to Europe. The land is not owned by the managers. All the rice and sugar lands are owned by the neighboring villages, by all the people in common, a majority of whom decide to whom and upon what terms the lands shall be rented. And the rental price is then paid in equal proportions to all the residents of the village, who spend it as quickly



as they get it, and are anxious to rent, so that the planters have no trouble in driving a bargain.

## FRUITS.

Java has some delightful fruits peculiar to itself and adjoining islands. Chief of these is the mangosteen, a luscious fruit about the size of a peach, but with a tough dark purple skin, which when cut open reveals a pure white interior the shape of an orange, and with similar divisions to the latter in one of which is a seed. The fruit melts in the mouth and is most palatable. Indefinite quantities can be eaten. It is so delicate and perishable that it can be taken but a short distance from Java. The late Queen Victoria is said to have kept a standing offer of thirty pounds for one of them, but although repeated efforts were made to convey her one, no refrigerating process could preserve it that distance. Another fruit almost as good as the mangosteen is the rambutan. Its coating is bristly or hairy, of a bright red and of about the same size as the mangosteen. The interior is gelatinous both in substance and appearance and of the shape of a small bird's egg. It is a strong rival of the mangosteen. Another popular fruit is the dockue, resembling the apricot in color, but of different flavor and pulpy. The banana grows in great quantities, and is to our judgment Java's best fruit. There are many other fruits. The apple and peach and strawberry and raspberry are not grown, but according to the taste of this writer have a finer flavor and are in all respects preferable to any tropical fruit.

## TREES AND BOTANICAL GARDEN.

The feature of Java which most impresses the visitor is the luxuriance of its vegetation. He feels he is indeed in the tropics

when if he is from the temperate zones he for the first time beholds a profusion of trees and plants such as he has only seen heretofore in picture books or in the illustrated magazines. We thought we had seen tropical vegetation in the Hawaiian Islands, but that country is not to be compared with what one beholds in Java. The scene here is what has heretofore dwelt in our imagination of the Garden of Eden. For instance in front of our hotel stands a banyan tree, with probably a hundred branches rooted in the ground, and at least forty feet in diameter. Trees a hundred and a hundred and fifty feet high are everywhere. Palms of which there are said to be 350 distinct varieties, and bamboo of which there are a hundred different kinds, constitute a large part of the enormous forests which are being well preserved, because but little wood is needed for fuel and it does not require a great deal of lumber to build houses.

At Beutenzorg, seventy miles south of Batavia, is a governmental botanical garden, said to be the finest in the world, and constantly visited by botanists from all sections of the globe. Every known tropical tree is here grown. To show how trees will grow the manager of the garden, Herr Wigman, showed us one, the *Alberia Moluccana*, looking something like a Missouri ash, that had grown to fifteen inches in diameter and eighty feet in height in five years. There is a vine in the garden which is two feet in diameter and three hundred feet in length. Rattan vines of great length wind around the branches of huge trees like serpents. There is a water plant from the Amazon which lies flat upon the water, is the shape of a pie-pan and is five feet in diameter. It will support the weight of a child. It has a large white bloom, which turns red at night. It is called the *Victoria Regina*. There is also to be

seen there the papyrus, from which paper is made; orchids of great variety and beauty and other plants and trees too numerous to be mentioned. We who live in the higher latitudes have no conception of that profusion of vegetation to be seen in the tropics. Among all the trees here there are none of those to be found in our section, not even the pine, except near the mountain tops.

#### COFFEE AND TEA.

The coffee and tea plantations are in the uplands or upon the mountain sides. The plants are about three feet high and the spectacle of hundreds of the native laborers robed in bright colors of green and yellow and red and white, plucking the berries from the coffee bushes with the green upon the mountain side as a background is a pretty picture. But neither tea nor coffee is regarded as profitable as sugar and rice, which grow in the low lands upon lands rented from the villagers. The coffee and tea lands can be leased for seventy-five years from the government.

#### CITIES AND TEMPLES.

There are three principal cities in Java. Batavia, the largest and the capital at the north end, Surabaya, the principal shipping point at the south end, and Samarang upon the east coast. There are many smaller cities and villages. But unlike the Chinese and Japanese the natives are scattered considerably over the rural districts and do not congregate in the cities. In the center of the island are the ruins of one of the finest Buddhist temples in the world. It is known as Borob Bodoer, and is twelve centuries old. It is pyramidal in shape, and built in the form of terraces, there being eight stories, and the carvings upon the stone are very artistic, and said to convey an intelligent history of the period

when the temple was built. Nearby are hundreds of other temples also in ruins, for Buddhism many centuries ago ceased to be the religion of the Javanese, and these temples, once partially destroyed, were only exhumed in recent centuries.

## XXVIII.

### THE GARDEN SPOT OF THE WORLD.

ISLAND OF JAVA, February 29, 1908.

A comfortable railroad runs from one end of Java to the other, enabling the traveler to acquire a good idea of the country and the people. It starts from Batavia, the capital of the Dutch Indies, a beautiful city of over two hundred thousand people, with broad asphalt and macadam streets, handsome public buildings, and the best stores and hotels we have seen in the orient. The residences are one story, of white color, with broad porches, the roofs of which are supported by large white Corinthian pillars, in front of which are broad lawns, with graveled walks well kept. They indicate wealth and refinement and are such structures as can be seen only in the tropics. Flowing through Batavia is a river, branching from which are canals, which from early morning until dark are lined with people laundering clothes, or bathing themselves or their horses all in the same place. The banks of these canals and the river are sodded with a rich green grass and the water is reached by stone stairways. There are frequent bridges across the streams. Everywhere in the streets and out into the country along the roads are throngs of people, bearing vegetables to market. This steady stream of humanity, clad in the bright colors of the tropics, with the green background of the fields and the dark overhanging noble trees, which span the roadways, present an artistic and picturesque effect more beautiful than can be described. Java claims the finest roadways in the world. They extend all over the island, are smooth macadam, from fifty to seventy-five feet wide, almost everywhere arched with trees a hundred feet in height through which struggle rifts of sunshine and

which are ever vocal with the songs of birds. They are ideal for automobiles, of which there are many and the absence of many horses adds to the comfort of automobile traveling. American horses do not thrive here. Neither do those from Australia, although many fine specimens of the latter may be seen. The native horse, a diminutive specimen a little over three feet high, is the hardest equine in the world. Their drivers are merciless and the loads they can pull, their endurance, and the speed at which they can travel are almost incredible. The chief beasts of burden outside of these little horses is the water buffalo. There are no mules or donkeys. Farm implements are primitive, a single straight stick or piece of iron serving for a plow. Houses of the natives are one story, built of bamboo, and are almost bare of furniture. The people live chiefly on rice and the native vegetables.

#### RELIGIOUS CONDITIONS.

In religion the natives are almost universally Mohammedan. We have been to no country where Christianity has made as little impression. There are a few Catholic cathedrals, and some Dutch reform organizations, but we heard of only one Protestant American or Methodist Missionary on the island. His name is Dennis, and he is well named so far as any good he can do—unaided. There is no country in the world which is in greater need of mission work. Not only are the natives steeped in heathenism, but the Europeans who are here are equally as indifferent to Christianity. Many of them never were in a church, and the few who go do so but two or three times a year. We arrived in Batavia on Sunday morning and inquired for a church. We were evidently looked upon as a curiosity, but we succeeded at last in finding a little church of England, where we attended a service in which there were only fourteen others besides ourselves. We

were informed that this is the only Protestant church outside of the Dutch Reform on the island. It is due to the people to say that they are not immoral. They do not indulge in any forms of intemperance, except that of opium, and even to this habit they are not largely addicted. I observed that the teeth of many of the people were black and upon inquiry discovered it was caused by them chewing a small red substance called Betel nut which causes them to expectorate a liquid as red as blood, and which discolors their teeth.

#### SOCIAL LIFE.

The social lines between the Europeans and the natives are almost as definitely drawn as in America between the white people and the negroes and the problem of the relations between the two races much the same. There is a wide contrast between the treatment of the Javanese by the Dutch and that of the Filipinos by the Americans. The theory of the United States in the administration of the Philippines is to help the people. The policy of the Dutch in Java is to help themselves. The Philippine administration is one of elevation of the natives; the Javanese that of repression. The United States is dealing with the Filipinos on a philanthropic basis. Holland for three hundred years has proceeded in Java upon commercial and selfish lines purely. While the Javanese have necessarily been benefited by this contact with a superior race yet in three hundred years they have not made the progress that the Filipinos have made under the elevating influences of the United States in ten years. The cheap labor and the rich soil have resulted in making many Hollanders immensely wealthy. While most of this wealth has gone to the Netherlands there are many rich people here and the social life in Java among the Dutch is of a high order.



By the courtesy of the American Consul, Mr. Rairdin, we had the pleasure of attending a social function at the Concordia or Military Club in Batavia. Nowhere have we seen a finer social affair. The music by the band was of the best classic character, the equipages costly and the costumes equal to those to be found in the largest cities of the world. Probably a thousand people were present, and the entertainment was in the open air and in the spacious club building. It was difficult to realize that such a scene of social gaiety, such an exhibition of culture and wealth was taking place over thirteen thousand miles from the great social centers of Europe and America. While there were some half castes present we did not notice a full-blooded Javanese in the entire company. I have met and talked with many representative citizens, the Dutch, as they with pride call themselves, and have been much impressed with their intelligence, refinement and force of character.

#### WHAT THEY WEAR AND EAT.

The people dress to keep cool. In the early morning about the hotels the men go about in pajamas, and the women in Sarongs of variegated colors, both minus hosiery. While this is somewhat shocking to people from milder climates it has the element of comfort. During the day the men almost without exception wear white duck suits, sacque coats and trousers, and white shoes and straw hats. It is the most becoming as well as the most comfortable dress ever devised for men. The women dress tastefully in white dresses of a light material. These white clothes of the Europeans and the bright colored garments of the natives as they move about over the green lawns and through the dense tropical plants present a color scheme that is as unique as it is animated and beautiful.

In their homes the natives live upon rice and vegetables. But the Europeans add to the tropical fruits and other products all varieties of meat to be found in the tropics. They are delightfully cooked and served. Beef, veal, pork, chicken, ham, eggs are in great profusion, and there is a prodigality of pepper and spices and other condiments. As everywhere else in the orient there is an absence of milk and cream, but the butter which comes from Australia is of a fine quality. The cow does not flourish in Asia. The rinderpest and other diseases render her as a milk producer impracticable. I have seen more cows in Java than elsewhere, but they do not appear to yield milk and butter.

## THE RICE TABLE.

We have met with one dish in Java which has been both a novelty and a wonder. It is called "The Ryst Tafel," or in English "The Rice Table." It is served in a soup plate and contains the following ingredients:

Rice,	Pepper,
Maize,	Cucumbers,
Bacon,	Shrimp.
Nuts,	Extract of Beans,
Fried Bananas,	Indian Fruits,
Fried Eggs,	Native Beans,
Salt Eggs,	Roots,
Currie of several ingredients,	Salt,
Stewed meats,	Small Fish (fried).
Fricadelle,	Smothered and Smoked
	Chicken.

It will be observed that there are twenty-three articles of food in the above list. These are brought to the table one at a time and served upon one dish to the guest, and marvelous to say

are eaten by him. When I tell you that the writer of this took and ate them three days in succession and survived them you may no doubt be amazed, but you will be assured of the fact that there need be no apprehensions as to his health while traveling in the tropics. Among other good things that this climate does is to impart an appetite that is miraculous. What adds to his capacity to accomplish such a gastronomic feat is the excellent manner in which food is cooked and the tempting way in which it is served.

#### THE HOTELS.

The hotel at which we are stopping in Batavia is easily the best we have found since we left America. The grounds cover several acres, and the rooms instead of being in one building are in rows fronting an arcade built in a quadrangle. Each room has a bath attached, the floors are of tiling and all the conditions are the perfection of sanitation and cleanliness. The meals from soup to dessert are excellent, and the after-dinner coffee has no equal. Instead of coffee being served as elsewhere only the extracts or about a tablespoonful is placed in the bottom of the cup, which is filled up with hot milk. The extract is a thick, almost pasty fluid, but the result is the best cup of coffee imaginable. The hotel grounds are laid off in attractive walks set with tropical trees. A stroll among which in the early morning or in the evening makes one feel glad he is alive. Notwithstanding these expensive accommodations the rates are the cheapest we have found in the orient, being only about three dollars gold a day. Hotels are usually a fair index to a country. This being true Java must rank first among countries. We understand the hotels are of similar character in most of the Dutch Indies.

## CROSSING THE EQUATOR.

In coming to Java we crossed the equator. The event occurred about dark at fifteen minutes before seven o'clock on the evening of February 21. We tried to arrange the transit so as to have it happen on Washington's birthday so that two great events might occur simultaneously. But we could not persuade the captain to hold the ship back and the days had to come in succession. We could perceive no mark on either the sky or ocean and no peculiarity in the atmosphere except that the evening was cool and pleasant and we dropped into a grateful state of mind and a silent prayer that our friends in our far away home might feel as peaceful and contented as did we, as under the deep blue and amid the gentle hush of a tropical night we sailed quietly over the equator across the tropical sea.

## XXIX.

### ODDS AND ENDS OF ORIENTAL TRAVEL.

ON BOARD BRITISH-INDIA STEAMER IN BAY OF BENGAL,

March 3, 1908.

This letter is written not to relate anything specially new that has occurred since the last one, but because conditions are favorable for writing it, and in order to pick up some facts that were omitted from former letters. We are enroute from Java to Calcutta, a distance of twenty-five hundred miles. Distances from place to place in the orient are twice or three times what they are in America and Europe. But the conditions of travel are in some respects more desirable. The accommodations upon the steamers are not quite as good, but comfortable, but the steamers are not so crowded. For instance, upon this one there are but two other passengers outside our party. Of the fourteen steamers we have been upon it has been true of five of them that we have been practically the only passengers. This has been due to several causes. There is much less travel in the orient than between Europe and America. The freight demands are far in excess of the passenger. Then there is no doubt but that the business depression, which is world-wide, has affected travel seriously. But the courtesy of the captains and other officials and the service are all that could be asked. As we are now about half way around the world it is a pleasure to note that we have not met with a single discourtesy from any one dealing with the traveling public, either at hotels, railroads, steamships, or elsewhere. We have received numberless attentions and formed hundreds of friendships which we will carry as a pleasant memory through life. This trip from Java to Calcutta is through the Straits of

Malacca and the Bay of Bengal, the smoothest waters upon which we have traveled. The ports at which we stop are Singapore, Penang, and Rangoon, and the time consumed in the trip including a week which we will spend at Rangoon and Mandalay is eighteen days.

SUMATRA, MALACCA, BURMAH.

The Straits of Malacca lie between the island of Sumatra upon the west and the Malay Peninsula on the east. Sumatra is the largest of the Dutch Indies, is similar in characteristics and products to Java, but is much more sparsely settled and not in so advanced a state of development. It is an inviting field. The Malay States are devoted now chiefly to the production of tin and rubber. They are said to yield three-fourths of the tin of the world. But there has been a great slump in the price of that article, and many business failures have resulted. Business is at a standstill in Singapore, Malacca and Penang, its chief cities. This industry has been largely in the hands of the Chinese, and present conditions have the appearance of having been brought about by a concerted movement on the part of British financiers to freeze out the Chinamen, who are practically overrunning this part of the world. They are better business men than the natives, but hardly able to cope with the English, who it seems now, have them on the hip. We have found business very dull all over the orient. The financial panic in America is being felt throughout the world.

PENANG.

We spent yesterday at Penang, four hundred miles north of Singapore, and next to the latter the largest city of the Malay States. It contains a population of over a hundred thousand,

largely Chinese, but with many natives and Europeans, has one of the finest Botanical gardens in the east, and the roadways in the adjoining country are equal to those at Java. The stately cocoanut palms are grown in quantities. They are about a hundred feet in height, the branches and cocoanuts being fully eighty feet from the ground. We hired a native to climb this distance and cut off a couple of cocoanuts, which he did with the agility of a monkey, which he somewhat resembles. The natives are jet black and their only dress is a clout folded around their loins. The cocoanuts grow to a large size, and at this season are filled with water, which those who are afraid of germs drink in preference to that to be found in the hotels. The streets in Penang are wide and of macadam, the public buildings large and of fine architecture, and the hotels are good. The next country to the north of the Malay Peninsula is Burmah, the chief city of which is Rangoon, where we will stop within three days.

#### THE KING OF FRUITS.

The tropics not only claim the king of beasts, but the king of fruits also. Its name is Durian. Externally it resembles the osage orange. Powerful as is the king of beasts, he is even exceeded in strength by the king of fruits. For while the lion can only make his strength felt at close range, the Durian can wield a power from one end of a large steamship to the other. Its smell is something tremendous. Yet it is regarded a delicacy, and not without cause. Like olives, or oysters, or crabs, or lobsters, or divers salads, or cheese and other fashionable food, to eat it is said to require a cultivated taste. But be this as it may, we accepted an invitation from the captain to partake of one with him before breakfast, and we did it and still live. The other members of our party fled from it in terror. Its flavor is a kind of



combination of garlic, asafoetida and limburger cheese, in an advanced stage of decomposition. I wrote you in my last of having eaten "The Rice Table." And now having disposed of a Durian, you must agree that since leaving America I have developed the appetite of a tramp and the digestion of a Malay. Candidly speaking, notwithstanding the tropics are considered the home of fruits and flowers, I do not think that in either they are to be compared to the temperate climes. The fruits lack flavor and the flowers are without fragrance. There is not a fruit in the tropics to compare in delicacy of taste with the peach, or apple, or pear, nor a flower as sweet-scented as the rose, or geranium, or the violet, or the heliotrope. The mangosteen, rambutan and other fruits here are juicy, full of water but flabby and insipid, while there are no oranges equal to those of California or Florida. The fruits, like the people of the tropics, are distinctly inferior to those of the northern latitudes.

#### AS TO MONEY.

One of the harassing experiences of the traveller in foreign lands is the change in money and its value in every country. He does not get acquainted with its value in one before he goes to the next, where he is at the mercy of the money changer in the matter of discounts. By the time these sharks are through with him he is so bewildered that he does not know whether he has any money or not. In every country, except in the Philippines, the national dollar is a little more or less than half the value of the American dollar. In Japan it is the yen (49 cents) ; in China the Mexican dollar (46 cents) ; in the Philippines the peso (50 cents) ; in the Straits Settlements a dollar (60 cents) ; in Java the gulden (40 cents) ; in India the rupee (32 cents). The values of each ex-

cept in the Philippines are constantly changing, but this does not benefit the helpless traveller who is made to pay the highest gold price for everything he buys. While some articles of local manufacture are cheaper, those of foreign production are higher, and we find prices to be increasing the farther west we go.

As to hotels, their rates are the highest we have found anywhere in the world. And their conveniences are poorer. The fare is inferior, there are rarely any elevators, the plumbing is indifferent, and an extra charge is made for fires, ice, and many things always included in the rates of an American hotel. Business is conducted upon a more parsimonious scale than in America.

#### AS TO CLIMATE.

Within the past week we have traveled four hundred miles south and four hundred north of the equator. We have, therefore, been in the heart of the tropics. Instead of finding the climate intensely hot as we had anticipated it has proven very pleasant. While it is quite hot in the sun, in the shade it is cool and the nights are delightful. A gentle breeze stirs continually, and there is not that suggestion of malaria found in our part of the globe. One can sleep all night without covering or blankets or even sheets and yet remain comfortable.

#### A MISSOURIAN IN A GOOD WORK.

Since leaving China and the Philippines the absence of Americans and especially of Missourians is very noticeable. It was therefore a pleasure to find a former citizen of West Plains, Missouri, Mr. Kingsley E. Pease, in charge of an Anglo-Chinese school in Singapore. It is under the control of the American School of the M. E. Church north, and has thirty-three teachers

and 1,200 boys, who are carried through a course equal to the third grade in the high schools of Missouri. We visited the several departments and were much impressed with the fine progress exhibited by the pupils.

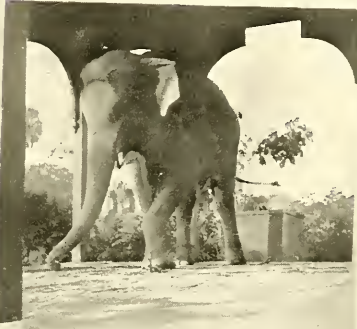
We have met another gentleman here in this distant clime who has brought back memories not only of our far away home but of the long ago. In the trip of six days from Hong Kong to Singapore we sat near a nice looking man and his wife. After two or three days we became acquainted, when to our gratification we discovered that he formerly visited Columbia regularly as a traveling salesman of a Boston house. He had not been there for forty years but remembered people and events perfectly. His name is Baldwin and he is in a large business in Sydney, Australia. He is one of numerous persons we have met under strange conditions who have had some connection with Missouri in years past, all going to prove that the world is not so very big at last.

#### MUSEUMS.

Both at Singapore and Batavia we visited museums of much interest. They contained not only fine biological collections of the flora and fauna of this region, but relics of the bygone ages indicative of the warlike, barbarous, and primitive life of the people. In one of them we saw crude wooden musical instruments and a chair with sharp knives in the back and seat where prisoners were cruelly tortured and executed, besides many rare coins, crowns and chairs of gold, articles of dress and curios which were of rare value and interest.







*IN BURMAH—Four Hundred and Fifty Buddhist Pagodas at Mandalay—Elephant  
in Park in Rangoon—Burman Woman Smoking Cigarette—  
Buddhist Pagodas in Rangoon*

INDIA.





### XXX.

#### INDIA.

RANGOON, BURMAH, March 6, 1908.

As one travels around the world he is overwhelmed by the magnitude of Great Britain as a world power. From the time he passes the vicinity of Australia, itself nearly as large as the United States, until he touches Canada, a territory still larger, he not only has verification of the fact which he has heard oft repeated that upon the possessions of the British empire the sun never sets, but he also discovers that this little nation not twice as large as the State of Missouri controls one-fifth of the surface of the earth and sways dominion over one-fourth of the human race. Nowhere is its power more manifest than in Asia. Among its Asiatic possessions by far its greatest is India. For three hundred years it has been gradually increasing its domain in central Asia until now it controls in India alone an area of 1,800,000 square miles, or half that of the United States, containing a population of nearly three hundred millions of people, nearly one-fifth of the inhabitants of the earth. As we are about to enter this, in many respects the most interesting, but on account of its remoteness from the centers of civilization, one of the least known countries in the world, we will, at the risk of being prosy, devote the prefatory letter to some facts of a historical and statistical nature, which have deeply interested us, and we believe will interest others, for however intelligent the average reader may be he is not apt to be thoroughly informed as to India. These facts will also render of more interest the notes of travel that may follow.

## HISTORICAL.

About the first authentic information we have of India is the invasion of it by Alexander the Great over three hundred years before Christ. The country afterwards passed successively under the dominion of the Scythians, the Arabs and the Persians and for over a thousand years was the abode of barbarism, the most degraded and yet marked by the most brilliant display of regal splendor, and the erection of the most remarkable palaces, temples and other buildings in the history of the world. Some of them yet remain and in architectural beauty and lavish expenditure in construction have no parallels. As time passed the value of the country commercially, its extended domain and rich resources, began to attract the attention of European nations. First, the Portuguese got a foothold upon its territory, but England, which has ever had an eye open to such opportunities, began early in the sixteenth century by conquest and treaty to secure control of the country until now she is practically in undisputed possession of this vast domain.

## THE GOVERNMENT.

India is divided into thirteen provinces and territorial divisions, which are under the direct control of Great Britain. The capital is at Calcutta, where resides the Governor-General, appointed by the King of England, and who, in connection with a legislative council of nine also appointed by the King, is both the executive and legislative head of the empire. Each of the thirteen provinces or territories has either a governor or a commissioner or agent and a legislative council similar to that in control of the empire. In addition to these thirteen provinces there are 680 native or feudatory States in subordinate alliance with or under the suzerainty

of the King of England. These comprise about two-fifths of the empire and one-fifth of the population and are controlled by petty native rulers, or Maharajahs, each one of whom has an English adviser, who is the real power behind the throne, the authority of the native governors being largely nominal. But this keeps the natives satisfied and flatters the vanity of the rulers who are paid good salaries and encouraged in their fondness for display. It is a shrewd stroke of British diplomacy and chicane.

#### THE ARMY AND CIVIL SERVICE.

In order to keep everything quiet and in running condition there is a standing army of over 233,000, of which 75,000 are British soldiers and 158,000 natives. There is also a reserve force of some seventy thousand, which is only called for in emergencies. There is therefore a total available army of about 300,000, to maintain which costs the empire about a hundred million dollars a year. The support of the civil service also involves an outlay of another hundred millions. There are five and a half millions of people engaged in military and civil service and as a large proportion of these are Britishers the British government has at least one very good reason for holding on to India. It gives jobs to their surplus of unemployed at home. All the money to pay this enormous list of officials is collected from the empire itself. Instead of the home government defraying the expense of the army as the United States does in the Philippines it not only imposes that expense upon its English subjects but it exacts from them an additional hundred millions to pay divers expenditures connected with its administration of Indian affairs at home. No wonder that the deepest poverty prevails among the natives and that they perish as they did in 1906 at the rate of five millions a year from famine and plague.

## RESOURCES.

At least two-thirds of the population depend upon agriculture. The chief product is rice, thirty-one per cent of the land being devoted to its culture and ten per cent to wheat. Cotton, barley, millet and tea are grown in great quantities. The chief export is jute, and the other principal exports in the order of their quantity are raw cotton, rice, manufactured jute, hides and skins, tea, opium and wheat and flour. The total value of exports is six hundred million dollars and of imports five hundred millions. Seventy-five per cent of the foreign trade is done at Calcutta and Bombay. In 1906 nearly ten thousand vessels cleared to foreign ports.

## REVENUES.

The total revenues are over two hundred millions of dollars of which one-half is from the rentals or lease of land. The government owns all the land and leases it for short or long periods. It also has a monopoly of the opium business from which it receives a total net revenue of fifteen millions of dollars a year. Its other sources of revenue are from taxes on sale of stamps, incomes, customs, excise, registration and from the provinces. All incomes of over \$330 and under \$660 are taxed two per cent, and all incomes over \$660 are taxed two and a half per cent.

## EDUCATION.

While England imposes a tax of a hundred millions upon the natives to support an army and another hundred to pay the expenses of a government to keep them good she only expends about seventeen millions upon their education, and this amount is collected in tuition fees and by taxation of the people. There are

160,434 educational institutions attended by 5,242,040 pupils, of whom only 604,050 are females. In the empire only one male in ten and one female in 144 can read and write, a record that shows that education does not proceed far, especially among the women. In fact, woman is in a condition of practical slavery. There are large universities at Calcutta, Madras, Bombay and Allahabad attended chiefly by the rich.

#### RELIGION.

Of the population 207,147,026 or seventy per cent are Hindus, 62,458,077 or 21 per cent are Mohammedans, 9,476,759 or three per cent are Buddhists and 2,923,241, or one per cent are Christians. The latter are chiefly in Madras and Burmah. Christianity gets most of its converts from the Hindus. Its hardest work is with the Mohammedans. But the missionaries are much encouraged and believe that as in China there will soon be a great turning of the people to the true faith.

#### HOSPITALS AND PRISONS.

There are over twenty-four hundred hospitals and dispensaries in India. They have done a great work for the people both in alleviation of suffering and in supplanting ignorance and superstition with skill and science in the treatment of disease. The lack of sanitation in many cities is very conducive to contagious diseases, millions dying annually from plague, cholera, fevers and other infections. There are said to be a million lepers in the country. During 1906 there were 22,000 deaths by snake bites. The religion of many of the people will not permit them to kill animals of any kind. There is a complete system of courts, the judges being appointed by the British government. There are

741 prisons in which are incarcerated nearly a million prisoners. Many crimes are punishable with death and the annual number of executions is large.

#### RAILWAYS AND MANUFACTORIES.

There are in the empire thirty thousand miles of railway which cost over twelve hundred millions of dollars, and yielded over seventy millions of dollars of net income last year, or about six per cent. Nearly all the railroads and telegraph lines are owned by the government, and the railroad rates are low. The railways are operated by a board appointed by the government. India is short on manufactories, most of its imports being manufactured goods, but it has 210 cotton mills, 37 jute mills, six woolen mills, and 37 breweries. Some of the population are inclined to take to beer and to whiskey also, which in drinking they mingle together. There are two kinds of European missionaries. One brings Christianity, and the other brings all they can to counteract it.

#### CITIES AND MUNICIPALITIES.

There are twenty-eight cities in India with a population of over one hundred thousand, and forty-nine with a population of between fifty and one hundred thousand. The largest city is Calcutta, the capital, with 1,100,000 inhabitants. The next largest is Bombay with about a million. Next in size is Madras, which contains five hundred thousand. Lucknow has 264,000. Rangoon, 234,881, and Benares, Agra, Delhi, Lahore, Cawnpore, Mandalay and Allahabad have about 200,000 each. There are in the empire 749 municipalities in which 16,670,770 people dwell.

#### WILD ANIMALS.

The fiercest, rarest and most dangerous animals in the world infest the jungles of India. Among these are elephants, tigers,



leopards, panthers, hyenas, jackals, crocodiles, deer, bison, tapirs, rhinoceroses, squirrels, monkeys and snakes, the last-named of the largest and most poisonous kinds. Many of these animals, according to the religion of the natives, are sacred, and this fact together with the law against the people carrying fire-arms, has caused them to multiply and make the rural districts a paradise for sportsmen. The domestic animals are the cow, ox, goat, dog, cat, horse, donkey and water buffalo.

#### THE CLIMATE, RIVERS AND MOUNTAINS.

India extends from the heart of the tropics, where the lands are flat and the heat intense, almost to the temperate zones where it reaches the Himalayas which stretch for fifteen hundred miles along its northern border, and rise to heights of over twenty-nine thousand feet, twelve thousand feet above the line of eternal snow, and twice the altitude of Pike's Peak. Among them is Mt. Everest, 29,141 feet, the highest mountain in the world, and upon which the cold is intense even in summer. Flowing from these mountains as their sources are four great rivers, which distribute their waters to all parts of northern India—the Indus, the Brahmaputra, the Ganges and the Sutlej. Under the system of irrigation being introduced and constantly developed these rivers are destined to insure permanent and reliable agricultural conditions and preserve the country from the fearful famines that periodically bring starvation to millions of the people.

•

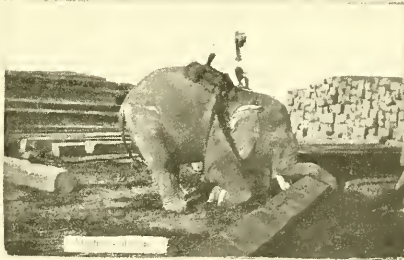
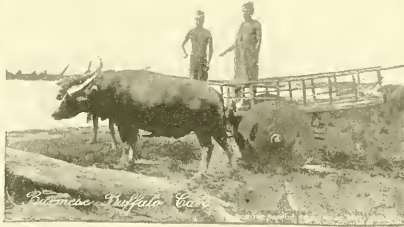
## XXXI.

### IN THE LAND OF THE PAGODAS.

RANGOON, BURMAH, March 10, 1908.

Burmah is not usually counted part of India. But it is. A hundred years ago, Great Britain began its characteristic process of acquisition of the country and finished it twenty-three years since. It then assumed possession, and took the Burmese king, Thibaw, and his two brutal wives prisoners, and has so held them since in a town named Ratnigiri near Bombay, where they are sustained in fine style. From 1885 to the present Burmah has been one of the provinces of India, and is governed as are the other provinces. It is the best piece of property the English have in the East. It is four times the size of the State of Missouri, and has three times the population. It is less thickly settled than any country we have visited. It is flat and fertile, has immense forests and its chief product is rice. It grows most of the tropical fruits, and vegetables. The palm and the banana are in evidence to give a tropical aspect to the landscape.

It has one broad river, half the width and length of the Missouri. Its name is the Irrawaddy, and upon one of the large steamers which float upon it between Mandalay and Rangoon this letter is written. The people are dark complected and yellow, dress in fantastic garb, with skirts around the lower limbs, and handkerchiefs about the heads, while the coolies wear no wrap above the waist, and some of them none around the lower limbs. There are two distinct elements, the Burmese and the Karens, but the population is also a mixed one. The natives are happy, go-lucky, thriftless, and as a result the Chinese, here as elsewhere, are acquiring possession of the business.



IN BURMAH—Heathen Temple—Buddhists at Worship—Water Buffalo and Cart—  
Elephant at Work—Plowing For Rice



## THE PAGODAS.

The religion of the people is Buddhistic. No other country is as distinctly so, fully ninety per cent of the people being Buddhists. The chief material evidence of this fact is to be found in the thousands of pagodas, which are to be seen everywhere, in cities and villages and along the lines of travel whether by rail or river. These pagodas are tasteful structures. They are unlike the pagodas in Japan and China, the latter being successive stories or galleries of diminishing size, which are reached by stairways, and their color is usually a dark red with gilded trimmings. Most of the Burmese pagodas are tent-like in shape, or like a bottle with a broad body, and a long and gracefully diminishing neck, at the top of which is a ti or umbrella spire of concentric iron rings from which hang little bells which ring when swayed by the breeze. Some of them resemble mausoleums like Grant's tomb and others are like cathedrals.

The pagodas are either painted pure white or are covered by gold leaf which dazzles in the sun, and near the top of many of them encircling the spires are golden bands studded with large gems, which flash like diamonds in the sunlight. There are no stairways to the top, nor are there usually openings or chambers in the base. The structure is a solid mass, supposed, in shape, to typify the nomadic life of the people in primitive times when they dwelt in tents. They are usually situated in large parks, where they are surrounded by numerous smaller pagodas, and by buildings in which are statues of Buddha. Also in this area are bazaars or stalls, where are exposed to sale all kinds of articles of merchandise, fruits and vegetables, and where gather beggars and fakirs and fortune tellers and a heterogeneous class. It is both a worshipping and a market place. To behold hundreds of

these wretched creatures prostrated in worship near by where others are loudly vending their wares reminds one of the scene in the temple in Jerusalem, when our Lord drove out the money changers for making his house a den of thieves. The statues of Buddha are multiplied indefinitely, are all in a sitting posture, and some of them are thickly coated with gold. We saw one jet black. Some claim that Buddha was a negro. Before them hundreds may be seen either sitting or kneeling or prone on their faces, mumbling prayers, with offerings of flowers or vegetables or other articles, while rows of candles burn between them and the image. People move about between the worshipers and the idol, talking in loud voices, while workmen in some places were busy painting the god himself.

#### SOME LARGE PAGODAS.

The largest and finest pagoda in Burmah and in the world is the Shwe Dagon in Rangoon. It has a circumference of 1355 feet and is 365 feet in height. It stands upon a terrace or mound 160 feet high. At Mandalay the Arekan and the Eindawgyi pagodas are beautiful structures, while the four hundred and fifty pagodas gathered at the foot of Mandalay hill are one of the sights of the world. These pagodas are not much larger than cottages, and are built in avenues in a large space, with a huge pagoda in the center. Upon slabs in each are inscribed the laws of Buddha, reminding one of the tables of the laws given to Moses. One sees many things in the midst of these scenes of idolatry to recall the Hebrew worship described in the Old Testament, as well as some of the facts recorded in Genesis of the rise and fall of man, of paradise and of punishment. At the entrance to each pagoda area are fierce figures which suggest the flaming swords and the

cherubim at the entrance to the Garden of Eden, and there are representations of trees as of the tree of life and there are portrayals of places of happiness and of punishment.

#### THEIR PICTURESQUENESS AND SIGNIFICANCE—BUDDHISM

The effect of these beautiful architectural piles which adorn many of the hills and valleys is pleasing and impressive. The architecture embodies grace, symmetry and majesty. The genius of the artist is manifest. No other country we have seen is thus adorned with so many and such beautiful structures. They are practically everywhere, in untenanted as well as in inhabited sections. They may be seen in the centers of the business districts of the cities, and upon lonely mountain tops, or on the uninviting flat lands. They are all in honor of Gautama, a Brahmin born between five and six hundred years before Christ, and who at the age of twenty-nine determined to effect some reforms in the Hindu religion. Although born in high position, he dressed himself as a pauper and with only a bowl of rice, went out into the world depending upon charity for a livelihood and giving himself up to meditation. At the end of a number of years he returned and announced a new religion. It adhered to the Hindu theory that the soul passes at death from man to an animal and thence from animal to animal, each animal being the abiding place of a certain sin until finally when all the sins shall have worn themselves out in animals he passes into Nirvana, a state of blessedness or freedom from sin, or into annihilation. He did not teach positive happiness hereafter, but a release from sin and suffering in annihilation. He taught punishment for sin in that each sin had to be expiated by the soul abiding for a time in a certain animal until the animal died. The more sins a man



had the more animals he became successively after death. The chief purpose of living was to commit as few sins as possible, so as to limit one's self to being as small number of animals as he could, so as to get to Nirvana as quickly as possible. There are two ways to escape being animals and to reach Nirvana without changes. One is not to sin and another is to build a pagoda. Every man who builds a pagoda has purchased himself immediate entrance to Nirvana or heavenly annihilation. Hence many rich men spend their entire fortunes, impoverishing their children, in order to build pagodas. This explains the great number of pagodas. But the repairing of pagodas has no meritorious effect in securing post-mortem happiness. Hence many pagodas are badly out of repair.

#### WHAT BUDDHISM STOOD FOR—ITS GROWTH AND DECLINE.

For nearly a thousand years this faith held within its grasp almost all of Asia. It was an improvement upon Hinduism not only in that it supplanted a creed that transformed men after death into hopeless and unending existence as animals, but it formulated a higher code of ethics and gave promise of final release from punishment. It was also a distinct revolt against the rule of caste which prevails to terrible extent among the Hindus. It offered no reward of happiness or of immortality. It was a doctrine of annihilation. Its rewards were negative only. It was destined to again surrender its place back to Hinduism, Moham-medanism and Confucianism in most of Asia until now it has dominion only over Burmah, Ceylon and Thibet, while it exists in limited degree in other lands. However, it has 455,000 followers more than any other religion.

As compared with Christianity it offers but little if anything to the world. Its creed is a mass of vague superstitions. It rec-

ognizes no creator, and while its followers worship Buddha, he himself only claimed to be a prophet, and what Buddhists actually believed it is impossible to learn even from them. That they should expend vast amounts of money upon beautiful temples and pagodas and should waste their lives in foolish idolatry illustrates the credulity of men and their susceptibility to error and superstition.

Strange to say that men reared in Christian lands, who travel or reside in this oriental country, may be met constantly who will stand up and declare this to be as good a religion as Christianity. The American or English infidel or weak-kneed Christian easily glides into Buddhism or Mohammedanism or any of the heathen religions, when he gets beneath their spell. How it is possible to compare the ignorance and wickedness and filth which follow heathenism with the cleanliness and progress and purity which are the sequences of Christianity and pronounce one as good as the other, we confess we can not understand.

#### WHAT CHRISTIANITY IS DOING.

If Buddhism is in such potent and flourishing form in Burmah it is also true that in no heathen country has Christianity made more marked progress. Here ninety-five years ago Adoniram Judson, the first American Baptist Missionary, if not the first American Missionary, landed and began his apparently hopeless work. For seven years there was not a single convert. He struggled on undaunted. He translated the entire Bible into Burmese and made an Anglo-Burmese dictionary and grammar. Being an accomplished linguist he did his work so well that these books are standards to-day, his translation of the Bible ranking in Burmah as the King James version does in America and England.

He was more of a scholar than an evangelist or an orator. This was fortunate, for it enabled him to lay the foundation of his work so well that great success came afterwards. Now the Baptist denomination to which he belonged has in Burmah a total church membership of over 60,000 in 843 churches. It has 65 missionaries and 212 native helpers. Of the 843 churches 679 are self-supporting. Its work in education has been equally as successful.

At Rangoon there is a fine Baptist college, established in 1872 and with an excellent faculty and 1060 students. There are two theological seminaries at Insein near Rangoon, the President of one of them being Rev. D. A. W. Smith, son of the author of "My Country, 'Tis of Thee." The President of the other is Rev. Mr. McGuire. There is being erected for Rangoon college a new building to cost \$50,000, and to be named Cushing Hall, in honor of its President, whose tragic death in St. Louis at the Baptist General Convention of North America in 1905, will be recalled. The Baptists also have four large girls' schools in Burmah, and eight hundred primary schools attended by 25,000 students. The Baptists are largely in control of the missionary work of Burmah.

#### FRUITS OF APPARENT FAILURE.

When Adoniram Judson died at sea in 1852, after forty years given to missionary work, there were those who regarded his long and strenuous life of self-sacrifice and devotion practical failure. The results seemed so small in proportion to the work expended. Not only were these years of isolation among an ignorant and degraded people, but they were full of hardship. He had neither companions nor encouragement. In 1825 he was imprisoned on suspicion of being a British spy and kept in filthy

prisons for seventeen months, with fetters upon his hands and feet, fed on horrible food, and suspended for a time with his feet upwards, while mosquitoes and other insects preyed upon him. While thus imprisoned his wife was compelled to go about the streets of the village begging for food for herself and infant child, and she took the smallpox and afterwards spotted fever. Judson was led from the prison at Ava, the capital, to the little village of Oringbinle, barefooted and bareheaded, and was then thrown into a cell with two fetters upon his hands, having previously had three upon them. But he was finally released and while he failed to realize the hopes of these years of sacrifice and suffering he won appreciation and kindly treatment from the people.

A brick chapel, twenty-five by fifty feet, has been erected upon the spot in the village of Oringbinle, four miles from Mandalay, where stood Judson's prison, and here on the scene of his sufferings where his mental anguish must have exceeded his physical, is a church, of which a Burmese, the Rev. Mr. Mounge, is pastor. I stood in this church and went about the streets of the village where Mrs. Judson begged for bread, and as I did so and contemplated what had come to Burmah since Judson landed there, as I thought of the thousands who had been led into the Christian life, and of the thousands destined to be, I could but feel that his sufferings had borne fruit and that his life had not been in vain.

XXXII.

FROM RANGOON TO MANDALAY.

MANDALAY, BURMAH, March 12, 1908.

This city, situated upon the Irrawaddy river in the heart of Burmah, has attained some modern celebrity through the lines of Mr. Rudyard Kipling, which as I recall them, run as follows:

“It was on the road to Mandalay,  
Where the flying fishes play  
And the dawn comes up like thunder  
Out of China across the bay.”

The lines are pretty, and it is a pity to spoil them. But the truth ought to be told, and if it must be we will have to testify that there is but one line in the stanza that is sustained by the facts. There is a road to Mandalay, but after diligent inquiry we are sure there are now and have been no flying fishes there. We are personally cognizant of the fact that the dawn does not come up like thunder, for we saw it come, and took a picture of it just at sunrise, and we never saw a more peaceful ushering in of the day. Being curious to witness the remarkable performance of dawn rising like thunder we arose early to observe it and were disappointed. Nor is China across the bay, but five hundred miles away across mountains and valleys and jungles. In fact there is no neighboring bay for it to be across, for the nearest bay is that of Bengal in the other direction a thousand miles from China. We have always understood that under the latitude of license a poet was at liberty to wander at liberal distances from the truth, but when he murders facts at this rate he has placed himself beyond the pale of indulgence.

## THE ROADS TO MANDALAY.

There are two roads to Mandalay, one by railroad and the other by river. No doubt it can be reached by plain public highways. We came by railroad 400 miles from Rangoon, and will return by river. The trip affords a fine opportunity for observing the country and the people. It required eighteen hours in which to make it. The rates of travel per mile are two and a half cents for first-class, one and a fourth cents for second-class and a half cent third-class. The large majority travel third-class. The first-class cars hold sixteen people, divided into two sections with transverse corridors opening upon the outside between. At night the seats are converted into berths, by which the day coaches are changed into sleeping cars. But each passenger must provide his own pillow and bedding, which on account of the warm climate consists only of sheets and blanket. There is a lavatory attached for which the passenger must furnish his own soap and towels. This is to be our method of traveling all over India and it is comfortable. Meals can be obtained along the route by telegraphing ahead.

## THE COUNTRY, WILD ANIMALS, TIGER HUNTING.

The interior is less cultivated than any country we have visited. As elsewhere there are no fences. We have seen no fences in Asia. About the only product is rice, or as it is called in the unthreshed, or native, state, "paddy." Great piles of it in sacks lie at every railroad station and steamboat landing. There is great extent of forest, some of it without undergrowth and other of it dense jungle. We have seen nothing in America as dense as an Indian jungle unless it be some people's heads. It looks to be impenetrable. It is a fit abode for the fierce wild beasts and

the poisonous reptiles and insects of the tropics. While these are not to be observed from the highways of travel the jungles are full of them. Tigers, leopards, elephants, tapirs, bison, rhinoceroses, hyenas, monkeys of various kinds and several varieties of deer are found plentifully in the remote and wild regions. We are assured that we can have opportunity to slay a tiger if we desire, but time will not permit the delay. They are hunted upon elephants. The tiger is located in a jungle where hunters surround him upon elephants. When he is discovered they fire upon him. He is rarely killed at the first shot, but when wounded he shows fight and will even leap upon the elephant's head or haunches, but if the huntsman is expert and quick he can be slain. He is not as dangerous or as active an animal as the leopard, and will not attack a man unless he is assaulted, and he is clumsy. But the leopard has been known to waylay and drop upon men as they ride through the jungle, and they are quite active, can climb a tree like a cat, and easily leap upon an elephant's back. The tiger can not climb a tree. The tigers of Burmah are not of the man-eating kind or as fierce or large as those of Central India. But to be candid, when the perils of the hunt were explained I came to the conclusion that lack of time was not the only obstacle in the way of my hunting tigers.

#### ELEPHANTS.

This is the native home of the elephant. They run wild but the killing of them is forbidden by law. They go in herds of from ten to fifty. A disease has recently broken out among them which is thinning them out rapidly. They are used as work animals. We saw several of them both at Maulmein and Rangoon. At the latter place there were four of them removing logs from



a lagoon. Their power and intelligence are alike remarkable. They plunge into water and mire with seeming recklessness, but it is said that they are prudent enough never to go beneath their depth. Their strength both in draught work and in pushing huge logs with their tusks is very great. In one place a big fellow was piling lumber in a lumber yard, which he did with great precision, sighting with his eye along the pile to see that it was straight, and never contenting himself as long as a single timber was out of line. We watched them bathe, and they laid down in the water, plunging their heads under and frolicking like children. We were anxious to find out how much they ate, and learned from their keeper that they consumed over four hundred pounds of green grass and a bushel of rice a day. They sell at from \$2,000 to \$3,000 each. In the rural districts they are used to haul logs and do other heavy work. They are useful, and the stories told of their strength and intelligence are almost beyond belief.

#### THE ORIGINAL WHITE ELEPHANT.

The white elephant is rare and regarded sacred. While in Mandalay I learned the origin of the expression "having a white elephant upon one's hands." When the country passed into the hands of the English the Burmese king owned a white elephant. The people had a superstition that for any one to own the animal except one of their own native kings was desecration, and were about to rise in rebellion when the English took the beast in charge. The English were perplexed to know what to do. Finally they slew the elephant and thus relieved themselves from the serious embarrassment of "having a white elephant on their hands."

## SNAKES.

The most dangerous beasts in Burmah, as in all India, are the snakes. As stated in a former letter over twenty thousand people die every year from snake bites. The poison of the reptiles is deadly, and few if any remedies have been discovered for it. The religion of many of the people teaches them that it is wrong to slay an animal of any kind, and this results in great multiplication of snakes of all kinds. Some of them regard it sinful to resist a snake when attacked. The largest snake is the python. We saw one in a museum about twenty feet long. They are not a dangerous snake, but a gentleman told me that he had seen one carrying a deer in his mouth. They lie in wait for various animals and drop upon them from the trees, as does also the boa constrictor, which is found in abundance. It is not certain but that the python and boa constrictor are the same. The most active and dangerous snake is the cobra. He is the mortal enemy of men, will conceal himself over doors or in trees and leap upon his victim unawares. His bite means death. The Russell's viper is equally deadly, but is sluggish, and will not strike unless disturbed, when he goes at the offender furiously. The banded krait, a habitat of rocks and houses, a little snake that climbs up legs of beds and chairs, and the hemadryad are others of many dangerous snakes. This is another argument against a tenderfoot hunting in India. And the heat is the chief argument of all.

## THE BIRDS.

Burmah has selected as its national bird the most beautiful and the most useless of all, the peacock. Here as everywhere the chicken is in evidence, the traveler's chief reliance. But we

have not observed many birds in the forest, with the exception of crows, of which there is no limit. Upon the rivers are immense swarms of ducks and geese and pelicans and other water fowl.

#### DOMESTIC ANIMALS.

The universal, almost the only draught animal in Burmah, is the ox. Horses are only owned by the wealthy in the cities, and I had begun to fear that I would never again see another Missouri mule. In riding over Mandalay I was giving utterance to the lament when we suddenly passed an army post which had emblazoned above it "Twenty-Fifth Mule Corps," and looking across into a compound I saw at least five hundred of my old friends. I felt like singing "home, sweet home." Had one of them opened his mouth in his familiar refrain I feel sure I could not have suppressed the song in response. But these mules which were used for army transportation were not to be compared with the original Missouri brand. I have seen this kind only in Manila. The water buffalo, the most popular of all Asiatic domestic animals, is also to be found in abundance in Burmah, as are the goat, the dog, the cat, and the sheep. The hardiest animal is the pony. He is of diminutive size but his strength and endurance have to be witnessed to be believed. He is confined to the cities.

#### FRUITS AND VEGETABLES.

The domestic vegetables are those in common use elsewhere, cabbage, turnip, tomato, potato, lettuce, beans, sweet potato, cauliflower, carrot. The fruits are the durian, mango, mangosteen, rambutan, orange, lemon, custard apple, pineapple, papaya, leechy, guava. But they lack the flavor of those to be found in

America. Both vegetables and fruits are insipid. The weather is so hot, and the droughts so fierce as to take the life out of vegetables. We have seen but few flowers, and none of the fragrant varieties.

#### MANDALAY.

The city of Mandalay was formerly the capital of Burmah. The palace and grounds occupying an area a mile square, the home of the last Burmese king, Thibaw, are still preserved as a soldiers' barracks, but the palace is deserted. It is a barnlike structure with the walls of teak wood, but elaborately garnished with gold leaf. The large mirrors and walls inlaid with colored glass are the only remaining traces of its former grandeur, which has the barbaric stamp. Thibaw had two vicious wives among many others. These wives engaged in an intrigue to expel an English company from doing business in Burmah. This brought on a war and resulted in the entire country passing into the possession of the British, where it has been since. This was in 1885, and as heretofore mentioned, Thibaw and his wives have since been prisoners in India. The city contains about 188,000 people, is laid out with wide streets and is overspread with pagodas, the most important of which were mentioned in the last letter. There is not much business. There are ruby and jade mines not many miles distant, and also alabaster quarries, and teak forests. These are worked into use for commerce. The carvings from the teak wood are the finest in the world.

The place has been smitten for years by the Bubonic plague. There are many deaths daily. This plague has destroyed millions in India within the past few years. It is almost certain death. It is contracted from the rats, being transmitted by fleas. The victim is first stricken by a high fever, followed by intense

pains in the back of the neck and head and body. The glands of the neck swell and death ensues from heart failure. Despite all efforts to check and prevent it no remedy has been discovered, and the deaths proceed steadily. They are confined to the natives.

There are many lepers in the city. There are said to be 25,000 lepers in Burmah. Two large leper hospitals have been erected, one by the Catholics and the other by the Wesleyan Mission, at which some thousand lepers are being treated. The disease is not regarded contagious, but is incurable. Every provision is made to render the unfortunates comfortable. There is also a plague hospital.

Mandalay is quite an educational center. The Baptists have large schools for Burmese boys and girls, and also a school for Europeans, and there are two extensive Catholic institutions. The Baptists have a church building erected as a memorial to Adoniram Judson, the pioneer Baptist missionary, and there is also a flourishing Wesleyan mission.

While in Mandalay we have been indebted to the Rev. E. Triboulet, principal of the Burmese boys' school, for many attentions, and for having afforded us the best opportunities for visiting points of interest. We also met Misses Parrott and Parish of the girls' school, two accomplished ladies, and were kindly received by Miss Brend, principal of the European school, and by Father John, of the Catholic school for boys.

Nowhere have we been more deeply impressed with the philanthropic and unselfish work of missionaries than by that being done in this plague-stricken city by these faithful men and women. It is difficult to understand how anyone can find it in his heart to criticize missionaries after having witnessed the scenes of self-sacrifice that are everywhere to be seen in this idolatrous and diseased-cursed country.

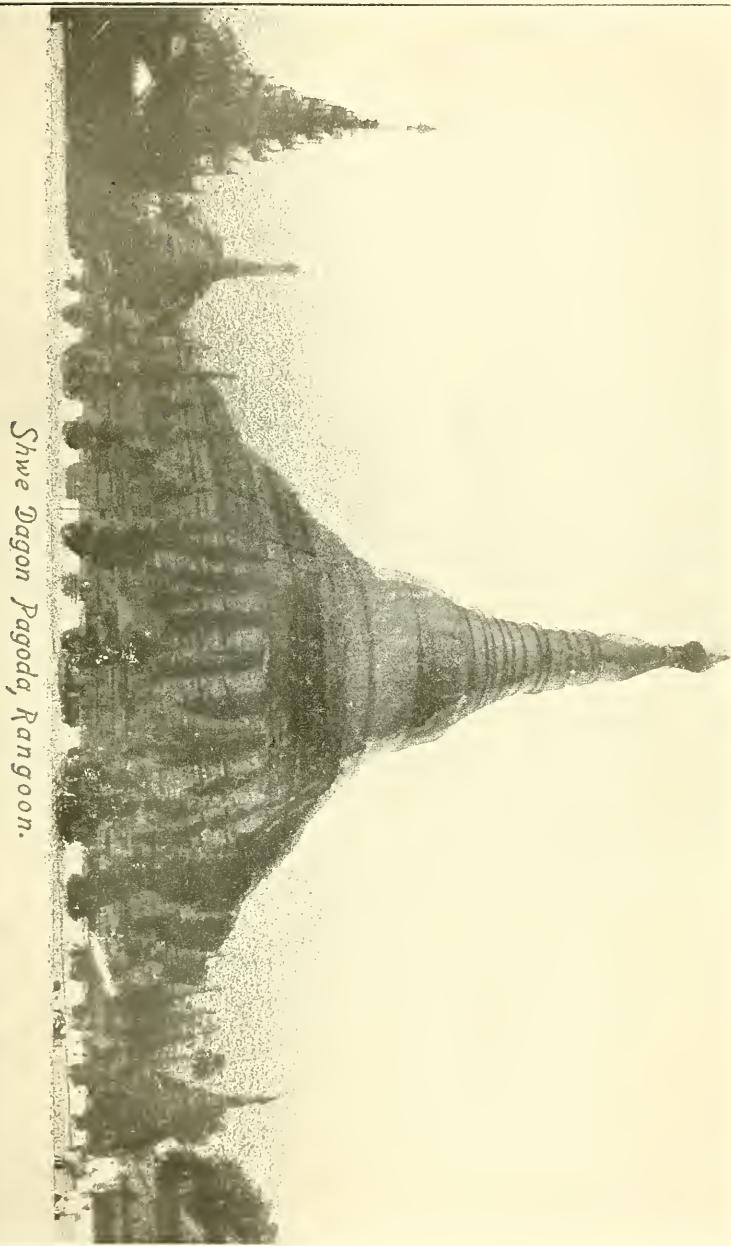
### XXXIII.

#### DOWN THE IRRAWADDY.

ON BOARD RIVER STEAMER, March 13, 1908.

Nowhere in the world, so far as our observation has been, is there to be had a trip by river more unique, spectacular and interesting than that on the Irrawaddy between Mandalay and Rangoon, Burmah. The distance is seven hundred miles. But the tourist only travels four hundred from Mandalay to Prome, when he proceeds the remainder of the distance by rail. The trip between Mandalay and Prome by river requires three days, and every moment is filled with interest. The steamers are large and comfortable and are a reminder of the good old steamboating days on the Missouri river before the Civil War. The river itself is very like the Missouri. It is not more than half or a third as wide but it is muddy and full of sand bars, the current constantly changing in the same capricious manner as "The Big Muddy." The incessant droning of the deck hands who are measuring the depths of the channel recalls the familiar "mark twain" and "quarter less train," as wailed out on the Missouri steamers in the good old days. The Burmese deck hands have the same active and happy characteristics of the negro roustabouts, and at the river landings are piles of rice sacks looking as the wheat and oats and corn did, along the Missouri. The scenes at the landings are the same familiar type and the captains are of that social, bluff, hearty and commanding quality which all who can remember the old days will recall in the steamboat days of the Missouri. The running of a steamboat was then a profitable business, and the ambition of the average man was to be a captain of one of them, for they usually retired rich. On the Irrawaddy, while the





*Shwe Dagon Pagoda, Rangoon.*





captains do not own their boats as the Missouri captains did, they receive a large percentage of the business and retire finally with ample fortunes. In our travels we have met with no more courteous and chivalrous characters than the captains of the steamers upon which we have traveled. They do much to render the life of their passengers pleasant, and travel by river in the orient is an event not to be forgotten.

THE STEAMERS AND PASSENGERS.

The boats upon the Irrawaddy are of different shape from those of the Missouri and Mississippi. They are flatter and longer and more capacious. There are but few cabin passengers, and all of them are Europeans and Americans. But the deck passengers number upon this steamer nearly a thousand and are all natives, most of them going to or returning from a large Buddhist festival. They are a quiet people, and amiable as evidenced in that they submit to being packed together upon the floors like sardines in a box. They are dressed in the picturesque costume of the country, white and red, with turbans upon the head. All are barefooted. As they line up in dense throngs upon the shores, or sail about in skiffs upon the river, or drive their ox carts down the landings they present a picture of color and primitive life that contrasts beautifully with the sand, the waving palms, the verdure, the bungalows and the pagodas along the shore. Hundreds of them may be seen bathing in the river. They leap in, both men and women, with their clothes on. These garments, just as few as the law will allow, consisting of brief skirts, or loin cloths or wrappings about the body, they take off and wash while their bodies are partly concealed under the water. They then rerobe themselves and go out to dry upon shore. This process of bathing and laundering all at one time, while novel, combines economy and cleanliness and is peculiar to the orientals.

## SMOKING AND DRINKING.

Burmah is the home of the cigar. Nearly all the people, men, women and children, smoke it. Nowhere are cigars as cheap, or as large. The tobacco is of a gentle quality, much milder than the Havana, and of good flavor. It does not contain the bitter nicotine of American tobacco. The cigarettes are something enormous, being six inches long and an inch in diameter, and to see girls and children puffing these huge tobacco sticks is something ludicrous. Cigars are smaller than cigarettes, being not much larger than an American cigarette and can be bought for a half cent each. This is a paradise for the smoker. Of course no one smokes a pipe where cigars are so cheap. There is but little drinking of intoxicants. It is said that formerly drunkenness was punishable with death in Burmah. Whether this penalty or public sentiment has caused it the fact is that they are a temperate people, in marked and humiliating contrast with their presumably civilized foreign residents, who drink about three times as much here as they do at home. For instance, on this steamer there are less than a dozen Europeans and Americans, and about a thousand Burmese. I have not observed an intoxicated native, while at least two of the foreign passengers have been uproariously drunk. It will thus be understood how hard a time the missionary has in converting a people who are given such practical contradiction of the missionary's teachings by the missionary's own countrymen.

## THE VIEW FROM THE RIVER.

I started out to tell of the spectacular scenery along the river. It runs through a region both flat and mountainous, overspread with tropical forests and dotted here and there with the prim-

itive bamboo villages of the natives. There is a haze in the atmosphere and a stillness suggestive of a Missouri Indian summer. Swarms of ducks and geese and other water fowl are frightened from the river by the steamer, above which they circle in graceful curves to resume their abode in the water when the steamer shall have passed. But the striking and wonderful feature is that the river banks are constantly lined with pagodas. For the whole four hundred miles there is not a moment when we are not out of sight of them; not near to the river only, but upon the summits of the mountains as far as the eye can reach, these stately and beautiful architectural piles, some of color of gold, others red, but the vast majority pure white, lift themselves in classic beauty and give a charm to the scene that cannot be described. They are of divers shapes. Most of them are of the tentlike form observed in those at Rangoon and Mandalay, but others look more like mausoleums or cathedrals, and some have the appearance of castles. All are terraced and terminate in a spire at the top. In their vicinity may occasionally be seen images of Buddha, and of large lions or other figures, and moving about near them are the yellow robed Buddhist priests, whose striking garb contrasts pleasingly with the white pagodas and the verdure.

#### A CITY OF PAGODAS.

Midway between Mandalay and Rangoon lies the well-named city of Pagan, a veritable city of pagodas. It is said to contain nearly ten thousand, and from its size one is prepared to believe the statement. It is located in a bend of the river. Our steamer lay there at night, arrived at two o'clock in the morning and we left at six. For over an hour we were passing the city and the spectacle of this wilderness of architecture under the burnishing

rays of the rising sun was one of bewildering beauty. One had to rub his eyes to be sure that he was not dreaming or had not been translated to one of the periods of mediaeval or ancient history, or to a scene of the Arabian nights. The structures were of all sizes and colors and divers shapes but all gave evidence of high, even classic, architectural skill and taste. What adds to the interest and weirdness of the city is that it is practically deserted. There are no business or dwelling houses, the population that it contains being only what is termed "servants of the pagodas," people engaged in looking after the structures, or having connection with the Buddhist religious ceremonies. Many of the pagodas are said to have subterranean passages which are thought to have been built as secret retreats from the whims of a brutal king who now and then took it into his head to order some of the people slain for his amusement. The city was once the capital of Burmah, but when it ceased to be it was also no longer a commercial center and has gradually been abandoned. It is of ancient origin, how ancient no one seems to know, possibly thousands of years. Nearly all of the pagodas along the Irrawaddy are very old, a fact which adds to their interest. It is said that but few new ones are being built, which is significant of the decline of Buddhism, although ninety per cent of the population still profess that faith.

#### TWO ANCIENT RELICS OF HUGE PROPORTIONS.

These splendid memorials of the past convey impressive lessons of the civilization of a period which is popularly supposed to have been an age of barbarism. No finer architecture, no higher sense of the aesthetic, no deeper reverence of things sacred exists today. While the physical labor exerted in the erection of these remarkable edifices may be explained by the fact that it was

within the power of sovereigns to command their subjects without limit to work upon them, and that an even greater impelling force, that of an ignorant religious superstition led them to feel that thereby they purchased immunity from post-mortem punishment, yet the skill and culture displayed in their conception and construction can only be accounted for upon the ground that there was an initiative genius and culture. There are other evidences of this higher civilization than that evinced in the pagodas. Near Mandalay there is the largest bell in the world, the Minguon bell. It weighs ninety tons, is thirty-one feet high and fifty-four feet in circumference at its base. It was built in 1790 by direction of King Bodopayo and is in good preservation. In Mandalay is a statue of Buddha in sitting posture, as are all Buddha statues. It is carved out of one solid block of alabaster. It is twenty-one feet wide by thirty-seven and one-half feet high, and extends ten feet into the ground. The foot is seven and one-half feet long and the forefinger, ear and nose are four and one-half feet each. At Pegu there is a statue of Buddha 180 feet long by 45 feet broad. There are many other similar illustrations of the genius and skill of these people. Exhumations are developing many works of rare interest and value.

#### THE HOMES AND AVOCATIONS.

The wretched little hovels, mere bamboo "shacks," with little more than a roof and four thin walls, the homes of the people in the rural districts, as seen from the river, are in striking contrast with the classic pagodas which lie near by. The people live in abject poverty. The almost universal avocation is agriculture, the culture of rice. The farm implements are those that have been in use for thousands of years. We have not seen

a farm house in Burmah which would be considered fit for the poorest Missouri farmer, and the village homes are no better than those in the country. The little shops and stores are mere open sheds with articles of merchandise scattered about in the utmost confusion. Cattle are raised in large numbers. Great droves of them can be seen from the steamer as they are brought to the water's edge to drink. They are of the color, size and shape of the Jersey. There are no cattle to compare in size with the American Shorthorn or Hereford. The sheep and goats have the same dwindled appearance. The live stock is as much inferior to that of America as the people are to the people of America.

#### OIL.

Burmah is the one country of the orient into which the Standard Oil Company has been unable to effect an entrance, although it has made vigorous and repeated efforts to do so. But Burmah has oil of her own, and an oil company relatively as strong as the Standard. Their wells and tanks may be observed along the river, where they divide honors with the pagodas upon the mountain tops. The quality of oil is good and it is piped hundreds of miles to Rangoon, where it is exported to other lands. It is about the biggest business in Burmah.

#### RANGOON.

Rangoon is the most prosperous city we have seen in Southern Asia, if not in the orient. It is a rival if not a superior to Hankow or Shanghai. It contains over two hundred and fifty thousand people, has all modern conveniences, as electric lights, tramways, water supply, and the best wooden paved streets we have seen. Its park is a thing of beauty, a poem of lawn and



lake and coral driveway. We attended a concert there one afternoon, and the handsome equipages and well dressed people would have done credit to any American or European city. A fine band was playing. Just as we arrived it was rendering Dixie, Marching Through Georgia and Yankee Doodle. We removed our hats as these familiar strains brought back memories of our home, from which we are at the most remote distance we will be upon our way around. It provoked a qualm of homesickness, but it also made us feel at home and honored and pleased to feel that these melodies of our beloved land were known and enjoyed in this far-away part of the world. We would like to say more of Rangoon, of its churches, its colleges and schools, its prison, its manufactories, its business establishments, and its shipping, for it is the third port in India. But we have given already more space than we should have done to Burmah. For we recall that there are other countries to come.

But I cannot close these letters without acknowledgment of our indebtedness to some of those who have been so kind and attentive to us here and have made our visit such a pleasant one. Among these Rev. and Mrs. W. F. Armstrong have been unremitting in their attentions. At their home we were given a reception and dinner where we had the pleasure of meeting the members of the faculty of Rangoon Baptist College and their wives and several other American residents. Nowhere have we met a more refined and agreeable company. President and Mrs. Hicks, of Rangoon College, and their charming daughter, Miss Alice, have entertained us beautifully and the managers of the Baptist Mission Press, a large and flourishing publishing establishment, employing 240 people, have been very courteous and kind.

The students of the Rangoon Baptist College, over a thousand in number, gave us a cordial reception and made our last day in Rangoon one of the memorable days in our world tour.





*HOW WOMEN ARE MADE BURDEN BEARERS IN INDIA  
Each Woman Is Carrying Plank Weighing Over 120 Pounds*

#### XXXIV.

#### FROM THE SUMMIT OF THE EARTH.

DARJEELING, INDIA, March 21, 1908.

Owing to our delay in other countries we have reached India two months later than was planned. It is becoming quite hot. It will be necessary to hasten our tour through the country before the heat becomes unbearable. India is not regarded safe for the unacclimated later than the middle of April. The character of the country renders a swift tour practicable. While it is spectacular it is interesting only in spots, and there are not a great many of the spots. Most of these we find we can easily cover in three weeks. We have been in the land but four days, but have visited two of the best known points, Calcutta and Darjeeling. Tomorrow we go to Benares, thence to Agra, Delhi, Jeypore, Bombay and Colombo, whence we will sail for Port Said, Egypt, on April 10.

This letter is written from the extreme north of India, on the boundary line between that country and Thibet, in the heart of Asia and in the Himalaya mountains. Near by is a range of the highest mountains in the world.

We came from Rangoon to Calcutta by British India steamer. The distance is about eight hundred miles. Calcutta is situated on the Hoogley river, one hundred and twenty-five miles from the Bay of Bengal. We entered the river at its mouth where it is very wide, made so by the Ganges and the Bramah Putra emptying into it not far above. It is another river which is similar to the Missouri in that it has many shifting quicksands, and the skill of expert pilots, paid \$5,000 and \$6,000 salaries, is required to successfully steer its steamers. Jungles line its banks

and we are told are infested by tigers, elephants, leopards and other fierce animals. Before we reach Calcutta are miles of brick yards indicating the proximity of a great city. Calcutta itself contains over a million people, a vast majority natives. There are about 30,000 foreigners. It has many manufactories, but is not specially attractive or noteworthy. Its streets are broad, and there are fine business buildings. There are not many handsome residences. There are several large parks not specially ornamental, but liberally supplied with statues of Englishmen of civil and military note who have been conspicuous in subjugating and governing India. Their presence strikes one as a kind of red rag or "rubbing-it-in" to the natives, who are thus perpetually reminded of their humiliation. The governmental building, occupied by the English viceroy, the postoffice and the palace of the Indian Maharajah are handsome structures. But a large part of the city, that occupied by the natives, is a mere mass of wretched hovels.

#### THE POPULATION.

The governing class and the principal business people are English, and there are many modern business establishments. The English give evidences of prosperity. In their dress, equipages and appearance they are fully equal to the commercial element to be seen in London. But the natives for the most part are very poor. They have the scantiest dress. Native women are rarely seen in public, and when visible are wretchedly clad, despairing and degraded. The woman is a mere beast of burden in India, the slave of man who does not recognize her as worthy to sit at meat with him. The greatest disgrace that can befall a human being is to be born a female, and no indignity or burden is considered too grievous to be put upon her. This is especially true of the Hindu sect of religionists whose creed is said to be

so hazy and so variously interpreted that no one can be found who can tell what it is. They have a definite and uniform creed as to women. And yet they consider a cow sacred. A Hindu when asked if there was any one thing upon which the Hindus agreed, answered that there were two, the sanctity of the cow and the depravity of woman. The dress of the lower order of the Indian men has been described as a towel around the head and a handkerchief about the loins. Many are black as coal, but they are lithe and active and have a springy, elastic movement peculiar to themselves. The women have a penchant for tawdry jewelry, which they wear in great profusion in their ears, nose, around their necks, wrists and ankles. Some of these ornaments are huge and grotesque, and the wearer looks like a traveling jewelry store of the cheaper class. The native stores are wretched little junk shops. The wages paid the coolie class are beggarly. A gentleman who operates a tea farm of 2,000 acres, said that he had 5,000 coolies in his employ to whom he paid six cents per day. But they only work three hours a day, the heat making it impracticable for them to work longer. What would be thought of two cents an hour for laborers in America? Most of the laborers are densely ignorant, more so than the American negro. The impression made upon a stranger is that the English government is pursuing a policy of repression with its Indian subjects, to keep them in a perpetual state of peonage and serfdom.

#### ZOOLOGICAL GARDEN.

One of the attractions of Calcutta is its Zoological Garden. It is probably the finest collection of tropical animals in the world. Tigers, leopards, hippopotamuses, hyenas, deer, snakes, monkeys,



birds of every tropical variety and of the finest specimens are in its collection. The most interesting are a huge rhinoceros, the largest in the world, a brace of white browed gibbon monkeys, who yell very like human beings and are quite similar to the lower order of negro, the tropical birds and the reptiles.

#### THE LARGEST TREE IN THE WORLD.

All of us who studied geography will recall the picture of Calcutta's celebrated Banyan tree. We are told that it is the largest tree in the world. It has not the hugest trunk, but it covers more ground. We visited it, and regard it as great a curiosity as any one thing we have seen. It is 139 years old, has fifty different stems or roots, is a hundred feet high and a thousand feet in circumference. We measured the diameter of the space over which its branches spread and found it to be 330 feet. The trunk of the main stem five feet from the ground is over fifty feet in circumference. Its branches project themselves in all directions, entwine about neighboring stems like serpents, or dropping downward take root in the ground. It is a curious growth and there seems to be no reason why it should not grow much larger, as it does not depend for life upon a single stem, but can project an illimitable number into the ground.

#### HINDU WORSHIP AND FILTH.

A large majority of the native population are devout Hindus. One of the sights of Calcutta is to witness them bathing in the river in the early morning. Stone steps lead down to the river brink and here each morning thousands, with only a cloth about the loins, come down to bathe and to gather some of the water into brass jars and to pray. The worshippers stand in the water

with their faces towards the sun, and with their open hands, the thumbs and fingers touching and projected in front of them utter their prayers. Some of them drink this filthy water into which the sewage of the city flows and which receives the garbage from the ships on the shore. Then they carry it off in the brass bowls to drink at home. They regard the water of the Hoogley river as of the Ganges, sacred. There is little wonder that cholera and the bubonic plague are decimating the population by millions annually. The wonder is that more do not die, when in addition to the filthy habit of worship there is added the indescribable uncleanness of the hovels they call homes. They huddle together like animals upon dirt floors, and sleep on matting that is rarely changed. The average native can discount even the Chinaman in the matter of filth.

#### BURNING THE DEAD.

The Hindus and many Buddhists cremate all their dead. A short distance from where they take the morning bath and go through with their worship is a burning ghat, where all their dead are burned. It is an open shed in which fires are burning day and night, looking like piles of fence rails or cord wood aflame. The body is laid upon a pile of wood and then more wood is piled upon it. The torch is applied by the nearest relative of the deceased and in the presence of the relatives and friends the body is burned. The attending relatives do not give any exhibition of grief, but stand by curious spectators, while the grewsome holocaust is in progress. The morning we visited the place the body of an old man and of an infant were being burned in close proximity. The relatives were standing by laughing and talking and acting as though they were looking

upon the consuming of animals. The man in charge, a big yellow complected Hindu, informed us that an average of thirty-five bodies were burned within every twenty-four hours, and that rich and poor, high and low alike were committed to the flames. The ashes are thrown into the river. Mingling with its sacred waters they are thought to have better prospects for a satisfactory transmigration of the soul into another form after death.

#### THE BLACK HOLE OF CALCUTTA.

Every visitor to Calcutta who has read history visits the spot where, during the siege of the city by the British on June 20, 1756, one hundred and forty-six British men, women and children, were confined in a hole in the ground fourteen feet ten inches by eighteen feet. Only twenty-three came out alive. The others died of suffocation. It was one of the most horrible affairs in history. The spot is near the postoffice, was appropriately covered with black marble and marked by an inscription by Lord Curzon in 1901.

#### MUSEUM.

There is in Calcutta one of the finest museums in the world. Its collection of statuary, or parts of ruined buildings and of pottery indicates an ancient genius and skill equal to anything found in Rome or Greece. No other museum we have seen has so many, varied and interesting specimens of the mammalia, while its display of wood and ivory carving, of embroidery, and brass, porcelain and lacquer work, all by modern artisans, is unsurpassed. The museum is one of the sights of the orient.

## IN THE HIMALAYAS.

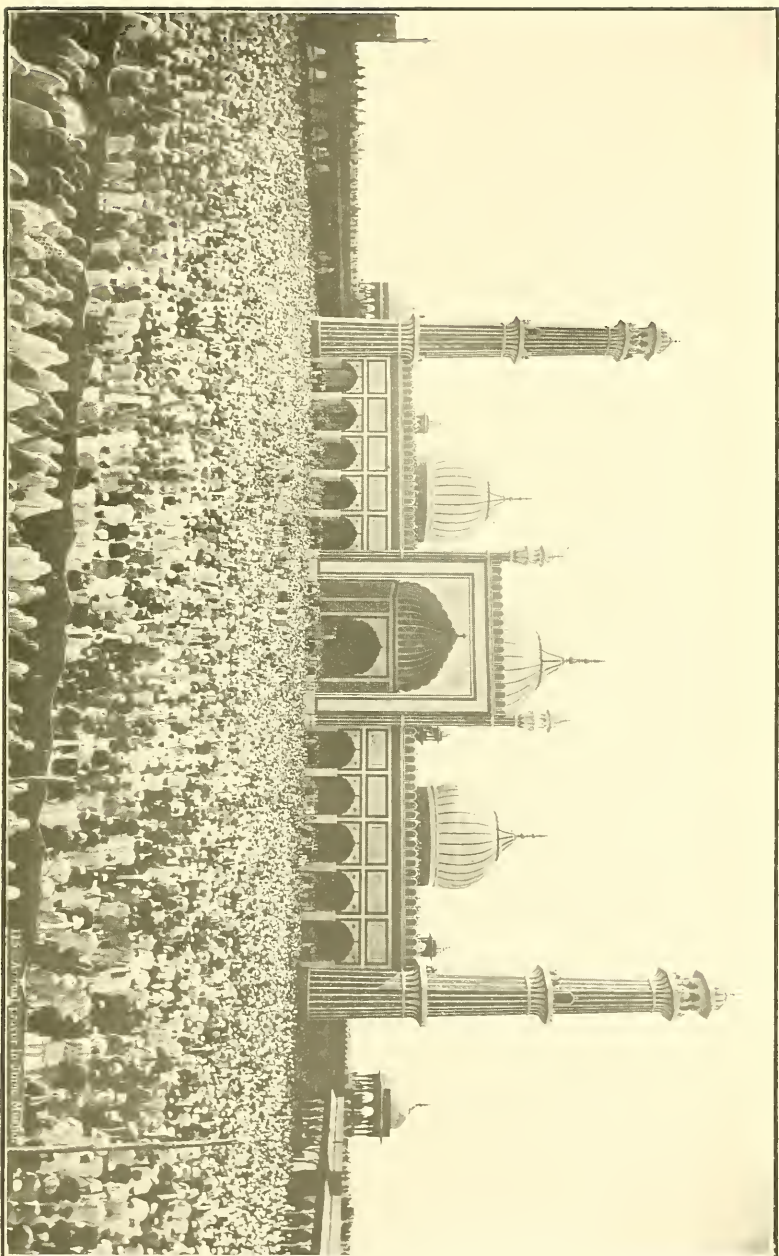
This letter is written from the heart of the Himalayas, the highest mountain range in the world. Beside it the Rocky mountains of America are foot hills. From this hotel there can be seen any clear day twelve mammoth peaks, the lowest of which is as high as Pike's Peak and two of the largest are twice as high. One of them, Everest, is the highest mountain in the world, attaining the enormous altitude of 29,000 feet. Their snow-capped summits, as they rise in noble majesty towards the sky present a picture of grandeur to be seen nowhere else upon the earth's surface. No human being, so far as is known, has ever scaled their lofty heights. In 1905 six Europeans, and several natives, made the attempt, but one European and three natives were overwhelmed by an avalanche of snow and perished, while three others to whom they were attached by ropes barely escaped. A daring woman, Dr. Fanny Workman and her husband, made the effort, but after reaching 22,000 feet, were compelled to turn back. A year or two ago two brave Norwegians got within fifty feet of the summit of Mount Kangchenjunge, next to Everest the tallest of the range, but they were forced to return, badly frost-bitten. To witness a sunrise upon these monster mountains is awe-inspiring beyond description. As the brilliant rays of the sun gild their snow-crowned summits they first seem to be a fringe of gold, which as the sun rises higher changes to silver, and when it blazes in its full power upon them they glitter like diamonds. No material scene in the world so impresses the beholder with the wondrousness of nature's achievements or the glory of nature's God.

## DARJEELING.

This town of Darjeeling lies upon the mountain side, and extends down into its deep defiles in a most picturesque manner. There is almost a fierceness in the scenery of the Himalayas, surpassing that to be seen in any other mountainous region. Added to its natural beauty and grandeur are its artificial attractiveness, the works wrought by man, the tasteful hotels, residences, temples and public buildings of brilliant hues and artistic architecture, the broad and splendid roads, and adorning it all the fantastic and gaudy costume of the people. The Thibetans pour in by the thousand. Their half-savage dress and manners, their strong individuality and their curious handicraft make them a distinct race from that of any other in the orient. The town is the summer resort of Europeans residing in India and a favorite Mecca of tourists. The hotels are excellent, the climate delightful and there are few spots in the world more interesting than this gem of the Himalayas.

## THE TRIP TO DARJEELING.

It is four hundred miles from Calcutta, and is reached by rail. En route the Ganges, the sacred river of India, is crossed. There is no bridge across it. It has sandy banks and bottom and at this point is a mile wide. Passengers are conveyed over it by boat. We reached there at night and we do not remember to have had a more weird experience than was our passage across this historic stream. The shore is lined by jungle, infested by all manner of wild beasts. The steamer turned its searchlight upon the stream and shore. When we recalled the superstition of the people in regard to the river, how they once sacrificed their infants in its waters, and even yet regard death in it or upon its



*JAMMA MOSQID—In Delhi—One of the Largest Mohammedan Mosques in the  
World—Fifteen Thousand Worshippers*





banks a sure passport to Heaven, and then looked out upon the shore, made ghostly and uncanny in the stillness of the night by the searchlight from the steamer, we felt grewsome indeed. The railroad pursues its way through a dense jungle, the abode of all manner of wild beasts. It is related as an actual fact that at one time a herd of wild elephants blocked the track and compelled the train to back. Fifty miles from Darjeeling we reach the mountains, where we take a narrow-gauge road, which runs up the range describing curves and loops and running along precipices of thousands of feet in height in a most daring manner. It is one of the finest pieces of engineering in the world, and must have cost an enormous amount of money. The grade is very steep. It attains its highest altitude at Goom, near Darjeeling, which is 7,045 feet above the sea level and is said to be the highest point occupied by any railroad station on earth.

## XXXV.

### TRAVELING THROUGH INDIA.

ON THE TRAIN IN INDIA, March 23, 1908.

We are making a trip of over twenty-five hundred miles by rail through India. As railroad travel in that country is different from that to be had elsewhere some description of it may be of interest. There are in India 30,286 miles of railway. The trains are long, make good speed, and run on time. There is rarely an accident. The engines are small and have no bells, but whistles of unearthly shrillness that would wake the dead. There are three classes of cars, first, second and third. Royalty, Americans and fools travel first class, ordinary Europeans and foreign residents second-class, and natives third class. Rates are about three cents for first class, two cents for second and one cent or less for third. The second and third class are divided into compartments, and the natives are crowded in like cattle. They are plain and dirty. All cars are entered from the side. The first class are divided into two compartments, each compartment being for four persons. There are lavatories between or at the ends of the compartments and in some there is a narrow space cut off for a servant, who is a necessary adjunct to all foreign tourists. There is a long seat along each of the four walls of the two compartments, which travelers sit upon in the day time and sleep upon at night. Above is a swinging shelf which is folded up against the wall and ceiling in the daytime and let down and used as an upper berth at night. All passengers must supply their own bedding, which needs to be only a blanket and pillow, and also their own soap and towels. If wise they will take along a box of ice and a bountiful supply

of soda water, for no one dares to drink the water to be obtained along the route. Also a supply of fruit and several boxes of crackers and sardines are advisable for an emergency. The beds are comfortable. The heat is such that even a blanket is rarely needed except about six o'clock in the morning, about the time an industrious Missourian feels like getting up. The cars are not as handsome as in America, but in their isolation and independence are preferable. Six people may reserve a whole car without additional expense. If you can manage to have a congenial party of six, as we have had, you can feel like Mr. Hariman in a car of his own, or a United States senator traveling at government expense. The car is all right on the inside, but its wheels and trucks and the railroad track are something fearful. The noise is nearly as great as a threshing machine, and the jostling and bumping is almost like a Missouri farm wagon. Conversation is hardly possible by reason of the noise, and is not desired on account of the bumping. In the daytime passengers sit and look at each other in blank helplessness. At night only a narcotic or extreme weariness is sufficient to woo slumber. There are dining cars or station restaurants with fairly good food. The heat during our tour is becoming intense. You may not believe it, but I have three trustworthy women and two reliable men as witnesses that a thermometer in our car registered one day for several hours, while the train was in motion, one hundred and ten degrees in the shade. In the sun during nearly all of our stay in India the mercury has stood at from 156 to 161 degrees. The heat is dry, or we would perish. The wind is like the blast from a furnace. The sun's rays are something awful.

## SERVANTS.

A servant, who also is a guide, is absolutely necessary. It matters not how smart one may regard himself he will have all of his conceit eliminated after one day's experimental effort at traveling unaided in India. Even if he could speak the language, which he cannot, for it changes as often as the trains, he could not manage the baggage and tickets and hotels and coolies and a hundred other things. He would be a maniac in three days. We have a guide and a good one. His name is V. N. Theaygoraya Mudahar. We call him "Rya" for short. He excites our perpetual wonder. His ability to handle baggage and coolies, and railroad and hotel people, at a minimum expense, is little short of the marvelous. He gets us everywhere we wish to go on time, never misses a connection or loses a grip (and we have fourteen), preserves his temper and is never in a hurry. We realize how helpless we would be without him. And yet he costs us including his expenses but little over a dollar a day. He was the guide of Mr. W. E. Curtis, correspondent of the Chicago News-Herald when in India, and who we find knew many good things. By the way, the relation of master and servant in India is about what it was in America in the days of slavery. It is one of command and obedience, strictly, and not only the real master, but all foreigners are addressed by the natives as "master."

One of the novel spectacles about the hotels is the presence of numbers of these servants who accompany tourists. Every traveler has one, who is his valet, polishes his shoes, performs all necessary chores and service, and sleeps upon the floor in the corridor in front of his room. They are personally honest. In all our travels, although we leave our doors unlocked and our

baggage opened we have never missed an article. They are moral, temperate and respectful. They are all natives. The lines of social demarkation between them and Europeans and Americans are as clearly drawn as in America between the whites and negroes, even more so. I have felt indignation as I have witnessed the maltreatment of them by Europeans.

#### THE HOTELS.

Before visiting India we had heard from tourists much condemnation of its hotels. But we are not prepared to join in these complaints. While the hotels are not equal to those in America they are fairly comfortable, the proprietors or managers are obliging and the rates are more moderate than they were in Japan, China or the Straits Settlements. Beef is tough, but mutton and chicken fairly good. How we do long for a good cup of coffee and the sight of a real, meritorious, productive Missouri cow. We have not had a drink of milk since we left Honolulu, while we have quit water altogether. We have drunk soda and charged waters until we have almost turned into minerals. We hear on all sides that the water is dangerous. The presence of so much bubonic plague and cholera renders it unsafe to drink or eat anything that might be contaminated. The rooms and bedding in the hotels are clean, and are supplied with mosquito bars and punkahs or fans to keep the air in motion. These are pulled by coolies who for a rupee, thirty-three cents, will keep one in motion over your bed all night. The worst feature about hotels is the abominable system of tipping. If a coolie hands you a drink of water or picks up a handkerchief you have dropped he begins to bow and scrape, meaning he wants pay. But from this evil also we find our guide a great protection.

## THE FACE OF THE COUNTRY.

With the exception of ranges of mountains along its northern and western frontiers and in a few other isolated points India is one vast, dead level, monotonous plain. In some places it is fertile, but for the most part it is barren and desolate without a blade of grass or other nutritive vegetation. It looks very like Arizona and New Mexico. There are no fences and apparently no farms. It seems to be a vast wilderness. There is more forest than in Japan and China. As in those countries, there is scarcely any rural population, the people living in the little wretched mud-walled, straw-covered aggregations of huts called villages. Rice is apparently the chief product. Wheat and cotton are grown in large quantities, while the soil produces all the ordinary vegetables. But the fruits are limited and of poor quality. It is a wretched, poverty-stricken, heathenish, benighted country, and bears evidence of having made no progress for thousands of years. The ox and water buffalo are the only beasts of burden. Yokes of them hitched to little carts, or drawing primitive plows are seen all over the empire, but a good horse or mule is to be found nowhere except in the stables of the well paid English officials or the local Maharajahs. If there is a fine dwelling or a prosperous farm in India outside the vicinity of the great cities it is not near the railroad lines, while the evidences of abject poverty among the millions who swarm the country are upon all sides. Looking from a railroad train one sees a picture like this: Large flocks of goats led as in Bible times by a goatherd, trains of sluggish camels, droves of poorly fed cattle, men digging in the ground, or plowing with oxen, or reaping rice and wheat with most primitive implements, or bearing burdens on their heads, or pumping water with oxen from wells to irrigate the earth, or begging by the wayside. The

men are almost without clothes, and the women are pitiable pictures. Nothing could be more pathetic than the condition of woman in India. She is not only the burden bearer, but man's slave. She is not regarded worthy of an education, and some do not believe she has a soul. It is no uncommon spectacle to see strong men along the highway without any loads upon their shoulders, while women trudge along heavily burdened. In Darjeeling I counted fourteen plank eight feet long and weighing over a hundred pounds which were being borne by a little woman not over five feet in height. And her aged mother came along bearing an equal burden. I had the scene photographed and intend to have it printed.

#### THE FAMINE.

It makes one sick at heart to travel through India at this time as he witnesses the scenes of distress which everywhere meet his eyes. One hundred and fifty thousand square miles of territory, with a population of fifty millions, has not had a drop of rain for seven months, and the condition is pitiable. I have seen hundreds and thousands of these poor creatures toiling along the highways with their flocks and herds and their household effects borne upon their heads going into the cities seeking relief. I have seen as many more gathered in herds like cattle in the villages or on the dusty plain where they slept at night with only the sky for a covering. And besides these were hordes of wretched beggars, pursuing our carriages or cars begging for pennies or for bread. India had a great famine in 1896 and another in 1899, but the present one bids fair to exceed either of those. The government has appropriated six millions of dollars obtained by taxing the people, as a relief fund. This is distributed in three ways, by



loans at three per cent per annum, by being paid as wages for work upon government utilities, and by being given outright to those who cannot help themselves. But this will not be sufficient to relieve the gaunt want, the awful despair, which hangs like a black cloud over this stricken land. I never pass a day and look into the wan faces of these wretched people that I am not filled with inexpressible sadness and pity, and the vision of them follows me to my bed at night and haunts me in my dreams. America, blessed with plenty and prosperity, has no conception of the suffering and sorrow which prevail in this land of desolation and famine.

#### DOMESTIC LIFE.

The social life is of a low order. They live in miserable houses and sleep on dirt floors. The Hindu religion teaches them not to slay animals. Rats and vermin infest their homes and communicate to them the plague. But their religion has a saving clause in that it requires them to bathe daily. This keeps their bodies clean. But they counteract this cleanliness by covering themselves with rancid butter or oil to protect them from the sun. All classes, rich and poor, eat with their fingers and sit upon the floor. Knives, forks, spoons and chairs are unknown. Their domestic lives are happy. They are affectionate. Men with their arms entwined around each other is a common sight upon the streets. While the Mohammedan religion allows to each man four wives, this being the number which Mahomet himself had, and the Hindu religion permits him to have all he wants, few have more than one. This is primarily due to the fact that few are able to provide for more than one family. The consideration is financial rather than sentimental. Marriages are arranged by



*DRINKING OUT OF COCONUTS—SNAKE CHARMERS IN INDIA*



parents exclusively. They may agree upon them when the boy and girl are babies. The marriage takes place when the girl is ten years of age. The ceremony is performed by a priest and the festivities continue for a week. The parties usually see each other for the first time when they meet on their wedding day. The girl then is put into close confinement and remains practically a prisoner in her own home until she is thirteen or fourteen years of age when she is taken to her husband and they thenceforward live together as man and wife. Children are regarded an honor and a blessing. An unfruitful marriage is a disgrace. But boys are considered a far more desirable product than girls. So averse are some parents to girls that it is believed that infanticide is committed secretly. Formerly girl babies were thrown to the crocodiles, but this is now prohibited by law. Child murder can be no longer practiced openly, as formerly by throwing babies into the Ganges, as a religious rite. The burning of widows on the funeral pyres of husbands is also now forbidden. Although woman occupies a subordinate position she seems reconciled to it, and makes no complaint.

#### THE LIFE OF THE FOREIGNERS.

There are three classes in India, the Europeans, nearly all of whom are English, the natives, and a mixture of English and natives, who are called Eurasians. The last-named occupy an equivocal position socially and politically and are a source of much disturbance. As is always true in a social condition where one element serves and the other governs the effect has been to render the English aristocratic in the proportion that the natives are degraded. Labor is so cheap that every family employs a large number of servants, one for each department, and as the English

fill nearly all the profitable official positions and have but little to do they have adopted a luxurious life, akin to that in vogue in monarchies or aristocracies. They have handsome residences, fine carriages, blooded horses richly caparisoned, liveried footmen and are quite ceremonial in social functions. At seven o'clock in the morning the gentlemen in pajamas and the ladies in morning robes, partake of a light meal of tea or coffee and toast called Choto hazi. At ten they have a regular breakfast, called burrer. At two there is luncheon, or tiffin. In the evening at eight is dinner, the chief meal at which the gentlemen appear in dress suits and the ladies in evening dress. It is an elaborate and ceremonial affair, with many courses, flowers, wine and music. This routine is followed in private homes, hotels and on shipboard. We found it difficult for a time to adjust ourselves to four meals a day and especially to the ceremonial dress suit in the evening while wearied by travel. But we have discovered that it is easier and less conspicuous and embarrassing to conform to the customs of a country than to resist them. We therefore take our four meals and wear our dress suit with the regularity and punctiliousness of an English lord.

The day dress of foreigners is chiefly pongee silk and white duck, and of the ladies white. The poor natives are all barefooted and either have on only a flowing robe which reaches to the knee and a turban if they are house servants, and only a cloth around their loins and another cloth upon their heads if they are laborers out of doors. The natives are practically the servants of the English. Even those who are rich and prosperous treat the foreigners with servile obsequiousness. The two races are as far removed from each other as the color of their skins. The English are proud and haughty, the natives humble and dejected and

spiritless. One cannot divest himself of the impression that England is crushing the life out of the people, is breaking their spirit, is not only depriving them of political power, but of social and financial as well, is binding them hand and foot with an iron military rule while it is keeping them in degradation and ignorance.

Everywhere are evidences that this was once a mighty and powerful people. The memorials of their genius in government, architecture and commerce are to be seen on all sides. And there are to be met among them thousands in rags and poverty, with the fire of intelligence in their eyes and the stamp of nobility in their bearing but out of whom hope and ambition have been driven. The more I see of India the more I am convinced that British rule of it has been the great crime of modern times. I cannot believe that the civilization and the sense of justice of mankind in these enlightened days will permit it to continue.

## XXXVI.

### BENARES, SACRED CITY OF INDIA.

BENARES, INDIA, March 25, 1908.

In writing of the wonders of India one craves the pen of inspiration. Its majestic mountain scenery, its wonderful architecture, the romantic heroism and the queer traditions of its early history, the picturesqueness of its people, the strange superstitions of its various religions, its necromancy and jugglery, its ferocious wild beasts, its gaudiness and tinsel and display, the pomp and glory of its maharajahs and its courts and armies, all these call for the descriptive vocabulary of the rhetorician or the imaginative genius of the poet. To attempt description of them in the plain parlance of the reporter or the common-place vernacular of the American globe-trotter seems sacrilege. In Darjeeling we visited a Buddhist temple in which there was a prayer-wheel. In the wheel are stuffed a large number of prayers, written upon pieces of paper by Buddhist priests who are experts at writing prayers. The ordinary worshiper turns the wheel and thus does his praying in eloquent language. It recalled the familiar story of the little boy who could not remember his evening prayer and pasted a printed copy of it at the head of his bed, and exclaimed each night: "Lord, them's my sentiments." Realizing our own inadequacy to do the subject justice we bought one of these prayer wheels, and we have felt like putting in it some of the very many glowing and florid panegyrics we have read of India, and permitting that to pass as our sentiments. But as this kind of plagiarism, while possible to the prayer of the Buddhist, and I regret to say in other form is in vogue among Christians, is not practicable to a correspondent of an American newspaper, we



will have to fall back upon our own resources and tell what we have seen in plain United States, leaving to the genius of the readers to furnish the embellishments. At last we suppose what is chiefly desired in descriptions of this kind are the facts. We have discovered that there are compensations even in not being a word-painter. For upon an examination of the real thing a comparison of the original with the description has revealed that there often is a sad lack of resemblance. The magician in language has permitted his imagination to get the better of his conscience, and his word-painting to run away with the truth. Finally one begins to congratulate himself that facts and not fancy are the only assets at his command. Therefore we beg our readers to bear with the poverty of our rhetoric in the consolation that it at least will embody the truth.

#### INDIA'S SACRED CITY.

Two hundred miles northwest of Calcutta, in the heart of the empire, lies Benares, the sacred city of India. What Mecca is to the Mohammedan, what Jerusalem is to the Christian, Benares is to the Hindu, and even more. For while the Christian may date the origin of his religion from Jerusalem he attaches no sacred significance to the city itself. For three thousand years, possibly longer, a thousand years before the crucifixion of the Saviour of men, even before Solomon or David or most of the prophets of the Christian's Bible lived, Benares has been to the Hindu the most sacred spot on earth, with one exception, the fountain in the Himalayas, whence flows their hallowed river, the Ganges. To tread its soil, or worship in its temples, or bathe in the Ganges, upon whose shore it stands, or to die within its environs is in his belief sure passport to eternal bliss. Millions visit it every year,

bathe in its sacred waters and carry them many miles to their homes. Invalids are borne or drag themselves across blazing deserts, or along dusty roads to reach this haven of their hopes and prayers, to dip their bodies in its hallowed stream, with the implicit faith that such a death insures their translation to everlasting happiness. During all these thousands of years these miserable creatures have been held in the grasp of this horrible superstition. Notwithstanding the steady and determined march of Christian missions hundreds of millions are as firmly within its toils today as ever in the past.

#### ITS SITUATION, SIZE AND APPEARANCE.

The city contains nearly two hundred and forty thousand inhabitants. Of these over 225,000 are Hindus, 12,000 are Mohammedans and less than fifty are Europeans. There is at least one Mohammedan mosque. There are but few Buddhists, although Buddha's tomb lies within a few miles, and here he began his ministry over five hundred years before the Christian era. The city is reached by rail, as well as by many public highways, and the railroad bridge spans the Ganges at the suburbs. The view of the numerous temples as the train approaches it is very imposing. Across the river is a bleak shore of sand to die upon, which, according to the belief of the Hindus is to be transformed into a monkey. The spot is regarded as having a curse upon it and is uninhabited. The Ganges at this point is not over a quarter of a mile in width, is a clear stream, with white sandy bottom and banks. The stories of its filthiness are exaggerated. The city extends for two or three miles along the river, and from its brink during a large portion of this distance flights of stone stairways ascend to rows of lofty, pinnacled temples. Down

these stairs at all hours of the day, but especially in the early morning the people come to the river to bathe. The river contains lines of craft of smaller size used chiefly in bearing the worshippers and bathers to and fro.

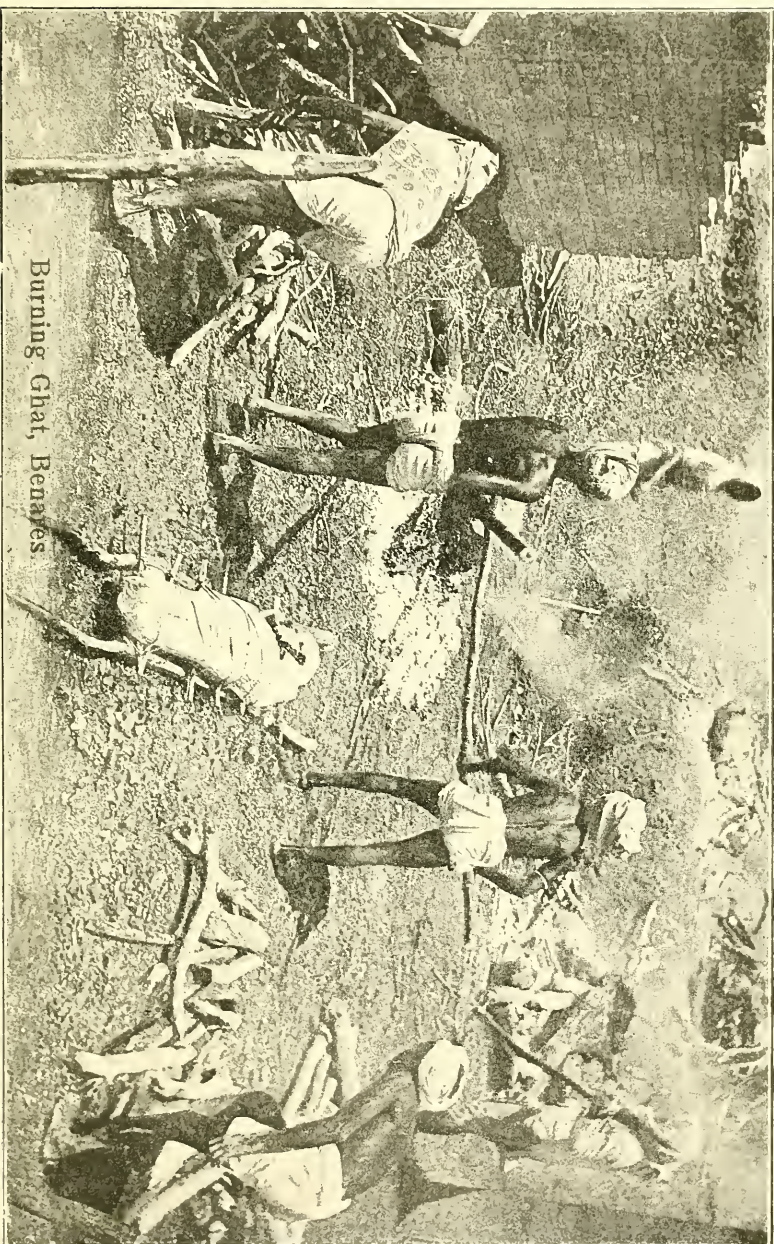
#### BATHING AND WORSHIPPING.

Securing a steam launch we sailed down the Ganges in the early morning to witness the Hindus in their ablutions and devotions. We arrived at the river a little after sunrise, but already throngs, bearing brass bowls filled with water and arrayed in bright, variegated costumes, were returning. But thousands yet remained. And such a spectacle! It can be duplicated nowhere upon the earth's surface. The throngs ascending and descending the stairways, the rising sun burnishing their brilliant dress, presented a scene of fantastic picturesqueness that cannot be described. In the river were very many more, bathing and praying, their faces turned to the sun, their eyes closed, their hands extended before them, and their lips moving in inaudible prayer. Some were drinking the water, and all before leaving filled brass bowls with the fluid, which they bore to their homes. Floating upon the stream were masses of flowers which had been thrown into it as part of their worship. Above all rose the hum of many voices, quiet and subdued, for while there was no reverential silence there was no unseemly noise. Roaming about upon platforms at intervals in the stairway were sacred cows and bulls, which were treated with deference. They evidently had the freedom of the premises. No one dares harm them. As some one has remarked it would be like kicking a congressman.

## BURNING THE DEAD.

At several points were blazing wood fires upon which dead bodies were being burned. Along the shore were huge piles of wood, which were being drawn upon continually for this cremation of the dead. The bodies of all those who die for many miles around are here burned, and as the tide of mortality is an unending one there is not an hour of the day or night when this ghastly ceremony is not in progress. Against the protest of the female members of our party we insisted upon the boat being brought near one of these burning ghats, as they are called. While some of the more tender hearted of the party sat with averted eyes, we watched the gruesome process. The relatives of the deceased person brought down the wood from a large pile some hundred feet above, and laid the sticks in transverse order until a stack about eight feet long, three feet wide and three feet high had been built, straw being scattered through it. The body, wrapped in a cloth of white, covered with white gauze was then laid upon it. It was that of a man, who was a bachelor. A huge business-like looking native attired in a turban and a loin cloth superintended the work, doing so much as if he were directing the burning of an animal. A woman, in flowing robe of white, the man's mother, timidly and evidently much affected, brought a lighted torch to the pyre, and after waving it over the head, handed it to a boy, supposedly the man's brother. The boy touched the torch to the straw. The mass quickly ignited, and within an hour all was a pile of ashes. An effigy made of straw and covered with flour paste, was cast into the flames with the body and burned. What its significance was we could not ascertain. The ashes were then thrown into the Ganges. We were told that sixteen days after each crema-





Burning Ghat, Benares.

*BURNING DEAD BODIES AT BENARES, INDIA*



tion the relatives of the deceased meet, shave off their hair and whiskers and have a feast. We saw subsequently one of these feasts in progress. In the same waters of the river where these ashes are thrown, and into which all the sewage of the city is poured the people were bathing and drinking the water and carrying it away to drink in their homes. No wonder that the city is constantly the seat of plague and cholera and many other terrible contagious diseases.

#### SNAKE CHARMERS.

Sick with these awful sights we left our boat and pushing through the dense crowd upon the terrace we were met at the top of the platform by three men with some dozen deadly snakes which they were winding about their bodies in a most hideous manner, some of the reptiles crawling about on the platforms where the men stood. Among these snakes was a python of huge diameter over ten feet in length and a cobra, a broad headed monster, half of whose body stood erect, while he projected his forked tongue and glared at his keeper in a horrible manner. The cobra is said to be the most dangerous of snakes.

#### THE GOLDEN TEMPLE.

Proceeding farther we passed fakirs, or wise men, taciturn looking hypocrites, sitting by the wayside, with open books, apparently reading and with expressions of owlsh wisdom upon their immobile countenances. Then we came to a deep filthy well, known as "the well of purification," a hole in the ground, filled with putrid water in which the people bathe, and which is ladled out by avaricious priests and sold to the people who believe it possesses divine qualities and eagerly drink it. Next



we reached the golden temple, which is the fountain head of Hinduism. It was crowded with a wretched, half-naked, motley crowd, among whom were many miserable beggars and others who looked as though they might have every loathsome disease from leprosy to smallpox. Some were worshipping brass idols of Gods, others a brass elephant, others a brass cow, until we were bewildered by the many forms of idolatry at every turn, while the stone floors flowed with grease and slime. Cows and bulls were roaming around, sleek and fat, and eating whatsoever they wished. The scene was one of indescribable filth, ignorance, superstition, wretchedness. The marvel of it all is how it is possible for such a religion as Hinduism to exist in this age of enlightenment and civilization. And yet hundreds of millions profess it. Surely some day there will be rescue for this benighted people.

#### MONKEY TEMPLE.

There is apparently no limit to the absurdities of heathen worship. In Benares is a temple tenanted by monkeys, every one of which is regarded as sacred. It is a filthy, repulsive place, and the dirty little apes, from wheezy old patriarchs, blind and covered with sores, to impudent and snarling and chattering little rascals who will snap your finger off if you are not careful, swarm the place, and eat and bound about in all sorts of fantastic ways. And yet to harm or kill one would be regarded a worse crime than murder.

#### GRAVE OF BUDDHA.

Five miles from Benares is the grave of Gautama Buddha. It is probably the largest tomb ever erected to mortal man, but

nearly all that is left of it is a huge mass of brick, all the stone work or carving having been torn away by the Mohammedans centuries ago. It is four hundred feet in circumference and several hundred feet in height. Near to it are the ruins of the first temple he built. It is a mass of debris, and is being exhumed from its burial place of several feet below the ground. From carvings and statuary that have been dug up it can be seen that it must have been a splendid structure. It is said that the British government will aid to repair the monument over Buddha. Another illustration of the methods adopted by that government to placate and appease the people, while it is squeezing the life out of them. But it is to be seen how Christian nations will receive this expenditure of money for honoring the greatest leader of heathen thought in history while there is contributed not a dollar to aid those who are endeavoring to replace the heathenism which he inaugurated with a gospel that has blessed humanity wherever it has had opportunity.

#### HEATHENISM VS. CHRISTIANITY.

It is past belief that any sane or honest man or woman can visit these scenes of heathenism, where it is exhibited in its real coloring, and be moved by other feeling than that of unutterable pity for those who are held in such awful thralldom. In contrast with this filth, ignorance, superstition and fanaticism, stands the striking, and powerful object lesson of the elevating influences of Christianity. If a day's visit to Benares will not disgust a man with heathenism and make him a Christian he is past redemption. The marvel of it all is that in this day of Christian civilization Hinduism can exist at all.

## XXXVII.

### INDIAN MASSACRES AND BRITISH RULE IN INDIA.

LUCKNOW, INDIA, March 27, 1908.

No cities in the world recall more tragic tales of horror than do Lucknow and Cawnpore. In them in 1857 at the time of the Indian uprising against the British soldiers and residents frightful massacres occurred, the details of which are familiar to all readers of modern history. Because the British soldiers in various ways made light of the Hindu religion the natives without warning rose in revolt and in Cawnpore butchered in cold blood over a thousand British soldiers and citizens, including many women and children. In Lucknow many were also slain before rescue reached them. The murders at Cawnpore were a diabolical act of treachery. The foreigners had surrendered to Nana Sahib, the leader of the mutiny with the promise of protection. But as soon as they were placed upon boats in the Ganges ostensibly to be taken to Allahabad for safety the monster ordered them to be fired upon. All were slain but one boat load, and two hundred others who were brought back to the city, locked up in two rooms twenty feet long by ten feet wide without beds or even straw to lie upon. They were given one meal a day of coarse food, and after fifteen days of gradual starvation were called out in squads and hacked to pieces. The scene of this awful tragedy in Cawnpore is memorialized by a beautiful white marble statue of an angel, upon which are inscribed these words: "These are they which came out of great tribulation." The monument is said to be upon the site of a well into which the bodies of 250 of the victims were thrown.

At Lucknow the small British force under Sir Henry Lawrence, who was slain during the siege, made a stubborn resistance to 30,000 Sepoys, and after several months of terrible suffering in which many soldiers and foreign residents were slain, the remnant was rescued, first by Sir Henry Havelock and afterwards by Sir Colin Campbell, whose arrival when hope had nearly expired, was hailed by the familiar song, "The Campbells are coming," these having been the words of encouragement which kept alive the hopes of the sufferers during the weary months of waiting. The regiment was called "The Campbells," in honor of their leader. The ruins of the shot-riddled fort yet remain. They are covered with ivy, but plainly indicate the fearful bombardment. Memorials in honor of the two thousand victims and their gallant leader have been erected, and few places in the world possess more historic interest, especially to Englishmen. Lucknow is now a large and beautiful city, with many handsome buildings, public and private. It has broad streets, beautiful parks, a thriving foreign population and one can hardly imagine it was once the scene of one of the most terrible catastrophes of history. At Delhi also there was a similar uprising when many residents were slain. The cashmere gate which was blown up by Gen. Nicholson and his regiment of rescuers, the bullet-riddled dome of St. James' church and the memorial building upon the ridge overlooking Delhi, all these are shown visitors as vestiges of the massacre and siege at Delhi, which was as bloody as those at Cawnpore or Lucknow.

The rebellion was finally suppressed, and the natives have been made to pay dearly for it. Instead of the 20,000 English troops stationed in India at the time of the mutiny, there are now over sixty thousand in addition to 150,000 natives, upwards of

200,000 in all. At Lucknow alone there are 4,000 and there is scarcely an important city or town that has not its quota of English troops. England has made up her mind not to be caught napping again. While there is probably not the danger now of revolt there was then, it is plain that there is much discontent among the natives and their religious fanaticism is scarcely less unreasoning than it was fifty years ago.

While there can be no palliation for these awful massacres the fact remains that England's treatment of this country has not been dictated by considerations of judgment, or justice or unselfishness. It originally acquired the territory purely as a commercial scheme. It has held it by force, and has disregarded and ignored the deep-seated and ancient beliefs and traditions of the people. However misguided the natives may be they are swayed by a religious fanaticism which has been the outgrowth of many centuries, and it cannot be eradicated by force.

They feel that the country is their own, was transmitted to them by their ancestors, and has been wrongfully wrested from them. It has been taken for selfish purposes and held by an immense standing army, which the people themselves are taxed a hundred millions of dollars a year to maintain. They have been ground by taxation. They have seen most of the positions of their civil service pass into the hands of an alien race, while educational facilities for qualifying their own people for public service have been afforded them in only the most meager manner. The hypocritical policy of maintaining in nominal power at enormous salaries an army of Maharajahs, while their English "advisers" play them like puppets, does not deceive the people, most of whom, famine and plague-stricken, are sinking more deeply year by year in poverty and ignorance. It is no wonder that the people are in a

state of turbulent unrest, ready at any moment to rise in open rebellion. Unless England changes its methods it is liable to have repetitions of Lucknow and Cawnpore on enlarged scales.

Nor can people be weaned from their religion, however superstitious and degraded it may be, by force. Evangelization of India will not be at the point of the sword. The policy of England, with its standing army, its traffic in opium, its saloons under the names of clubs, maintained in the army at government expense, its monopoly of the best places of official position, its remorseless taxation, its inadequate provision for education, its selfish and cold-blooded commercialism, its supercilious treatment of the people as serfs, all these and other features instead of changing heathen into Christians, will make more and worse heathen. It will discredit the works of the missionary and Christianity as well.

If Great Britain in its government of India would adopt the wise, philanthropic policy which the United States has inaugurated and maintained in the Philippines it would be but a brief period before heathenism would begin to disappear in this benighted land and prosperity and intelligence would prevail where are now poverty and ignorance.

As evidence of this fact the Filipinos have made more progress in ten years under American rule than the Indians have in a hundred under British.

The reasons for these distinct conditions are fundamental. The Englishman by nature and training is aristocratic. He believes in caste. He regards colonial subjects of the British crown not as individual integers to be elevated and helped, but mere commodities to be utilized, means to an end, subjects to serve him. Their depression rather than their elevation is therefore his policy

in governing them, to keep them down and in a condition of constantly deepening inferiority.

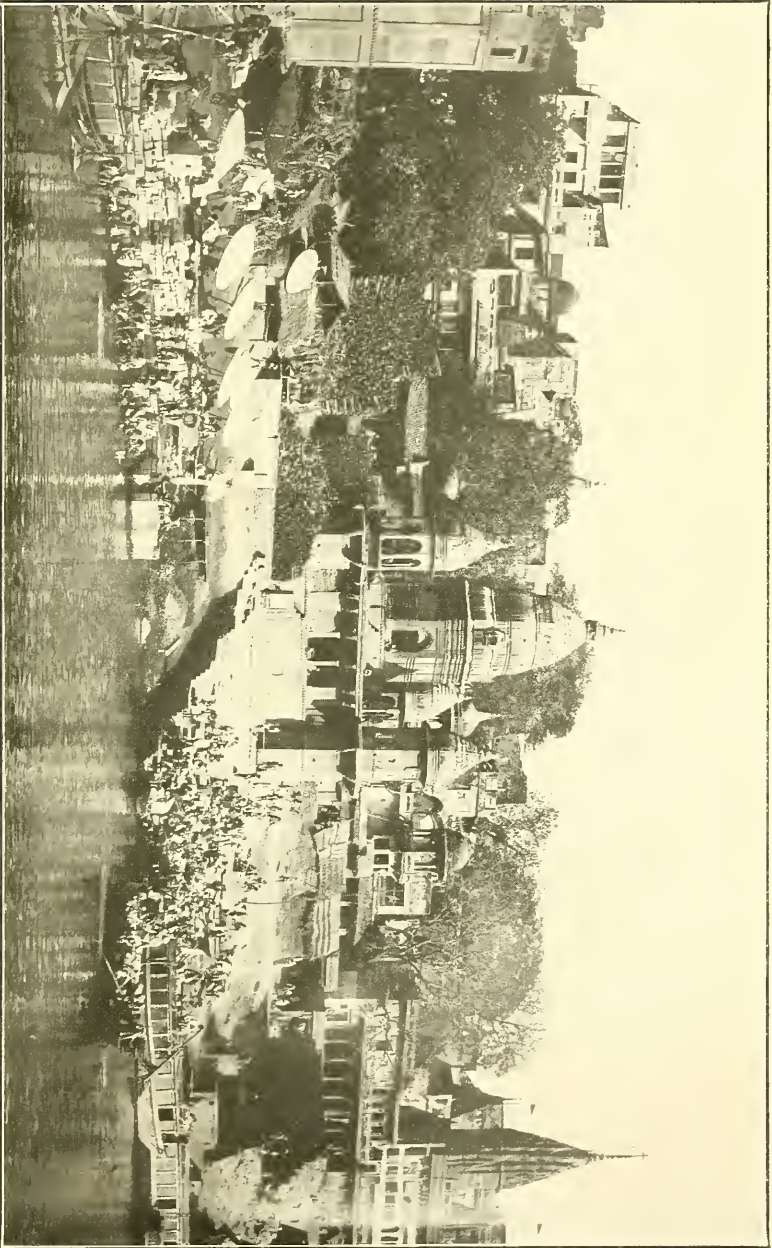
The American, on the other hand, has been trained in the school of individualism, holds to the doctrine that God created all men free and equal, and that it is the duty of government as well as individuals to lift men up rather than keep them down.

This explains India's condition at the end of a hundred years and the Philippines at the end of ten.

It will not do to assert that the Indians are less capable of elevation than the Filipinos. They are more capable. I have been among both and can speak from personal observation. The Indians are a distinctly superior race. Not only their personalities express it, but their past achievements in art and science and government prove it.

The Christian missionaries are doing a great work in India, but they are receiving no substantial encouragement from the English government or from the English people in India. In talking with many Englishmen in India, men of influence in various spheres of life, I could always count upon one response to inquiries concerning the results of Christianity in that country and that was condemnation of missionaries. Uniformly it was declared that they were doing no good and some asserted they were doing harm. The facts are that they are about the only leaven for benefiting the people that exist there. Nor do the English believe in educating the Indians. They declare that education does them more harm than good and show their faith by their works in expending six millions of dollars a year for education and one hundred millions for an army which they make the people pay. They are also expending many millions more in extravagant salaries upon official positions held by Englishmen.





*BATHING IN THE GANGES AT BENARES, THE SACRED CITY OF INDIA*



Press an Englishman to say why his country holds India and if he is candid he will admit that the chief reason is to give jobs to her unemployed subjects.

In all the history of the world we doubt if there ever was a more complicated, unintelligible effort at government than that which the English are endeavoring to operate in India. Nominally, it is an English possession. Really, it is an aggregation of petty monarchies ostensibly ruled as for centuries past by Indian chiefs, who have no actual power, but are allowed to draw enormous incomes, live in gorgeous luxury, and exercise a power that is inspired, dictated and swayed by English officials. They are empty figureheads to fool and placate the people. No two states are governed alike. There is a governor for one, a lieutenant-governor for another, a chief commissioner for another, and Maharajahs without limit for nearly all. There are wheels within wheels and confusion worse confounded. There are courts within courts, legislative councils and a great mass of machinery which nobody understands and nobody can explain. All agree upon one fact only and that is that there are plenty of offices and still more people to fill them, while the natives simply groan under the awful burden.

In the meantime the plague and famine are sweeping away the people by the million. After a hundred years England with all her money and science and power, and all the recent medical discoveries for the prevention of germ diseases and 30,000 miles of railway and several millions of officials, is permitting plague and famine to run riot as in the days of barbarism. There are no preventives or antidotes for the plague and no adequate provisions by irrigation or otherwise to prevent famine. It is true there is a famine relief fund, but it is raised from the people themselves

and is not sufficient to stay much of the terrible suffering or properly feed the starving.

Necessarily a hundred years of contact with a superior people have benefited many of the natives who have been shrewd enough to avail themselves of the opportunities it has afforded, but the same influence has cowed into a condition of peonage and servitude the vast majority, who cringe before their English rulers and abjectly address them as "masters" and allow themselves to be treated with all manner of indignity.

We repeat a statement of a former letter that English rule in India, along with Dutch rule in Java, is a crime. We do not believe it can continue. And as the natives are becoming better educated there are evidences that they will rise in revolt. We do not believe that the English are a cruel people, but they have permitted a system of government in India which is one of the greatest cruelties of any age.

## XXXVIII.

### AGRA AND DELHI AND THEIR WONDERFUL ARCHITECTURE.

DELHI, INDIA, March 28, 1908.

India is distinguished for its wild animals, its heathenism and its architecture. It has many other features of interest, but these chiefly attract the attention of visitors. I have written of the first two. Its architecture is more interesting, by far, than either of them. It is both ancient and mediaeval, if three hundred years ago can be denominated mediaeval. It is not modern if that term can be applied only to the present century. Neither its public or private buildings, unless it be a Maharajah's palace here and there and the railroad station and High Court building at Bombay, and the government buildings in Calcutta, are distinguished for architectural beauty. But its tombs and temples and mosques erected centuries ago are marvels. They are not surpassed by those in Greece or Rome or anywhere in the world. They are to be found in many sections of the Empire, but most of those of chief interest are in and near Agra and Delhi. These two cities are within a hundred miles of each other, and are near the center of the country. Both were at one time national capitals. Both have suffered from the destructive wars which have periodically swept over India, and have been despoiled of much of their former grandeur. Delhi has been rebuilt seven times. Enough escaped the hand of the vandal to indicate still the wonderful genius which existed in times past. While many of these noble structures are in ruins, some have been preserved uninjured, their splendor and beauty having commanded even the respect of barbarous invaders.

## THE GREAT MOGULS.

It is essential to a correct understanding of the architecture of Agra and Delhi to revert briefly to history. In about the year 1400 Tamerlane, one of the greatest and most successful monarchs of any age, swept down into India, took possession of it and placed one of his sons upon the throne. From the days of Alexander the Great to that time the country had been in a savage state, and its people had accomplished little worthy of record. It is true that we find many temples of splendid architecture, whose origin is lost in the mist of antiquity, but authentic history of the country dates from Tamerlane's possession of it. The sixth king in descent from Tamerlane was Baber who demonstrated superior powers as a sovereign, consolidated and organized the country and started it upon a career of prosperity. His grandson, Akbar, proved himself an able ruler and built wisely upon the foundations laid by his grandfather. Akbar's grandson, Shah Jehan, devoted himself to the building of two magnificent forts and palaces and mosques at Delhi and Agra and to the Taj Mahal at Agra, a tomb in honor of his favorite wife, considered by many as the most beautiful building ever erected.

These kings were in power from the latter part of the fifteenth century until about the middle of the seventeenth, from near the date that Columbus discovered America until some time after the landing of the Pilgrim Fathers or until the revolt of Oliver Cromwell in England. They were the great moguls, and from them comes that historic title. They were blood thirsty, licentious tyrants, did not hesitate to murder their subjects and even their own brothers, when it served their ambition. But they had large ideas and their reigns were marked by a magnificence unsurpassed in the history of the world. They left permanent memorials of



their genius which have since excited the admiration and wonder of mankind. Stories of the prodigal splendor of their courts read like the tales of the Arabian Nights or Aladdin's Lamp. But for the fact that the magnificent buildings they erected yet remain to corroborate these stories they would not be believed. It is almost incredible that such genius for architecture, such refined taste and chaste ideals could have existed among mere barbarians, but the proof yet remains in buildings, seemingly indestructible and cannot be controverted.

## AKRA'S TOMB.

Six miles from Agra, at Sikandra, is a splendid tomb erected by Akbar. There his body lies in a marble cenotaph. Its situation is in a large park, entered by a magnificent gate, and leading to it is a wide pavement in the center of which is a large pool fed by fountains. The mausoleum is of red sandstone, inlaid with white marble, is four stories high and three hundred and twenty feet square. While there are some "gingerbread" features about the architecture, the workmanship is elaborate. The remains of the monarch repose in the basement. At the top of the building is a roofless court of pure white marble, of exquisite carving where is another sarcophagus, a duplicate of the one which contains the body. There is a marble stand near its head on which once rested the famous Kohinoor diamond captured by Akbar's son, Hiemayon, from the Afghan Prince Sikandra. It is the most celebrated jewel in the world and is valued at over four millions of dollars gold. It was captured by the Persians, and by them given to Queen Victoria, but never worn by her.



## FORTS AND PALACES.

There are splendid forts in Agra and Delhi, similar in construction, built by Shah Jehan, Akbar's grandson. Both are of red sandstone with moats in front and are several miles in circumference. They are said to be the finest citadels ever erected but neither would stand long against an hour's bombardment of modern guns. In both of these forts are beautiful palaces built by Shah Jehan of pure white marble. There are halls of public and private audience, baths, bed chambers, apartments for the harem, all of magnificent architecture. The carvings and columns evince the most refined taste and skill. In the palace at Delhi is the celebrated Peacock throne, whose furnishings and ornaments, costing many millions of dollars, were carried away by the Persians. Only the marble platform remains. On the roof and walls are exquisite mosaics of precious stones, valued at ten millions of dollars. Many of them are inscriptions taken from the Koran, while over the throne on the ceiling are wrought in Persian these words "If on earth be an Eden of bliss, it is this, it is this, it is this."

## MOSQUES.

In each of these forts at Agra and Delhi are marble mosques, similar in architectural finish and design to the palaces. That in Agra is known as the Pearl Mosque and is justly regarded the finest piece of architecture for religious worship in the world. The floors are of pure marble, and the massive pillars are also of marble and elaborately carved and inlaid with precious stones, while the arches and domes are models of symmetry and finish. Both mosques are surmounted by white domes of the shape of inverted turnips, this being the universal dome for mosques. One of these mosques was built by Shah Jehan, the other by his son.

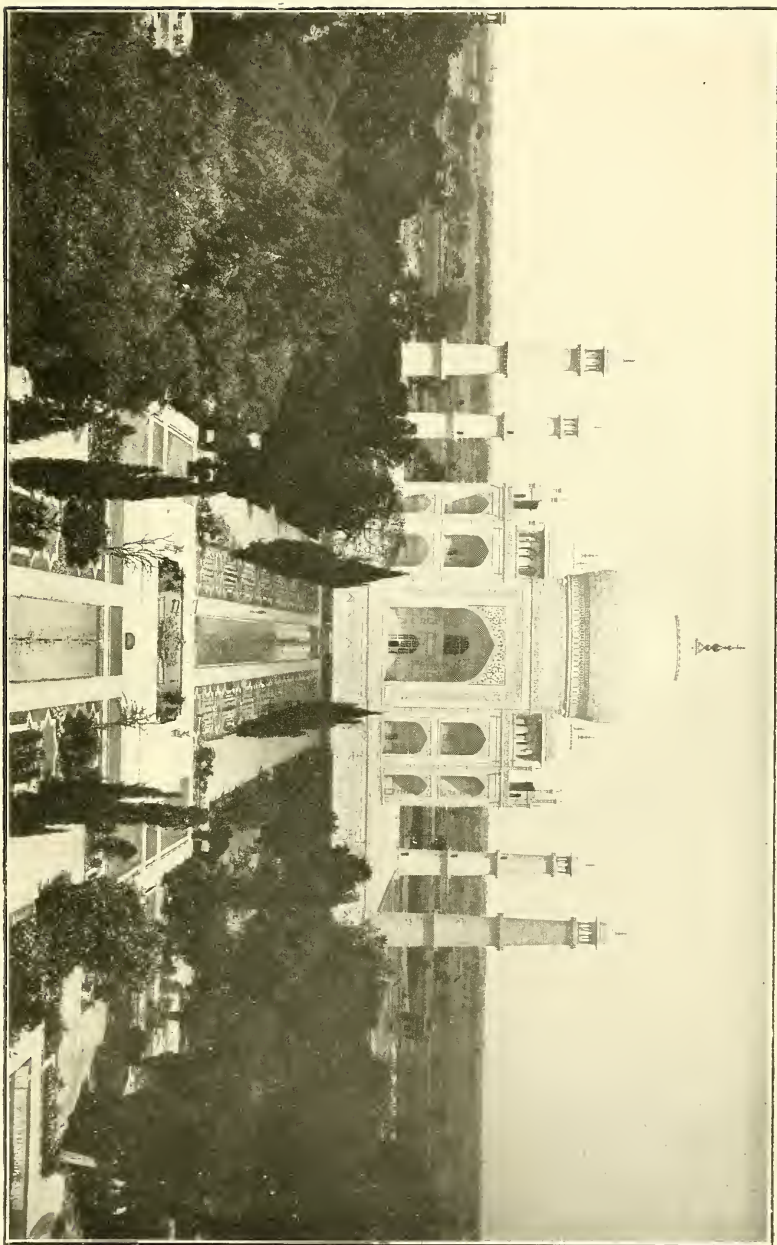
The expenditure upon them must have been enormous, and while they are beautiful to look upon and are probably without rivals, like the two forts and the palaces, there is a similarity between them, a lack of variety and originality characteristic of most ancient art. In India, as in the art galleries and buildings of Europe, one is impressed with the fact that while unquestioned genius and skill and great care and painstaking are displayed, there is a lack of that diversity which marks modern achievements.

In the city of Delhi, on its highest point, stands Jumma Musjid, one of the finest mosques in the world. It is said to have required the labor of 10,000 workmen six years in building. It is reached from three sides by flights of forty steps, 140 feet long at the base. It is entered by lofty and noble gates of red sandstone inlaid with white marble, and in front of the main building is an open court 450 feet square, with marble floor, in which fifteen thousand persons can worship at one time. It has three monster domes and tall minarets at each corner. It is the most conspicuous building in Delhi. In one corner visitors are shown what is claimed to be an original manuscript copy of the Koran in the handwritings of Mohammed's son and son-in-law, a piece of stone, with the impress of a human foot, which we were solemnly informed was made by Mohammed himself. We were also shown one red hair in a glass case which it is claimed was taken from the prophet's head or beard. The prophet was red headed, and for this reason many Mohammedans dye their hair and whiskers that color.

#### AKBAR'S SUMMER PALACE.

Taking carriages at five o'clock in the morning we drove twenty-two miles from Agra to Fattahpur Sikri, at one time the seat of government and afterwards the summer palace of Akbar.

It is now and has been for centuries deserted. The causes which led to its construction are interesting. The Emperor, it is said, greatly desired a son to inherit his crown. Returning one day from one of his campaigns, he was camping near a cave, where dwelt a wise and holy Brahmin named Shekh Selim, who was understood to have great influence with those deities who control the bringing of babies into the world. The king communicated his desire to the seer. The latter had a son six months old who immediately spoke up and said he would die and thereby the king would have a son. The offer was accepted. The boy died and the king's wish was gratified in the birth of an heir. In gratitude to the Shekh he built this palace upon the spot where the heir was promised, and in it he had the remains of the Shekh buried in a beautiful marble tomb, the vault being inlaid with mother of pearl, and inclosed in a marble screen. To the latter we observed large numbers of small ribbons and cords of various colors tied. We were told that they were tied by persons, who like the king, desired heirs, as it was understood to be a never-failing recipe. We have related all this to show for what absurd reasons these old kings spent the money and sacrificed the lives of the people. This magnificent structure is said to have required a hundred thousand workmen many years in building and to have cost the people of India a hundred millions of dollars outside the wages of the workmen, who were compelled to work for nothing. It was abandoned after fifty years. It is an enormous pile covering fifty acres, is of red sandstone and includes courts, residences for the Mohammedan, Hindu and Buddhist wives of the monarch, his baths, public and private audience halls, rooms for servants, stables and all the appointments of his court. In style of architecture it is similar to that of his tomb near Agra.



*THE TAJ MAHAL AT AGRA, INDIA—Tomb of Shah Jehan's Wife, Most Beautiful Building in the World.*



## SEEN ALONG THE WAY.

The drive from Agra to Fattehpur Sikri afforded the best opportunity we had in India for observing life of the country outside the cities. It was along a broad, smooth road of macadam, shaded by lofty tamarinth trees. The roads in India are ideal. Ox carts, laden with vegetables for market, or donkeys with their burdens of freight, were met continually. Hundreds of natives fleeing from the famine and carrying their few household effects and driving their goats and cows and donkeys dragged themselves along, footsore and weary; with the light of hope gone out of their careworn faces. Monkeys were in the trees, wild peacocks skirted along the adjacent fields. Wild deer stopped and gazed curiously at us, but without alarm, for it is contrary to the religion of the people to harm them. Parrots and doves and long-necked cranes were among the birds which flitted fearlessly near to us. By the way, speaking of deer, they have a little deer in India the size of a very small calf, which barks like a dog. They call them barking deer. Drovers of camels came slumping along, in dismal, solemn step, and the caw, caw, caw of the crow, the one bird of world-wide habitation, kept the air vocal. Wheatfields were upon every side. Wheat next to rice is India's chief product. The country is very dry after six months drought, but the process of irrigation is in progress everywhere by the primitive method of pumping water by oxen being hitched to ropes and drawing the water from the wells by pulleys. It is then poured out upon the fields. It is a slow process, but it is the almost only method of irrigation in India. Water can be obtained everywhere at a depth of from twenty-five to a hundred feet. I had hoped to include in this letter some reference to all the principal architectural attractions of Agra and Delhi; but I find I have consumed my space without

even reaching those of chief interest, the Taj Mahal at Agra, and the Kutab Minar at Delhi, the greatest of all. I will have to reserve them and several others for another letter.



XXXIX.

**REMARKABLE BUILDINGS IN INDIA.**

AGRA, INDIA, March 30, 1908.

In Agra is a building which bears the reputation of being the most beautiful in the world. It consists of only two rooms, one of which is a basement. It is constructed of but one material, white marble, inlaid with precious stones. There is not a particle of wood or a nail or a screw in it. The only bond of union of the marble blocks is cement. Its construction reveals how Solomon's temple was built without sound of hammer. It was finished two hundred and sixty years ago. It is said to have cost twenty millions of dollars, outside of the labor which cost nothing, and to have required twenty-thousand men twenty years to build it. It was built by one of the Great Moguls, the Emperor Shah Jehan, as a mausoleum for his favorite wife, and his remains and hers enclosed in marble cenotaphs are its only tenants. Its name is the Taj Mahal and it is famous the world over. It rests upon a marble platform or pediment which is 186 feet square and eighteen feet high. The building itself is fifty-eight feet in diameter at its base and eighty feet from base to roof. It is surmounted by a dome eighty feet high. Above the dome is a spire of gilded copper twenty-eight feet long, making the total height from the ground, 206 feet. At each of the four corners of the platform stands a minaret, one hundred and thirty feet in height. The dome, like the domes of all mosques, is of the shape of an inverted turnip after the Byzantine style. Four small domes surround the central one and are duplicates of it, and at each of the eight angles of the roof is a small minaret similar in construction and form to the minarets at the corners. Each is sixteen feet in height. The har-

mony and symmetry of the building are complete. There are no glass windows, but openings, with marble screens where the glass usually is in windows, but set back sufficiently to be shaded from the sun. Through these screens the light filters. The interior in which rest counterparts of the cenotaphs of Shah Jehan and his wife is a rotunda, the ceiling being the internal face of the dome. The echo is wonderful, a whisper penetrating the remotest recess. A song is taken up and echoed and re-echoed in diminishing volume until it gently dies away. The bodies are in marble cenotaphs in the basement. The building is inlaid with precious stones, turquoise, coral, garnet, carnelian, jasper, malachite, agate, lapis lazuli, onyx, sardonyx and numerous others, the whole being a mosaic of marvelous beauty and variety and costliness. No words can describe the delicacy and tastefulness of its workmanship. No pen can convey a correct idea of the wonderful beauty of the building. It has been justly pronounced to be a "dream in marble." If as Madame De Stael has finely said architecture is "frozen music" a whole symphony of classic opera is congealed in this architectural wonder. I am bringing an alabaster miniature of it home with me, but the original must be seen to be appreciated. The building is in a park which is entered by a noble gate. A broad stone pavement probably 300 feet long leads to it, and extends by a pool of water and through trees and flowers. On either side is a mosque of red sandstone, but all these surroundings are overshadowed and forgotten when the gaze is once fixed upon the building itself.

#### THE BUILDER.

Shah Jehan, the emperor who ordered the Taj Mahal to be built, did more for the architecture of India than any other man who has ever lived. He directed the building of the forts and

mosques and palaces at Agra and Delhi, of which mention was made in our last letter. As a cruel requital for it he was imprisoned by an ungrateful son in the palace which he erected and was kept in prison there in sight of the Taj Mahal for seven years, when he died. An explanation, whether true we know not, of his imprisonment is that he had projected a silver bridge across the Jamin river, upon which the Taj stands, with the intention of erecting a corresponding structure for his own tomb upon the opposite side of the river. Much building had made him mad and his son imprisoned him to prevent him bankrupting the kingdom. The placing of sons under restraint by fathers to prevent them spending money is quite a familiar occurrence, modern as well as ancient, but this is the first instance that has been called to our attention where the son has laid the restraining hand upon a prodigal father, even to the extent of putting him in jail. However the money spending habit grows, even on old men at times, especially if they travel around the world and we are not certain but that the boys are justifiable in checking them. I was in the room in which this remarkable man was imprisoned. It was not over ten feet square and here for seven long years, within a half mile of the beautiful Taj Mahal and inside the palace he had erected he was a lonely prisoner. His only companion was a faithful daughter who is buried in a single grave near Delhi, with only the green turf above her. She refused to have any monument over her burial place. Shah Jehan's heartless son relented enough after his death to have his father's remains placed on a cenotaph beside his mother's, and there they rest in the beautiful Taj.

## BARBAROUS MONARCHS.

Notwithstanding the passion of these monarchs for architecture and their manifestations of the nobler sentiments in honoring by costly monuments those they loved, they were blood thirsty and cruel to the last degree. Shah Jehan murdered his own brothers in order to obtain the crown. So did several of his ancestors and his own son. While he erected these beautiful buildings he was himself without education or artistic genius. But he was an absolute monarch and had unlimited control over the persons and property of his subjects. These magnificent palaces and mosques and tombs represented the impoverishment and unrequited toil of millions, many of whom perished with starvation or by his cruel edicts while engaged in their erection. While they are beautiful to look upon, they bear mute testimony to the remorseless tyranny and cruelty which prompted and directed their construction. While the Taj Mahal was a beautiful tribute of affection to a favorite wife, its builder had many wives and numbers of concubines, whose condition, as well as that of millions of women in India from that day to this, was worse than slavery.

These splendid edifices therefore are more the evidences of the barbarous despotism of their builders than monuments to their nobler qualities. It would be impossible in any nation of the world today for any monarch by the sheer exercise of his power to construct such structures by the unpaid labor and the unlimited taxation of his subjects. The world has made that much progress even in India, although it is not certain but that the wrenching of over two hundred millions of dollars annually from these people for the support of a standing army and an expensive civil service by England is almost as unwarranted and cruel. The moguls left behind as the results of their prodigality and tyranny

beautiful achievements in architecture for the enjoyment and elevation of succeeding generations. England in her expenditures is leaving only impoverishment and desolation to mark her cruelty. Notwithstanding the hundred years of rule by the British Empire in this stricken land the glory of India is in the past among the barbarians, not in the present under the most powerful of modern dynasties.

#### THE NOBLEST OF MONUMENTS.

Eleven miles from the city of Delhi, stands the Kutab Minar, which is entitled to the pre-eminent position among monuments which the Taj Mahal holds among tombs. It is supposed to have been originally started by the Hindus and to have been completed by the Mohammedans. It is second only in height to the Washington monument, but is a far handsomer piece of architecture. It is 238 feet high and its height is exactly five times its diameter at its base. It is built of red sandstone, with occasional alternations of white marble. It has five stories which are indicated by projecting balconies. Each story is of distinct construction. The first, which is 95 feet, consists of twenty-four faces in the form of convex flutings alternately semi-circular and rectangular and of alternate courses of white marble and red sandstone. The second story is 51 feet, all the projections being semi-circular. The third is 41 feet, and the projections are rectangular. The fourth is 26 feet and is plain and the last story is 25 feet and partly fluted and partly plain. The mean diameter of each story is exactly one-fifth its height. The thickness of the walls at the base is ten feet. Although it was built six hundred years ago it is without a crack or flaw, has survived earthquakes and disintegration and is as perfect as when first erected. The exterior is

adorned with much elaborate carving, containing many passages from the Koran in which are frequent inscriptions to the one God and the prophet Mahomet. Its carvings, symmetry, irreproachable grace and proportion and its architectural finish render it beyond question the most beautiful monumental shaft in the world.

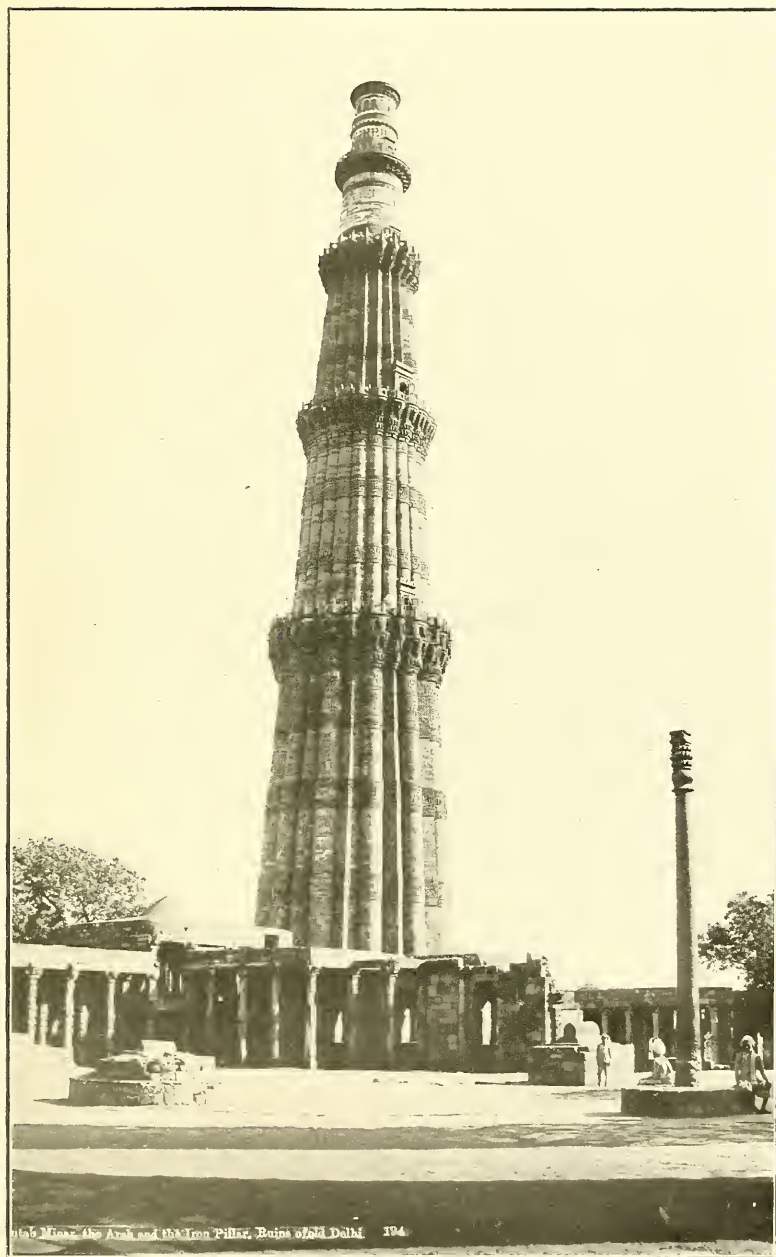
#### A REMARKABLE TEMPLE AND IRON COLUMN.

Near the base of Kutab Minar stands one of the finest temples in India. It is now in ruins, but its architecture is classic and unsurpassed. It was built by Hindus, but was afterwards captured by the Mohammedans, and by them converted into a mosque. In its court yard stands an iron column, which is a most curious thing. It is 23 feet 8 inches above the ground and is called the "Arm of Fame of Raja Dhava," who was the conqueror in ancient days. It was erected about 319 A. D. The remarkable feature of interest connected with it is that at that period a bar of iron could have been forged. It is estimated to weigh six tons, and it has been of comparatively recent date that the forging of so heavy a piece of iron has been regarded possible. In exploring these ancient structures one frequently comes across evidences that not as many things are new as we think, and that numerous arts have been lost which have not been recovered.

#### INDIA'S APPIAN WAY.

We drove back to Delhi through this field of ancient temples, tombs and ruins, visiting numbers of the larger and more important. We felt that we had been transferred back thousands of years until we almost expected to see the helmeted and mailed





*QUTAB MINAR—Near Delhi—Probably the Finest Monument in the World*





figures of that period issue from these classic structures. This fancy was intensified when we learned that the broad, tree-embowered avenue along which we were driving was the Grand Trunk road of India, the most ancient and notable thoroughfare in the world which has been a great highway from almost the beginning of time. It extends from eastern India through Turkestan to Persia and Constantinople and even to Moscow. More people travel over it than over any other road on earth. It was a beaten track before the Appian Way had been blazed out, and along it Tamerlane, Alexander the Great, Napoleon and the mighty conquerors of the past have led their victorious armies. We were indeed in the midst of ancient and historic scenes, and the effect was to stir within us sensations we have not had before.

#### OTHER REMARKABLE STRUCTURES.

While the most attractive ancient architecture is to be found in Agra and Delhi those two cities do not monopolize all the beautiful buildings of India. The latter are scattered all over the Empire. At Mount Abu are two Jain temples, called Dilwara, which are probably the most elaborately carved structures in India. They are of pure white marble and look like caskets of jewels. The carvings inside and out of human figures are something wonderful. They were built in the twelfth century and are said to have cost ten millions of pounds sterling.

At Udaipur is a remarkable palace of the Maharajah, situated upon a lake and resting upon a wall 150 feet high. It is of white marble and a most attractive edifice.

The caves of Ellora in containing a building called Kailasa, are in many respects among the most curious structures in the world. Here is a temple 300 feet long, 100 feet wide and 70 feet high, cut

out of the solid rock, inside and out with wonderful carvings of elephants' heads of life size along the base. On each side of this extraordinary structure are fifty other temples, each as large as an ordinary church, also carved out of solid rock.

At Chitoezarh, near Udaipur, is a remarkable rock fortress in ruins, and towers of victory and of fame of pure white marble, 1000 years old and only second to the Kutab Minar in architectural beauty and construction.

At Bombay is the celebrated cave of Elephanta, on an island near the city in which upon pillars and upon the walls are carvings of figures of elephants and heathen deities of classic skill and accuracy. How such an artistic achievement was wrought out of solid rock is past comprehension. There is nothing handsomer. It is a splendid temple, full of handsome statues, carved out of a cave.

At Madura is the largest Hindu temple in the world. It is five miles in circumference and of most stately and remarkable proportions. Its roof is lined with gold.

There are many others, and one leaves India bewildered, as well as saddened, when he reflects that nearly all these splendid edifices were the products of an idolatrous fanaticism, the mere expressions of heathen superstition. As in Greece and Rome it is demonstrated that the highest order of genius and talent has often been accompanied with the grossest religious darkness and ignorance.

## XL.

### JEYPORE: A TRULY REPRESENTATIVE CITY OF INDIA.

JEYPORE, INDIA, April 1, 1908.

The most typical Indian city which we visited was Jeypore, spelled also, Jaipur, and several other ways. While we saw Indian life elsewhere, it was either confined to certain phases or was with foreign adulteration. At Jeypore we had the genuine article, in which were all classes, conditions and characteristics of the people. It was the India of the imagination, with its rich coloring of costume and architecture, its elephants and camels and monkeys and tigers and peacocks and last, but not least, its Maharajah. Its only modifying condition was that it is not ancient, having been rebuilt not a great while ago by a Maharajah, who modeled it after modern cities. Its streets are wide. Its principal one reminded us of Broadway of our own beloved Columbia, Missouri. Every time we drove down it we enjoyed locating upon it in our imagination the familiar buildings of the blessed town which gave us birth and which we long so much to see again. But the likeness is only in the width of the streets. The buildings and the people and all else are as different from those of Missouri's Athens as can be imagined. The city has been painted red, not by convivial revelers at night as too often happens in America, but by sober heathen with actual red or pink paint. It is said to have formerly been motley and unattractive. The Maharajah who owns it being a man of taste, had the entire city painted a pink color, with certain white trimmings to relieve the monotony. While the effect is more or less tawdry, the material used looking more like kalsomine or "whitewash" than paint, it is novel. There is no other city like it.

## THE PEOPLE, STREETS, BUILDINGS, ETC.

The population is almost entirely native. Their dress is the most brilliant we have seen anywhere, except in Burmah. Red and green and yellow and all the rainbow colors prevail. There are no large business establishments, the business being conducted in small booths or shops, not over ten feet square, and elevated several feet above the street. Little business is transacted during the day on account of the intense heat. After five in the afternoon the shops are thrown open and most of the articles of merchandise are brought out upon the sidewalk, of which there are four on each side of the street. There they are spread out for sale and present a scene of color and novelty that is most interesting. Dry goods, hardware, tinware, curios, vegetables, groceries, everything of merchantable character is exposed, while the entire population, an enormous throng, fills the streets. And such a scene! Mohammedans, Hindus, Brahmins, priests, merchants, coolies, soldiers, beggars, members of the royal household, all classes and conditions arrayed in all phases of oriental costume, from a loin cloth of the coolies to the picturesque shawls and dresses of the tradespeople and the rich and brilliantly decorated robes of the Maharajah's household. Jewelry was greatly in evidence among both men and women, especially women. The lady who went to Banbury Cross with rings on her fingers and bells on her toes is well represented. Not only do they wear rings upon their fingers but upon their wrists and ankles in huge size and in large numbers and of gold and silver and every precious stone. Besides, they wear them in their ears, and noses, and some pierce their lips, while the feet and toes are frequently literally covered with decorations. Even the poorest are decked out in this jewelry, often cheap and shoddy but frequently expensive. The natives

may have but one garment upon their bodies and that a very brief one, but at the same time shine resplendently in jewelry.

COWS, CARTS, ELEPHANTS, TIGERS, ETC.

Roaming about among the crowds with absolute freedom, for no one dare molest them, were sacred cows and bulls, fat and sleek, for they do not hesitate to walk up to a huckster's stall and eat his vegetables if they desire them. The color scheme also extends to the ox carts, wherein ride Mohammedan women, concealed from view by curtains of brilliant hue, or which are used as ordinary conveyances for the people or for freight of all kinds. Not only are the carts painted in bright colors, but also the harness and yokes and the horns of the oxen. We observed several oxen with green horns but so far as we could discern they were as wise as the others, and we were unable to discover that there was any reason why greenhorns of the human variety should have derived their titles from them. Moving through the streets were elephants bearing their human freight with stately and majestic tread. Solemn camels came tramping along like walking somnambulists, and it is not uncommon for fierce tigers and leopards to be led through the streets with muzzles over their mouths to prevent them devouring the people. Jeypore is located in a region infested by tigers and leopards and all manner of ferocious beasts of the man-eating species. We saw numbers of these in cages but recently captured in the jungles. They were wild and fierce in the last degree. As we stirred them up with a walking cane, feeling very brave with iron bars between us, and had them rush at us with hoarse roar, flashing eyes and snapping teeth, we realized the truth of the stories to be seen daily in the newspapers of hunters who are attacked and torn to pieces by them. When

we came to India we were anxious for a tiger hunt, but we soon discovered that it would be wise to limit our ambition to squirrels and rabbits and deer in Missouri. We concluded that we had not lost any tigers. To wound a tiger or leopard and not slay him is to invite sure attack, which will be fatal unless the huntsman is upon the back of an elephant or upon a fleet horse.

#### PIGEONS, PEACOCKS AND MONKEYS.

It is a penitentiary offense in Jeypore to kill a cow, a pigeon, a peacock or a monkey. Hence these are in great evidence. They are sacred, and have more privileges than the people. The streets swarm with pigeons. They cover the housetops, and the sidewalks and when they desire, enter the shops and dwellings and help themselves. There is a beautiful tower in the heart of the city set apart for their abode. Monkeys clamber around upon the buildings or scamper through the streets or play hide and seek in the trees at their own sweet will. Peacocks in all their glory of brilliant plumage may be seen perched upon house tops or roaming through fields and gardens in the suburbs. You can imagine the picturesqueness, novelty and interest which all this combination of color and human and animal life gives to a city.

#### A RIDE ON ELEPHANTS.

At Jeypore we enjoyed the novelty of an elephant ride to the ancient city of Amber, three miles distant. It was an intensely hot day and the heat, as well as the elephants, will linger long in our memory. If you never rode on an elephant you may be interested in knowing how it feels. The monster is a docile and accommodating individual. He kneels down fore and aft, and then a ladder is needed in order to reach his summit. He remains still until



his keeper punches him with a steel jibe. Then he begins to get up. His hindquarters rise first, when you find yourself on a sliding plane of forty-five degrees. If a man you yell. If a woman you scream. He waits half a minute, then he brings his forelegs to a vertical position and plants them in a way that makes you feel there was an earthquake. Then he starts off, his keeper astride his head with a sharp instrument which he frequently and apparently unnecessarily jabs into him while you sit upon a bench that runs parallel with his body the long way, that is you face front sideways. My wife and myself occupied one elephant and the other four members of the party, the other. Whether it was our dignity or our weight that secured to us an animal all to ourselves, we were unable to ascertain. When the monster starts off he moves his front and hind legs on the same side at one time. We do not know of any other mammal that has this peculiar movement. Viewed from the front there is something majestic about it, but from behind it has the mincing and waddling motion of a young University student who has just entered a secret fraternity, has bought a new suit of clothes and is struck on himself. The elephant carries a lot of water somewhere under his mouth, which he uses for two purposes: to drink when he is thirsty and to squirt upon those who ride on him. He keeps this up with more energy than he does his locomotion. Molasses in January is said to be the slowest thing in nature, but it is swift as compared with an elephant on a hot day in India. We were three hours going six miles. One of the party had sun-stroke, and the remainder very nearly melted.

## THE MAHARAJAH.

The most interesting and important personality in Jeypore is the Maharajah. He not merely governs the town; he owns it. If you are not exactly sure you understand what a Maharajah is I will endeavor to explain. He is a descendant of a long line of Indian princes or rulers, who have been in monarchical control of a certain state or province since the days of the moguls or before. When the English got control of India they agreed by treaty to permit their Maharajahs to hold their places with the understanding that what they did had to be at the advice of a resident English official, and by approval of the English government. Really, England has a string attached to him in such a way that he has no final or actual power of his own and is therefore responsible for his acts. But so long as he does not interfere with English interests in any way, lets England keep all the fat offices except his, he is permitted to go ahead and do as he pleases. There are many Maharajahs, of all grades, conditions of power, income and jurisdiction. They are distinguished in rank by the number of guns that are fired in their honor when they go visiting. These guns run from twenty-one down to eleven. The Maharajah of Jeypore has seventeen fired for him, showing that he is high up. The Maharajahs practically own the states they nominally govern and hence they have tremendous incomes, running all the way from a hundred thousand dollars up to millions. They can levy whatsoever taxes they please, and have the power of life and death over their subjects, all, however, subject to English advice and approval. They may have all the wives and concubines they want. As a rule, they are coarse, ignorant and sensual. Some of them are well educated and capable. The Maharajah of Jeypore is one of the most intelligent and progressive. He has but three



AT JEYPORE, INDIA—Elephants In Procession—Maharajah—Mohammedan Cart,  
Vehicle for Women of Higher Classes



wives; how many concubines we did not hear. He lives in a palace of cheap and tawdry architecture, but he has unlimited resources in money, lands, servants and equipages. He is one of the few Maharajahs who has visited England. When he did so he carried along a full quota of Hindu priests, enough Ganges water to last until he returned, kept himself unspotted from Christians, maintained Hindu services en route and while in London rented a house and lived to himself exclusively. He was impressed with what he saw and when he returned inaugurated new and progressive methods. He established colleges for the education of men and women, at which there are two thousand students, an art school, a splendid museum and a hospital. Yet he eats with his fingers and sits upon the floor and adheres to all Hindu customs.

#### THE MAHARAJAH'S STABLES.

We visited his stables. They were one of the most interesting sights we had in India. He owns several hundred elephants and camels, and over five hundred horses, all for his personal use. The stables for the horses cover an area of several acres and consist of stalls around a large open court in which the horses are exercised. The horses are of Arabian, Australian, African and Indian breed, are all stallions and mares, and are handsome animals. A few of them are over fifteen and a half hands in height. They are mostly saddlers and are ridden by him when he goes tiger hunting, of which he is fond. He had killed two tigers the day previous to our visit. He also enjoys shooting wild boars, and there was one tied by a string in the compound at the time of our visit. He captured it after wounding it on one of his hunts. It is a razor-back, vicious looking brute. Each horse has one groom, a coolie, who stays with him at all hours, sleeping and eating in

his stall. It requires 500 employees to do all the stable work. The horses are ugly tempered. The hind legs or ankles are tied with long cords, attached to rings fifteen or twenty feet in their rear. This is done to prevent them kicking. The superintendent of the stables was a fantastically dressed Hindu, who looked like a Knight errant of the middle ages. The saddles and bridles were richly ornamented and when the Maharajah in his royal oriental garb is mounted upon one of these spirited, beautifully caparisoned animals the picture is worth preserving. He also owns many buggies and carriages for his use and that of his wives. But the latter are not permitted to ride horseback nor are any women in India. When they go out in vehicles the blinds are pulled down and their faces are not visible. When they appear upon the streets it is with their heads and faces covered.

#### THE WRETCHEDNESS OF THE PEOPLE.

When we visited Jeypore it was badly infected with the Bubonic plague, so much so that we were warned that to go there was risky. Nowhere did we see such awful poverty. Beggars crowded about us even at the doors of the Maharajah's palace begging for bread and looking as if they were starving. We could but contrast the terrible condition of the people with the prodigal and luxurious expenditure of money by their rulers. Here again was illustration of how, for a hundred years, England has permitted this barbaric monarchical system to prevail, whereby a coarse potentate can revel in wealth and power, taxing the people at his own will, to maintain his luxurious court, while the wretched victims of his rule starve for bread or perish with disease. He, himself, is rarely ever seen, being afraid to go among the people on account of the plague. And yet the Maharajah of Jeypore is



one of the most liberal, progressive and enlightened of the hundred who rule India. Thus England is really maintaining the barbaric system of government of the moguls, and adding thereto the burden of a standing army and an expensive civil service. More, after having introduced a curse of opium it has gone into the business as a government of selling it to the people, and thus it is enriching itself by the financial, intellectual and moral degradation of the people, whose conditions are of course growing worse as the years roll on.

#### AS TO HOTELS.

We did not find hotels in India as bad as had been represented. But there is one feature of them which was interesting as well as exasperating. They struggle hard for business. When we reached Jeypore the proprietors of the two leading hotels came near coming to blows over their struggle to secure us as guests. They made all sorts of charges against each other, one declaring that we were in great danger of the plague if we went to the other. We did not catch the plague, but we had an experience nearly as bad. It was the ravenous efforts of dealers in silks, knives, curios and other articles to sell us their wares. The experience was not peculiar to Jeypore. We had it wherever we went. After our return from a drive for luncheon we would find numbers of these hungry tradesmen with their merchandise piled upon the veranda awaiting us. Then began the assault. They would beset, harass, beg, importune in the most aggressive and persistent manner, until we had to seek cover in our rooms. Whenever we appeared they would renew the attack, and when we drove away would run after our carriages and cling to them until we had to threaten violence to keep them away. We finally



discovered that the hotel proprietors and merchants were in a trust and all played into each other's hands. Many of these articles were valuable, and sometimes there were bargains, of which we took advantage. It is one of the pests, the unavoidable evils of travel everywhere in the orient, but far worse in India than anywhere else.

#### THE POVERTY AND IGNORANCE.

Frequently in these letters I have had occasion to refer to the wretched condition of the masses of the people. It is so appalling that I can not leave the subject. It has made me sick at heart as I witnessed it and it was a relief when I got away from the awful scenes that everywhere met us. We, in America, have no conception of what it means. A few are enormously rich, but the hundreds of millions are steeped in poverty. Everybody goes barefooted, excepting the very rich, and wear but scantiest clothing. One writer asserts that 200,000,000 live on less than five cents a day, 100,000,000 on less than three cents and 50,000,000 on less than one cent. There are many millions of beggars. Few can even afford to eat rice, although it is the chief product. Over half the people live on wheat, barley and fruit. The assets in the way of implements of the average farmer average in value from fifty to seventy-five cents. Farming is the chief means of support of a large majority of the people. There are less than two acres to each inhabitant, and at this time much of the land is non-productive on account of famine. The condition in India physically, mentally and religiously, is so pitiable as to appeal in tones of horror and despair to the civilized world. We who live in lands of plenty and enlightenment can not be held guiltless if we turn deaf ears to India's piteous cry.

## XLI.

### FROM COLOMBO TO COLUMBIA.

COLOMBO, CEYLON, April 7, 1908.

The name of this city is suggestive of the home of the writer, and of the familiar lines of Bishop Heber:

“What though the spicy breezes  
Blow soft o’er Ceylon’s isle,  
Where every prospect pleases  
And man alone is vile.”

And yet there is little in the city to remind us of our blessed home, or in the island to justify the Bishop’s poem. It is as unlike the Missouri city as it is distant. Nor have we observed any spiciness in its winds. While its prospects are pleasing we have not discovered that its inhabitants are the only vile things it contains or are any viler than people elsewhere. If report be true its water and its whiskey are viler than its people, and so are its snakes and other reptiles and the germs of many contagious diseases. It is a handsome city, has wide streets, beautiful parks, a fine hotel, excellent schools and churches. While there is no perfume in its breeze there is an abundance of delightful ozone in the air that is wafted from the sea, which is most refreshing after our long and strenuous journey through the heat and dust of India.

## BOMBAY.

But we must go back “a bit,” to use an English word which we often hear. After leaving Jeypore we had twenty-six hours of the hottest and dustiest ride of our experience. It was something awful, with the thermometer at 110 degree in the shade. But for a box of ice and plenty of soda water it is doubtful if we would

have survived to tell the tale. It was like traveling through a heated furnace. We hailed with delight at Bombay the sight and air of the sea, and the best hotel we have seen in Asia. There must be something in a name, for this hotel has the same name as India's most beautiful building, Taj Mahal, and like its namesake is superior to all rivals. It actually has elevators and private bath rooms with hot and cold water and good fare and service. Bombay itself is India's most up-to-date city. It has broad streets, fine business houses, handsome public buildings and some fine educational institutions established and endowed by the Parsees, the wealthiest of its citizens.

The Parsees are of Persian descent and have maintained their identity from the natives, to whom they are decidedly superior. There are 76,000 of them in Bombay. They are somewhat darker than Spaniards. The men are of a high order intellectually and the women are handsome. They are a refined, capable and prosperous people.

Bombay has the finest printing establishment we have seen in Asia. It is that of the Bombay Times which vies with the Allahabad-Pioneer for pre-eminence among Indian newspapers, and in our judgment is entitled to the first rank. It does a large publishing business outside of printing a fine newspaper. It employs 1,500 people and it is the first printing office we have seen in any land, America not excepted, which fills our ideal. It is all upon one floor 700x400 feet and under the eye of the manager. In this one room the typesetting, binding, presswork, stereotyping are done without confusion at a minimum cost. There is the finest railway station in Bombay to be found in the Orient and its High Court building is quite handsome. Judging by the external, this must be a prosperous city.

## NEAR BABYLON AND GARDEN OF EDEN.

By the way this is the nearest point on our tour to the site of ancient Babylon, or the ancient Ur of the Chaldees, whence came Abraham, or the Garden of Eden. They can be reached from here through the Persian gulf in two or three weeks. It would be too hot to go there if we could spare the time. We learn from travelers that the trip is easy in winter and very interesting. Steamers sail up the River Euphrates to near the site of Babylon, a large part of which lies now in the bed of the river. Many interesting exhumations are being made by Germans.

## THE TOWERS OF SILENCE.

In two former letters we have given accounts of the Hindu method of cremating their dead. The Parsees dispose of theirs in a manner even more revolting. Near Bombay is a spot overlooking the city enclosed by a wall upon which at all times may be seen rows of buzzards, or vultures solemnly perched. The place is called the Towers of Silence. It is the Parsees' burial ground. The dead bodies are taken inside the walls, stripped and laid upon an iron grating and are devoured by these birds of prey. The bones are left to bleach in the sun, and after they return to dust are thrown into the sea.

## TRIP TO COLOMBO.

We had intended going from Bombay to Colombo by rail. But we were warned by old residents that on account of the heat it would be dangerous, at the peril of our lives possibly. After our experience in Central India we were ready to believe it. There have been cases where able-bodied tourists have actually perished upon this trip. There are two or three cities, Madras,

Madura, Trichonopoly and Tuticorin, which we desired to visit, as they contain some interesting temples and ruins, but we had to forego the pleasure. In one of these temples it is claimed that Cain and Abel are buried, and as we had endured almost all kinds of fable we were anxious to look into that also. But we came to Colombo by steamer and had a fine chance to recuperate and cool off.

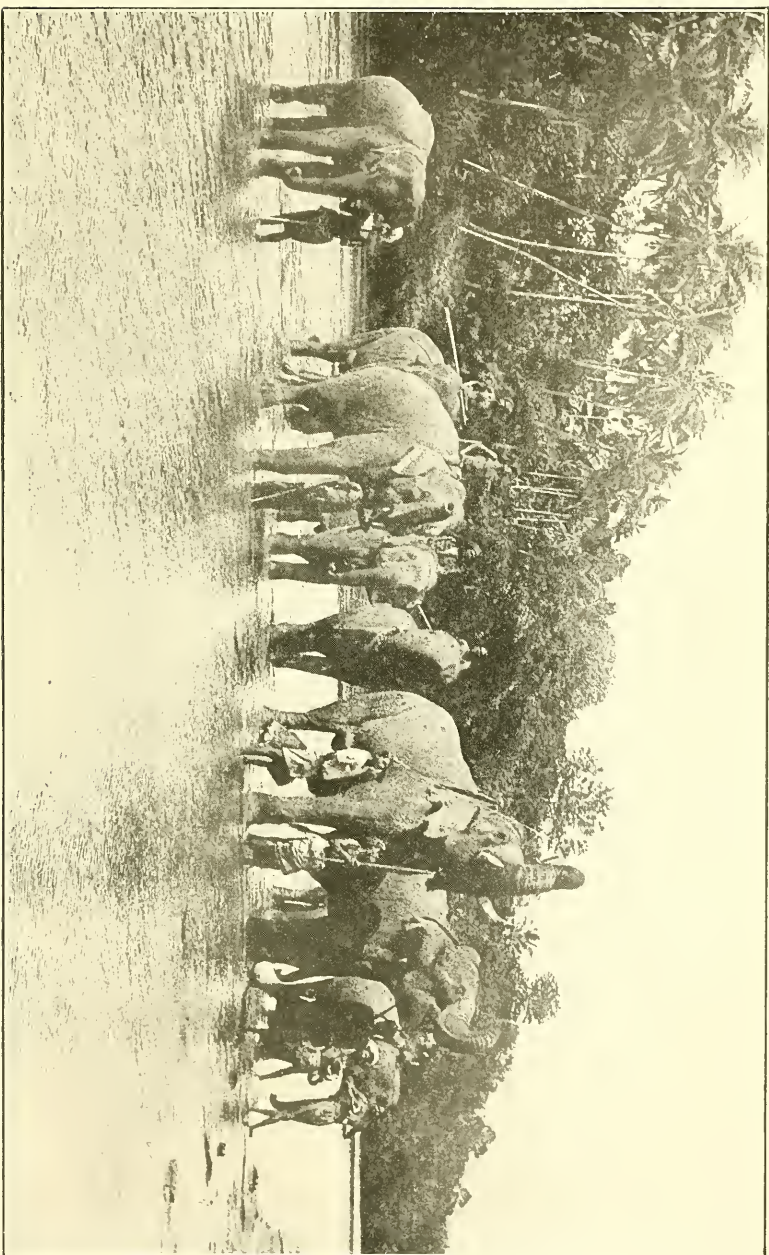
#### THE PEOPLE OF COLOMBO.

Like all seaport cities there is more of a cosmopolitan population at Colombo than in interior places. The city seems prosperous, and the natives appear more intelligent and cleanly than in India. They do not wear many more clothes but they wear clean ones, comb their hair smoothly and both men and women wear tortoise shell combs in the hair. The most distinctive thing we have observed about Colombo is the small ox carts which are universally used for passenger service by the natives. Little oxen are hitched to them. Bits are put in the mouths of these diminutive bovines, they are driven by lines, are harnessed, and it is surprising what loads they can haul and how rapidly they can trot. There is but one ox to a cart. The driver sits within a foot of him, and either whips him, or twists his tail. They trot as rapidly as horses. We saw some hitched to buggies. All over India oxen are driven either by ropes through their nostrils or in their mouths, and the ox cart is the one universal vehicle for passengers and freight.

#### JUGGLERS.

Ever since we have been in India we have made effort to find a juggler who could perform some of the many tricks for which Indian jugglers are famous. We found at Colombo one who did





*ELEPHANTS IN CEYLON*





some queer things. Without the aid of any dark curtains or side lights or mirrors or any apparent assistance, out upon the grass in front of the hotel verandah, with only a cheap bag and a musical instrument from which he evoked most weird sounds, he did many things that were certainly remarkable. He planted a mango seed and apparently made the plant grow while he held a cloth over it. He would produce from his mouth piles of stones, which would as mysteriously disappear. He pulled countless yards of colored cloth out of his mouth, and finally opened his mouth and smoke issued from it. Then a flame poured out which boiled water and set grass on fire. He was within six feet of us. That it was deception we knew, but while he was surrounded on all sides by people no one could detect how he practiced the deception. He is said to be one of the famous jugglers of the world. He is a greasy looking specimen, but neither Hermann nor Kellar nor any other we have seen can excel him.

#### CEYLON'S ATTRACTIONS.

In many respects Ceylon is similar to Java. Its people claim that Bishop Heber had Java in the original of his stanza instead of Ceylon, and that some mean and envious Javanese made the change of the words. Like Java it has beautiful roads, a fine Botanical Garden, an attractive resort at Candy and wonderful buried cities. One of the latter is fifteen miles square and is one of the world's wonders. Its architecture is remarkable, and its origin obscure. The tropical vegetation of the island, the abundance of tea grown are also points of resemblance to Java, while its tropical vegetation is fully as luxuriant. At Euralia is one of the finest winter resorts in Asia. Altogether it is indeed true that every condition as well as every prospect pleases in Ceylon. And it is also true that the people are not as good as they might be.

## THE EMPRESS EUGENIE.

At the Galle Face hotel at which we are stopping in Colombo the Empress Eugenie, widow of Napoleon III, has been spending several weeks. She is quite old and infirm, but retains traces of much of the beauty and dignity of bearing for which she was famous when Empress of France. Probably no woman of her day was more conspicuous and her sad life has excited the sympathy of mankind in all nations. She bears her years and sorrows bravely and even at her advanced age has an attractive personality.

## SIR THOMAS LIPTON, SNAKES AND BIRDS.

Another interesting personality in Ceylon is Sir Thomas Lipton, who won once or twice and probably lost as many times the yacht cup from America in several celebrated races. He has large tea interests here. A few days ago while out motoring he and another gentleman captured a live cobra, the most deadly of snakes, and brought it to the hotel. It was a monster reptile. Among the guests who were much interested in it was the Empress Eugenie. Ceylon probably has more snakes of a deadly kind than any other country in the world. They are so common that the people are not afraid of them. Speaking of snakes reminds us of crows and birds and the way they fly into rooms of the hotel. At times they will light upon the table where you are eating and snatch your food. Hotel proprietors post up notices in the rooms warning guests not to leave their jewelry exposed for fear of the crows.

## RELIGIONS AND CASTE.

As this is the last letter I shall write from India I must before closing call attention to the two influences which more than all others mould the habits and lives of the people and are the chief obstacles to their elevation. One is their religions and the other is the rule of caste. Nowhere in the world do these systems exercise such a powerful and vital control over the people. They are deep rooted through centuries of growth and affect social, moral, intellectual and commercial conditions in a most fundamental manner. All the people have some sort of religion, and it can be said to their credit that however much in error they are devout worshipers. If Christians were as faithful in their devotions their influence would be greater. The vital defect in the heathen religions is that they do not contain the ethical element and do not wield any especial influence over conduct. Seventy per cent, or over two hundred millions, are Hindus. Their religion is a conglomeration of idolatry, fetichism and fable which no one understands so far as we have been able to discover. Its main purpose is to ward off evil spirits and escape post mortem punishment. But there is nothing in it to direct men along the lines of righteousness or to restrain them from evil.

Buddhism was originally a protest against Hinduism, but it has largely lost hold in India, having among its adherents not over three per cent of the people. And they are not widely different from Hindus. The Mohammedans number a little over one-fifth of the inhabitants. They are an improvement upon either the Hindus or the Buddhists in that they believe in one God, accept much of the Old Testament as orthodox and concede that Jesus was a wise and correct teacher. But they hold that Mahomed is

God's prophet, they practice polygamy, as did Mahomed himself and their worship is full of all manner of superstition. The Parsees follow Zoroaster and are fire worshipers. There are but 94,000 of them. All these beliefs hold their devotees with a grip of iron. To apostatize from them is to invite ostracism, malediction and possibly death. They hold their ignorant followers in a vise of fanaticism, that is powerful, and hence the difficulty Christianity has to contend with in converting them.

To this date but one per cent of the people are Christians. Of the four Hinduism is by far the worst. It is concentrated impurity, ignorance, idolatry, fanaticism, yet it controls nearly three-fourths of the people. It teaches a doctrine of reincarnation in two ways: that at death the soul either enters into that of a newly born person or into an animal. If a person is born blind or with some physical or mental or moral defect their theory is that he inherited the soul of a predecessor who was evil, good or bad according to the manner of life of the owner. The Hindus believe in a trinity, in Brahmah, the creator; Vischnu the preserver, and Siva, the destroyer, and that all three are united in one. Each one of these has his followers. The Brahmins are the priests, and the followers of Vischnu and Siva may be identified by the marks of red or white upon their foreheads. Nearly all Hindus have one or other of these marks on their foreheads.

#### AS TO CASTE.

But the worst feature of Hinduism is its cruel system of caste. There are four of these castes which are entitled to precedence in the order named as follows: The Brahmins or priests who are supposed to have sprung from the mouth of Brahm; the Kshatrias or warriors, who sprang from the shoulders of Brahm; the Vaisy-

as or merchants who are supposed to have sprung from his thighs while the Sudras or the agricultural or laboring class who are alleged to have had their birth in his feet. Then there is an out-cast class, whose origin is not given, who are the lowest of all and are called Pariahs. The lines of demarcation between these castes are definitely and rigidly drawn.

The rules concerning them are inflexible. Their violation is sacrilege worse than murder. For a member of a higher class to eat with, enter into business partnership or have any social or personal relations with, especially to marry one of a lower class is to invite ostracism and anathema of the direst kind. Nor is there any opportunity for one caste to rise to another. Once a Brahmin, always a Brahmin, once a Pariah, always a Pariah. It will be at once seen how difficult it is to reach a people who cling to such absurdities. It necessarily obstructs their advancement along all lines and prevents that intercourse with each other which is essential to social progress and order. What makes it worse is that all this fanaticism and folly and superstition has the sanction and veneration of thousands of years and to them more than all other influences is due the fact that India lies steeped in the same ignorance and nonprogressiveness which have hung over it from the beginning of its history.

There is but one solution, but one hope for the dispersion of this darkness and for the letting in of the light, and that is Christianity. What it has done for other nations it, and it only, can do for those nations that are steeped in heathenism. The elevation and regeneration of India and Japan and China and all other Pagan countries will not be accomplished by the sword nor by the pen of diplomacy or statesmanship, nor by commerce, nor by educa-

tion. All these have tried and failed. The work will be only wrought by Christian missions.

After a careful study of all the heathen systems of Asia and a close observation of their influences upon the lives of the people I here place on record my deliberate and solemn belief in Christianity as the only sane and practical code of ethics, as the only religion that is divine and from the true and living God, and as the only hope of the redemption and salvation of all mankind.

## XLII.

### SOME POINTERS ON GLOBE TROTTING.

ON THE RED SEA, April 13, 1908.

Before I started upon this journey a famous globe-trotter gave me a brief bit of advice which has been of incalculable value. It was this: "When you travel around the world carry with you an optimistic mind." After having completed more than half the trip around I not only desire to confirm its wisdom, but to commend it to others. At last it is the mind you carry with you more than the things you see which brings pleasure. An optimistic mind lightens hardships, burnishes with interest even things commonplace, softens hard beds, flavors tasteless food, tolerates, even discovers points of merit and interest in unentertaining people, and keeps joy and hope singing in the heart under all conditions. It is essential to health as well as happiness. Not many, I regret to say, carry it with them. A very large number seem to be hunting for something to grumble about. The railway and steamship lines are loaded with kickers, to use an American term not elegant but expressive. They complain of everything, hotels, steamers, railways, music, scenery, weather, and all else. The more meritorious the thing and the less accustomed they are to good things at home the more fault they find. It is a way they have of impressing others with their high social or commercial station. But they fail. Those, who are used to the best, and know what is what, do not find it necessary to exploit themselves by turning up their noses and berating the remainder of mankind. Some people have no higher purpose in travel than eating and sleeping and mere sensual pleasure. You can not wake them up



to the real objects of travel, and to the fact that these other things are mere incidents.

#### OBSERVATION AND ENERGY.

Two other qualities are essential. One is observation, and the other is energy. The man who is blind or lazy had better stay at home. One must keep his eyes open and must rise early and sit up late. He cannot sit down and consult physical ease. He must keep going. Real travel is alert, incessant hard work. The tourist should keep a diary, write down in it all he sees in order to impress on his mind what he sees and to retain it. If he can get a newspaper to print it so much the better for this will render him more industrious in collecting facts and more careful in getting them correct. As to whether anybody reads it, about that he may smother his conscience.

#### ASIATIC HOTELS.

I have been led into this prefatory homily in order to dispel an impression that what is to follow is the result of any pessimistic or carping spirit. But having related many things which the Orient has, now that I am preparing to leave it is a fitting time to tell of some things which it has not. In the first place let it be said that there is no sort of comparison between life in Asia and in America. Let us begin with the hotels. We have stopped to date at twenty-five. We have not been at one that would compare with either the Jefferson or Southern in St Louis. Only five of them have had elevators, and but four have had bath rooms in which was running water. The best hotel at which we have stopped was the Moana in Honolulu, and the next best the Taj Mahal at Bombay. The charges at the hotels in Japan, China and the

Straits Settlement are outrageously high for the services rendered. The tipping system is akin to robbery. A strong stick and a determined mind are the only protection. No American hotel would tolerate this form of petty larceny which the Asiatic hotels seem to encourage, for this is largely the way their servants get their pay. The hotels also permit, in fact, are partners with hordes of hucksters and tradesmen who hang about the verandas and even besiege the rooms of guests and worry them to the point of desperation to sell them their wares.

AS TO FOOD.

Having had good appetites we have not suffered for food, and have enjoyed the novelty of the changes in different countries. But in many ways it falls far short of that in America. We have not seen a glass of milk or cream since we left Honolulu. We have had everywhere a certain white fluid alleged to be milk, but having no chemist along we have been unable to tell whence it came or what are its constituents. In China and Japan we saw no cows. We have seen them in other countries, but none that struck us as competent to transact business. Rarely have we had a good cup of coffee, and we have no further hope or expectation of a juicy piece of beefsteak until we reach America. What beef they furnish is tough and insipid. Chicken is served at every meal, but it lacks the flavor of the American fowl. Even eggs are lacking in savor. There is a wearisome monotony about the bills of fare at the hotels. At least five courses of meat are served at every hotel, for it is a great country for meat, but of them mutton, which is really good, is about the only meat which is palatable.

## THE FRUITS.

The fruits, like the other food, are insipid. We have had but one good orange and that was from California. We found it on a Japanese steamer between Shanghai and Hong Kong. The oranges are small, scrawny and full of seed. There are no lemons. India is practically without fruit, and China and Japan are not much better. In Java the mangosteen and rambutan are juicy, but lack substance and vigor. There is no fruit anywhere in Asia to compare with the American apple or peach, or raspberry, or strawberry. We ran across a watermelon in Burmah. It was green on the outside and red inwardly, but that was all. It bore no sort of resemblance to the American variety. Even a negro would not have recognized it. And the vegetables are as insipid as the fruits. A ripe, rich tomato, a fat roasting ear of corn, a luscious dish of cabbage or beets or peas. How those of America dwell upon the tablets of our memory. They are absent from the tables of the Oriental hotels except in wretched counterfeits. The bananas, in this land where they are one of the chief products, are not to be compared with those to be had even in Missouri.

## AS TO WATER.

And then there is water, nature's beverage, which we have been taught from childhood is the elixir of life, to be sought above all drinks, in fact the only drink, which bears the stamp of morality and health. I have thought of all the temperance societies that have existed in the past, have recalled the temperance addresses to which I have listened and which in fervid eloquence preached the Gospel of water. There have come across the ocean tidings of the great temperance wave that is sweeping over America. We

have even heard that there was to be a local option election at our home, the result of which we have not heard, the purpose of which was to make water King, the only drink. We have sailed over twenty thousand miles of water since we left America, and yet for nearly four months we have hardly dared to drink a drop. What we did drink was in defiance of the warning that it was at the peril of our lives. There is hardly a week that we do not hear of some reckless tourist who has died from cholera or plague or some other dread disease because he dared to drink water. Do not jump at the conclusion that we have been compelled to resort to drinks that are stronger and that we are all wild inebriates reveling in wine or beer or even Scotch whiskey and will return home candidates for Dwight. We have done nothing of the kind. But we have had to drink apollinaris, soda, Tansan, lemonade, and other adulterated and charged waters until we doubt whether we could recognize the pure article if we saw it. You must admit that things are pretty bad in a country where water is conceded to have death lurking within it, to hold a million microbes to the spoonful. We are inclined to think that there is a good deal of nonsense about this fear of water, and our private opinion is that many make its alleged impurity a pretext and gladly so for drinking whiskey. We heard a little whipper-snapper of a doctor on one steamer even declare that in his judgment the drinking of whiskey was essential to health and life in India. Such tommyrot is undoubtedly the cause of much of the intemperance which prevails to an extent that is alarming among foreigners in the Orient. If there is a spot in the world where a crusade for water needs to be started it is here.

## THE STEAMSHIPS.

The best food and service and the sweetest and coolest atmosphere one enjoys in the Orient is upon the steamships. We have therefore hailed with eagerness every opportunity to board one. To date we have never been in a storm and conditions have been delightful. We have not yet been upon a bad steamer. Most of them have been excellent, but we must give the palm to the North German Lloyd as the finest of them all. I write this upon one of their beautiful steamers as we are sailing from Colombo to Port Said. We have been on the ship for five days and are due at Port Said five days hence. The sea is smooth, the atmosphere delightful and the service all that could be asked. No other ocean experience has been equal to it. Instead of the Indian ocean being hot and sultry as we had expected it is cool and balmy. While the days are pleasant the nights are beyond description. The deep blue sky and brilliant stars, the Southern cross standing out in bold relief, the placid dark blue ocean, the delicious atmosphere stirred only by the gentlest breezes, the music of two bands at either end of the ship, the finely dressed people, the sensation of quiet and restfulness, all these make a night upon this ocean something to linger like a dream in memory always. We today enter the Red Sea, and the fact that we are so near to lands hallowed by a history sacred to all who believe in the Christian's Bible and the Christian's God imparts additional interest to the experience, and makes one grateful that he is alive and blessed with health and such opportunities.

## HAVE HAD NO HARDSHIPS.

Do not gather from what has been here written that we have suffered from hardship upon this tour. On the contrary the ex-

perience has been one of continual pleasure and delight. These slight discomforts, or rather the lack of all the comforts of American life has given variety and novelty to the trip, and caused us to seek the more for compensating enjoyments in the sights along the way. Barring a slight accident which kept the writer in his room several weeks in Japan and a chance to rest, we have not had a day's sickness or delay or discomfort. Nothing worth having in this world can be obtained without sacrifice, and with our optimistic mind ever with us these strenuous experiences have become pleasures.

#### NO COMPARISON WITH AMERICA.

While there is much in the Orient to interest the traveler the conclusion is forced upon him the farther he goes that this country is yet a thousand years behind America, and there is not much prospect that it will ever attain to rivalry. In the first place the Creator has made these people upon a lower plane. They never can reach unto the estate of the Anglo-Saxon. The wide chasm between the two races is nowhere more vividly illustrated than over here. Everywhere, when the two are thrown together, the white man rises immediately to pre-eminence, and the yellow and black races recognize and accord to him the superior place. God has also made this country for the people who now inhabit it. Their color and organizations indicate it. The heat is too great or the cold too intense for the whites. Nowhere in Asia, unless it be in China will it ever be practicable for Europeans and Americans to live. It will not be possible there because it is already occupied by Chinamen, has been for thousands of years and will and should be for thousands to come.

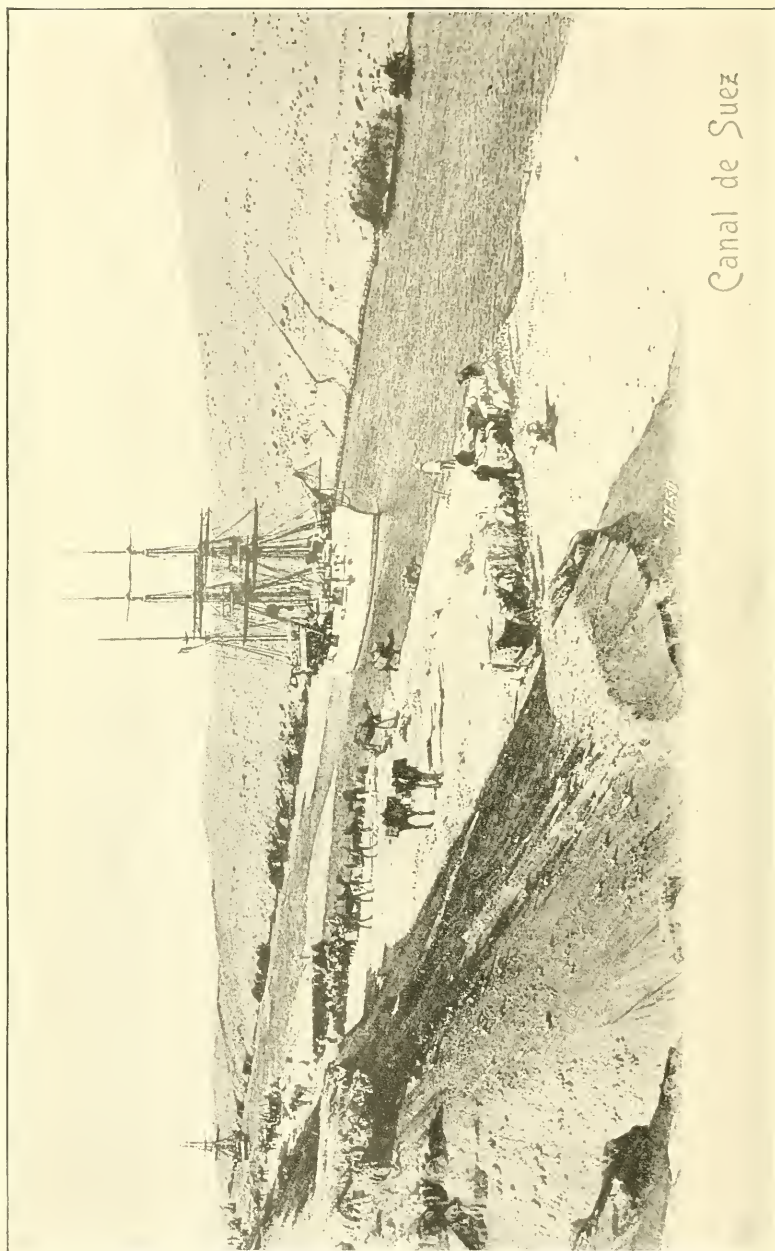
While the Asiatics have wrought well in some lines, are skilled

artisans and clever tradesmen, one looks in vain for any really great achievements as the result of their thousands of years of history. In commerce, and government and education and religion and in social life they have made but little progress beyond that which has been wrought for them by foreigners, or which they have done under the latter's tutelage or in imitation of them. It is true that the splendid temples and tombs and other architectural piles are remarkable. But these have been due to four causes, religious fanaticism, which led to the belief that these structures purchased eternal happiness, unlimited power of a monarch who could command thousands and if necessary millions of the people to work upon them without pay, the servility of the people, who would submit to this employment, and the unquestioned genius of the architects, who are thought to have been either Persians or Greeks or Romans.

The more one observes conditions in the Orient the more he is grateful that he lives in a land and under a flag which vouchsafes health, happiness, prosperity, progress and freedom. The more also he should realize his mission to help and to elevate these people who have sat so long in the regions of darkness, and whom it is our duty as their brethren to bring into the realms of light.







Canal de Suez

AFRICA—EGYPT.



### XLIII.

### AFRICA.

PORT SAID, April 17, 1908.

When we reached Aden, the port of entrance to the Red Sea, we encountered for the first time our black brother of the kinky head. He came upon the vessel in swarms and during our stay of several hours plied a vigorous trade with the passengers in ostrich plumes. Ostriches are plentiful in this region. We were reminded that we were within a few miles and in sight of Africa. Many travelers take vessels south from this point and disembark at a port called Mombasa several hundred miles distant whence there is a railroad to Lake Nyanza in the State of Uganda, five hundred miles in the interior. The trip is quite interesting. The region is a wild one. In part of it the killing of wild animals is forbidden and great droves of them are to be seen. They come to within a short distance of the trains. Elephants, zebra, giraffes, deer, lions, tigers, rhinoceroses, and all manner of wild beasts may be seen in unlimited number. We had read a statement to this effect in an interview in a London paper with Sir Winston Churchill who had recently traveled over this railroad, and were skeptical about it. But upon our steamer were a Mr. Prynne and wife of St. Louis just returning from the same tour and they assured me that it was correct. Mr. Prynne had been there upon a visit to Mr. McMillan, formerly of St. Louis, whose father was once a prominent Wabash official, and who has a luxurious home with all modern conveniences in that wild region. This is the region which Mr. Roosevelt contemplates visiting.

## ABYSSINIA AND ARABIA.

In sailing up the Red Sea we pass between Arabia upon the north and Abyssinia upon the south. Both are interesting to foreigners, but are closed doors. Especially is Arabia. Mecca is not over a hundred miles from the coast. Within its sacred precincts by Mohammedan edict no Christian heretic is allowed to enter. It is said that but three or four Europeans have been there in fifty years. They went in disguise. Among these was Sir Richard Burton, whose account of his visit is one of the most thrilling narratives in literature. Arabia is nearly all desert. Its inhabitants are all Mohammedans and Bedouins. Mecca as is well-known is visited annually by more pilgrims than any other spot on earth. Abyssinia is also largely sand, but strange to say its inhabitants are mostly Christian, although they live in isolation. Its King of Kings, as he is called, is Menelik, and he is one of the few absolute monarchs that are left. He is said to be wise and humane. Abyssinia is one of the few countries which Great Britain has been unable to get possession of. England controls nearly everything else, except the Congo State, in Africa, which is worth having. Abyssinia is six times the size of the state of Missouri and contains the same number of inhabitants, between three and four millions. It is an agricultural country, but the people do not believe in work—like many other Christians. Barley, wheat, rice and the ordinary vegetables are grown. A railroad has recently been built through the country. North of Abyssinia we pass Nubia, also a sandbank, and then we reach Egypt, of which more later.

## AS TO AFRICA.

Of course, we can not enter into any detailed account of a country as large as Africa. But we learn from tourists who have recently visited it, some facts that may be of interest. Since Stanley's explorations it has attracted much attention, and considerable capital has been invested in various sections. Many thousands of miles of railway have been built in different directions, making entrance to it easy. There is a railroad to Khartoum, another out into the Sahara and many in the southern portion. The opinion is gaining that fully nine-tenths of the country is impracticable for settlement by the white race. One reason is that a large part is desert. This desert by the way is not all sand nor is it all a level plain. Much of it is broken and mountainous. It is simply void of water and vegetation, and there is but little prospect of reclaiming it by irrigation. Wolves and jackals are its chief inhabitants.

## HEAT AND DISEASE.

Another obstacle to occupation by white people is the intense heat. Still another and more serious trouble is the universal prevalence of disease, cholera, smallpox, fevers, plague and all manner of deadly infections and maladies. Some are seemingly irremediable. In the state of Uganda there is what is called the "sleeping sickness," an almost surely fatal infection caused by the bite of a fly, which has of late years swept off millions of the population. There are numerous poisonous insects which penetrate the skin, deposit poisonous microbes and rarely fail to kill. It is not only hazardous to live in the country, but to visit it. The English government has expended a great deal of money in sanitary commissions which have endeavored to discover some antidote for these diseases, but they have made little headway.



## SINAI AND THE ISRAELITES.

Before reaching the northern end of the Red Sea we passed within sight of Mount Sinai. It is one of a range and difficult to distinguish. We were anxious to go there, but the distance is over a hundred miles and the trip is a hard one, especially at this season, when it is hot. We also pass at Suez what is called the Wells of Moses, about which several large palm trees are growing. They may not have been the wells from which the children of Israel drank but they were upon their line of march. A sort of thrill passed through us when we felt that within the range of our vision was the identical pathway of the Exodus, and it became keener when we reached the place where the waters rolled back and they passed over dry shod. The wonder is often expressed that they did not go around the Northern border of the sea. But there was a high wall extending from the Mediterranean to the Red Sea guarded by Egyptian soldiers which obstructed their march. It followed the line of the Suez canal. The width of the Sea at this point is about three miles. It is now the harbor of the city of Suez. There is an open plateau on both shores upon which it would have been easy for a large multitude to have assembled and reached the water.

## THE SUEZ CANAL.

At Suez we entered the Suez Canal. The sail through it was very interesting. Unlike the Panama it is a sea level canal without locks. It is one hundred and twenty-one feet wide, thirty feet deep in the center and ninety-nine miles in length. It was opened in 1869 and cost \$120,000,000. Its estimated value now is \$150,000,000. Its annual receipts are \$20,000,000 or over fifteen per cent upon its original cost. It is operated by a company of

thirty-two administrators of whom twenty are French and ten are English. The government of Great Britain owns one-sixth of the stock. Three fifths of the vessels or tonnage which pass through it are British. Four thousand vessels traverse it annually and pay an average of \$5,000 each for the privilege. The vessel upon which we are traveling gave a check for \$10,000 toll fee before entering. The rates are a dollar and fifty cents for every ton of freight, two dollars for every adult passenger and one dollar for every child. No ships drawing more than twenty-eight feet can navigate it. There are several Atlantic steamers that could not sail on it. Ships are only permitted to run six miles an hour, and there are widened portions every ten miles for those which meet to pass each other. The canal runs through a sandy plain. As far as the eye can reach is desert, broken by a range of mountains upon the south and by occasional clumps of palms. The work of widening and dredging is in constant progress. The shores are supported by stone walls which reach to but a few feet above the water. Much of this wall is in ruins. The canal is in poor repair. About twenty-five miles from Suez it enters the Bitter Lakes, a series of which lie in its pathway and stretch out upon both sides. On the trip we are reminded continually that we are pursuing a pathway parallel to that of the children of Israel in the Exodus, and every detail of description of the country as given in the Bible is confirmed.

#### AWAY FROM THE ASIATICS.

We must confess a feeling of relief that after five months among the half naked natives of Asia we are finally away from them. They had "gotten upon our nerves," to use an expression frequently heard among foreigners over here. A lady who keeps

house in India told us that they had so wrought upon her that the result had been to bring on paralysis for which she had to go to America for two years to get relief. The natives do not appear to have any nerves. They yell at each other until many of them are deaf. They never understand you, and they will never wait for you to explain. Their genius for doing the wrong thing is unrivalled. They can never be hurried. Their capacity for exasperating is unlimited. Rudyard Kipling has put it in clever verse as follows :

It is not good for the Christian race  
To worry the Aryan brown.  
For the white man riles  
And the brown man smiles,  
And it weareth the Christian down.  
But the end of the white  
Is a tombstone bright,  
With the epitaph of the late deceased.  
And the epitaph clear,  
"A fool lies here  
Who tried to hustle the East."

KIPLING AND CRAWFORD.

One hears much of Kipling in India. His father was a prominent citizen of the city of Lahore, where he built up a fine museum and was public leader in other ways. Rudyard Kipling was formerly a reporter on the Allahabad Pioneer and thus glided into literature. His books are fine pictures of Indian life. You have perhaps noticed that some countries and climates beget poets, and are a congenial and fertile soil for literature. This has been true of India. At Delhi we visited the tomb of a poet whose songs are

yet sung all over India as are those of Burns in Scotland. His tomb is kept covered with fresh flowers by his admirers although he has been dead many years. Many of the people have an appreciation of literature. Francis Marion Crawford, the novelist, came to India as a soldier, never having had any literary inclination. But the romantic life of the country inspired him to write a book. He became famous and henceforward the microbe multiplied and he wrote many books.

But while there may be occasional geniuses who are inspired by the peculiar conditions of tropical life this section of the world will never produce men or women who can bring things to pass as do those of the temperate zones. Nor will it ever be possible for the white race to live here and achieve the same results as where the climate is less hot and enervating. This must ever be the home of the yellow and the black man who never will and can never attain to the estate of the white man.

## XLIV.

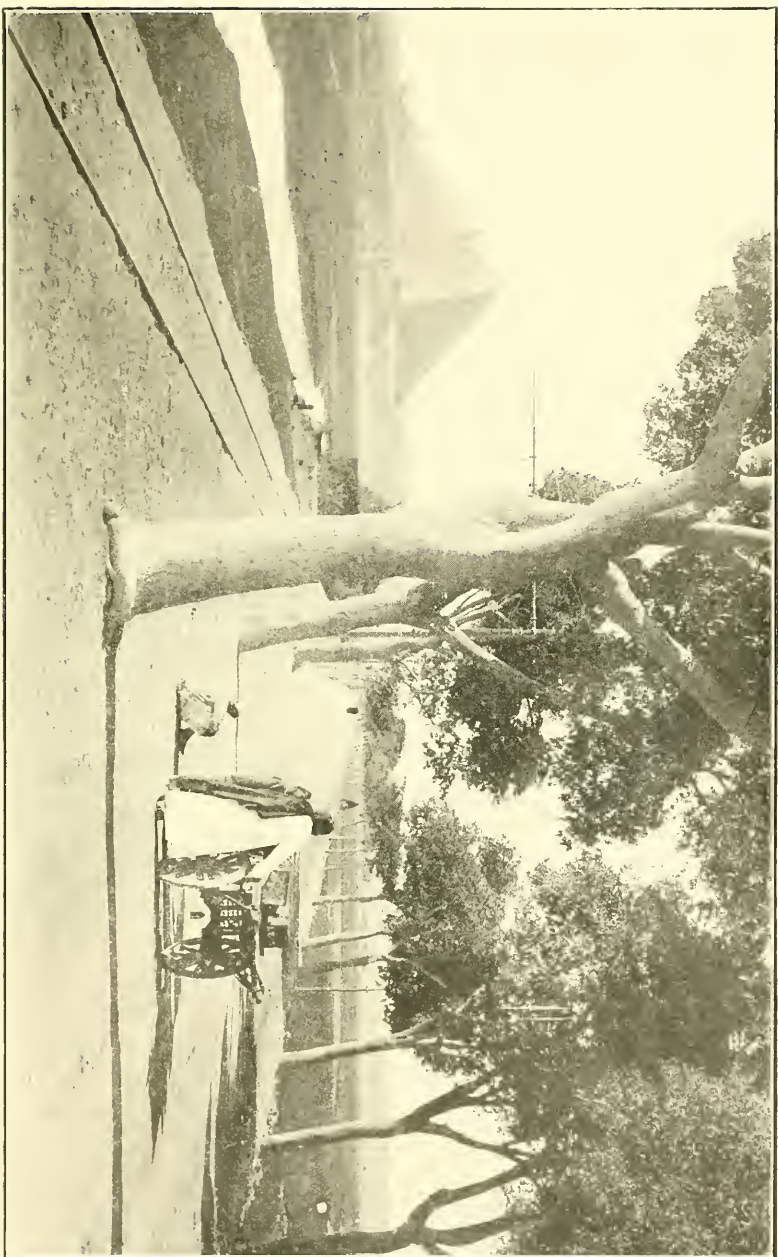
### EGYPT.

CAIRO, EGYPT, April 20, 1908.

The increasing intensity of the heat and the prevalence of plague compelled the cutting short of our visit to Egypt. We are also anxious to reach Palestine before it shall be too warm to make a thorough tour of that country. But a week's stay in this ancient land has been most interesting. We came to Cairo from Port Said, the western terminus of the Suez Canal, where the statue of DeLesseps, its projector and builder, recalls the great debt the world owes that extraordinary man. There is nothing else in Port Said especially noteworthy. The trip by rail from that city to Cairo, a distance of some hundred and twenty-five miles is one not to be forgotten. A fourth of the distance is through desert, and along the canal. The view of ships in the latter at some distance is at first startling. The canal is hidden and the monster vessels appear as if sailing along the desert. The fiction of the prairie schooner enlarged into a mammoth ocean steamer is here realized.

### THE NILE VALLEY.

The proverb "as rich as the valley of the Nile" is well deserved. Veering away from the canal our train runs near this historic stream where one could easily cast a stone across it. There is nothing about the river specially different from other streams so far as appearance goes. But without it Egypt would be a barren desert. Through its long course of nearly four thousand miles it overflows and enriches the adjoining country for a distance of from ten to thirty miles, depositing upon it a coating of rich soil in some



THE EGYPTIAN PYRAMIDS





places fifty feet in depth, making the region it irrigates the most fertile upon the face of the earth. The soil is practically inexhaustible, and yields wheat, alfalfa, cotton and other products, including all kinds of vegetables in rich abundance, some of them two or three times a year. The train runs through this verdant, opulent region. The green fields of wheat and alfalfa and barley, the vegetable gardens, the fruits, the flowers, the waving palm trees, the thriving villages, the many workers in the fields, the well-built roads, with their long trains of camels and donkeys, all of these present a scene of freshness and life and prosperity which we have seen nowhere else, not even in Japan. What a contrast with the parched plains and impoverished population of India!

A striking contrast is the expanse of green with the bleak and cheerless desert which lies just beyond.

#### THE RISE IN THE NILE.

The Nile begins to rise in June and continues until September. It then gradually falls until the following June. We are therefore seeing it near the ebb. It rises in some places to a height of forty-nine feet above its lowest water mark, and in a few regions to a height below twenty-five feet. Its water is from rains in the desert or mountains near its source, and with the overflow brings a constant accretion of soil which makes the stickiest mud we have ever seen. It rains but little in lower Egypt. At Cairo there are not a dozen rains a year, and they are only showers. In some places it never rains. The country is therefore wholly dependent upon the Nile. At times it fails to overflow, and these are periods of famine about which we read in the Bible. In these modern days they do not come often, and never, as in the times of the Pharaohs, seven years in succession.

The system of irrigation in almost universal use is the same as it was in the days of Moses and Pharaoh, by pumping the water from the Nile or from ditches fed by the river. These pumps, mere water wheels, are turned by oxen. I asked why steam or other modern appliances were not used. The answer was that where labor is so cheap labor-saving contrivances are unnecessary.

At present a large dam is being built at Assouan, where there will be stored an enormous quantity of water to be used both in irrigating a large area and to be held in reserve for years when the river does not overflow. This dam will submerge many of the most interesting ruins in Egypt. Archaeologists are now busy rescuing them before they will be lost forever. But modern progress cannot be stayed by the ruins of an effete past.

#### CAIRO.

This is the largest and most important city in Egypt. It contains 570,000 people, and is more like a modern European city than any other we have seen upon our travels in the East. This is due chiefly to the fact that it has become the great winter resort for the royal and wealthy classes of European nationalities. The climate from December to April is delightful. Tourists come here in thousands during these months, and spend money in a most prodigal manner. There are a half dozen fine large hotels which charge prices that would put even the Waldorf-Astoria to shame, and as in all fashionable resorts the population is thoroughly organized to forage upon tourists. The streets are broad, and well constructed, the buildings are handsome and nearly all of stone, there are trolley lines, fashionable equipages and handsomely dressed people, and the city at night reminds one of Brussels or Paris. The people gather in cafes which are open and upon the

streets, and there is the greatest rush and whirl I have seen anywhere outside of Europe or America. For the first time I have observed many fine horses. But coachmen are merciless and drive furiously through the streets. The crack of their whips as they lash their beasts can be heard at all hours of the day and night, and are not only disturbing to one's quiet, but to his nerves and his sense of mercy.

#### A PUGILISTIC PEOPLE.

The first characteristic of the people which impresses the visitor is that they are self-assertive, contentious and cruel. The Israelites of old had good ground to complain. The first day we arrived we witnessed several fights and for the first time we began to see the genuine, old time drunkard, and to feel we were getting near to America. In India it was a common occurrence to see Englishmen kicking the natives. But we have not observed any Englishmen kicking an Egyptian. If we do we will expect to see a dead Englishman. If there is any kicking done it is more apt to be upon the part of the Egyptian, for they seem to enjoy provoking a fight, or an imposition upon some one else. Since we have been in Egypt we have learned how it was that Moses became exasperated when he saw one of them abusing an Israelite. We can also understand why he slew the Egyptian. Otherwise the probability is he would not have lived to lead the children of Israel to the Promised Land. England rules this country as she does India, but in a much less cruel and domineering manner. The reason is plain. The people would not stand it. The streets of Cairo would flow with blood if England served Egyptians as she does the Indians.

## ANCIENT RELICS AND MONUMENTS.

The chief interest the tourist has in Egypt is its relation to antiquity. Everywhere are to be seen splendid memorials of a civilization which antedated that of Greece and Rome and than which there is probably none older in the history of mankind. This city of Cairo, itself of great age, lies between the ancient cities of Memphis and On, which were only twenty or thirty miles apart and which were the homes of the Pharaohs, of the Rameses and of Moses and Joseph, and were in their day the proudest centers of government and commerce and learning on the earth. Now all that is left to mark the sites of these two ancient cities are a few ruined temples and obelisks, splendid in their architecture, but also indicative of the densest ignorance and superstition. I shall not undertake to describe any of them. It has been done so often, and in so much better way than I could that it would be a waste of energy. Besides it is hardly possible to convey by pen a correct idea of them. I have read of them all my life, but it was not until I saw them that I obtained satisfactory knowledge.

## THE PYRAMIDS.

The two great pyramids near Cairo are well worth seeing. The pictures of them, unlike most other ancient monuments, afford a very good idea of their appearance. They are reached by a beautiful driveway from the city. It is overarched with trees and is about seven miles in length. It requires an hour and a quarter to drive to them from the center of the city. We made the trip twice and found it most interesting. Along the way we passed hundreds of camels loaded with alfalfa, fields of which stretch on either side of the road as far as the eye can see them. The pyramids themselves are on the edge of the desert. Sand has drifted up

to their foundations many feet. But they are well preserved. The largest is 750 feet square and nearly 500 feet high. It is built of huge stones which are said to have either been floated down the Nile or gotten from a neighboring quarry. There is a companion pyramid of same construction, not quite so large, which, when built was covered with alabaster. There are two others much smaller. They were built originally as tombs of the kings, and it is supposed were made in this form and magnitude as protection of the bodies of the buried monarchs against the overflow of the Nile. Near to them is the Sphinx, often described, which some ancient king is said to have erected as his monument. At Memphis, ten miles distant, are other pyramids, smaller, but of same plan of construction. Also at Memphis are the Tombs of the Sacred Bulls where these bovine deities were buried with more care and splendor than were bestowed even upon human monarchs. This ancient city also contains numerous other temples and monuments. At the city of On only an obelisk remains. There is an interest in these cities far above all these memorials of a Pagan idolatry. In them no doubt resided Moses. Here he was learned in all the wisdom of the Egyptians and inaugurated his work of disenthraling his people from bondage.

#### EGYPT IN BIBLICAL HISTORY.

At last the chief charm of Egypt is not in its ruined temples or obelisks, the glories of its ancient kings, or its conquests, its wealth, or even its achievements in art and architecture, or in its climate, or its Nile, or its modern cities, but in the fact that it was the scene of certain great events which are held in sacred memory by all the Christian world and are among the most important and dramatic in the history of the race. As upon a quiet night I sailed

through the Suez canal I could call to mind that upon one side lay the pathway whence two million bondsmen were led thirty-five hundred years before by a pillar of fire to the Land of Promise; while upon the other side lay another road down which came their ancestor, Abraham, and still later Joseph, the marvelous boy, who under the Providence of God was not only to rescue Egypt and start her upon a career of prosperity but to become a benefactor and an example to all mankind. Still later his brethren came down the same highway and then his father. But more important and wondrous than all was the flight of the God child along this same road, fifteen hundred years later. Egypt, having been a training school to his ancestors, was to be a place of rescue to Him. Thus has Egypt been a most important and interesting factor in the history as well as the salvation of men. While her history is veiled in shadow, from it gleams a light that has illumined the centuries.

#### A MOHAMMEDAN UNIVERSITY.

One of the most interesting institutions in Cairo is the Mohammedan University. Its name is Elashker. It is said to be 950 years old, and is therefore, we suppose, the oldest university in the world. Its number of students no one seems to know, but it is claimed to be all the way from 4,000 to 14,000. So far as we could learn it had no catalogue. There are two or three hundred teachers. The only branches taught are the Arabic language, Egyptian jurisprudence and the Koran. We visited the institution during recitation hour. We were required to cover our shoes with mocasins, when we were admitted to an open court paved with marble and about 600 feet square. Upon all sides were open doors to large rooms, and this entire space, occupying several acres, was covered with students, sitting upon the floor tailor fashion and all

seemingly reciting at one time. Many were swaying to and fro evidently memorizing, for it is said that the teaching consists almost entirely in committing to memory without any special reference to a knowledge of the thing memorized. The students were of all ages from boys not over ten years to old men. The classes were gathered around the teachers as they sat upon the pavement together. No language is permitted to be spoken in the University except the Arabic.

#### OTHER SCHOOLS.

In Cairo are several large institutions of learning; one of engineering, another of law, another of irrigation and another of medicine. There are also many private schools. The government expends but little upon education. Most of the people are ignorant, but few being able to read.



## XLV.

### SIGHTS SEEN IN EGYPT.

CAIRO, EGYPT, April 25, 1908.

Of the alleged ten millions of people in Egypt over nine millions are Mohammedans. Nearly all the people are Arabs. There are but few pure blood Egyptians. There are Turks and French and English, in fact all nationalities. But the Arabs predominate and all are Mohammedans. They believe in one god and that Mahomet is his prophet. They are more difficult for Christianity to reach than any other heathen. But they occupy a plane higher than those who bow down to idols and who believe that the soul at death passes into an animal. They are very devout and many of them know the Koran by heart. They are democratic. Prince and pauper stand upon the same plane. The spectacle of the Khedive and a beggar bowing side by side in prayer is a common one. There is no caste, or race distinction. There are no social grades. This is the great secret of their power. They object to Christianity on the ground that while it recognizes religious equality it practices social discrimination. But their standards are low; and the moral life of the people is not the best.

#### THE ALABASTER MOSQUE.

There are said to be five hundred Mosques in Cairo. But the finest is the Mohammed Ali Pasha or Alabaster Mosque. It covers five acres and reminds one of St. Paul's Cathedral at Rome. The building is lined with pure alabaster and the pillars and dome and internal finish are noble specimens of architecture. The floors are covered with costly rugs and the chandeliers and decorations are gorgeous. It is 125 years old and is situated upon what is

called the citadel from which there is a magnificent view of the city and of the country far beyond. The Nile, the pyramids, the many spires and domes and the many miles of verdure present a spectacle of rare and striking interest.

#### TOMBS OF THE KINGS.

The Mohammedans, in fact the people of Egypt from time immemorial, have taken extraordinary care of their dead. Five thousand years ago they embalmed bodies so that they are preserved unto this day. They encased them in stone sarcophagi several inches thick. They even erected the pyramids which will stand to the end of time so that in them the bodies of their dead might be forever preserved. We visited the tombs of the Mohammedan kings, where are buried the kings of several dynasties. Their bodies are enclosed in tombs of beautiful alabaster elaborately embellished with gold and placed in rooms carpeted with Brussels carpets and Persian rugs and hung with damask curtains. There they have been kept for hundreds of years, as if yet the tenants of the home. There is none of the coldness or isolation or repulsiveness of the tomb. The living move in and out among them as though their dead were yet tenants of a home. The methods of the Egyptians in caring for their dead are in striking contrast with the Hindus who burn theirs, or the Parsees who give theirs to the vultures, or the Chinese who bury theirs in unmarked graves. We must confess that this reverence for the dead is a distinguishing characteristic of the Egyptians to be admired.

## THE MUSEUM.

The Orient is noted for its museums. I have heretofore referred to those at Batavia in Java, and at Calcutta, and Singapore. But in some respects the museum in Cairo surpasses them all or any other in the world. In it are not only specimens of Egyptian architecture most ancient and beautiful, and implements of war and industries of all ages, but it contains the actual mummies of Rameses I and Rameses II, and others of these ancient Pharaohs and monarchs, who have occupied such a conspicuous place in history. The preservation of their mummies is so perfect that even the color of their hair and the contour of their faces are retained. The shroud or cloth wrapping one of them looks as if it were not five years old, although there is every evidence that the mummy has an age of several thousand years. The granite sarcophagi or coffins in which they are found are in the shape of the human figure, are several inches in thickness and have inscriptions in hieroglyphics upon them which have been deciphered. There is no doubt therefore as to their age and identity. They look as fresh and perfect as if just made.

There is shown the mummy of the Pharaoh who oppressed the Israelites and it is claimed that his identity is established beyond question. It is contended that even the Biblical record, while it states that the Egyptians were overwhelmed in the Red Sea, does not declare that Pharaoh himself was among the number.

The heads and features of these ancient potentates indicate men of high intellectuality. They are of what is known as the Grecian mould, are of clear cut, and refined outlines, and their bodies are of great length. They must have been athletic and intellectual.

In the tombs of these kings were discovered their crowns and the jewelry they wore and the adornments of their palaces and

their armour, and the gold and silver plates of their tables. They are costly, in great quantities and beautiful, and are to be seen in the museum near where the mummies repose.

There are also mummies of fish and sheep and alligators and oxen and other sacred animals, which were as carefully embalmed and preserved as were the kings.

Inside the tombs were buried wheat and flowers and barley and other grain and there were deposited with them small hard stones cut into the shape of the beetle, a sacred insect, and upon them were stamped the dynasty in which they were manufactured. They were emblems of immortality and by placing them in the tombs with a monarch there was an expression of faith that he would live forever. Or it may have been that there was thought to be some virtue in the beetle stone which would assure the passage of the soul of the king into eternal life. These beetle stones are called scarabs and are highly valued as jewelry. They are well authenticated and are interesting souvenirs.

#### THE ZOOLOGICAL GARDEN.

The collection of wild animals in the Zoo at Cairo is the finest we have seen, unless we except the one at Calcutta. The specimens of lions, tigers and reptiles are very fine, and there is quite an exhibition of deer, porcupine, and birds of various varieties, in fact all the fowl and beasts to be found in the tropics. A curious animal we do not remember to have seen in any menagerie is the white-tailed Gnu, which has a head something like that of a water buffalo and a body, including mane and beautiful white tail, like a horse. The body is brown. The most interesting specimen we saw was a giraffe, whose head is over twelve feet from the ground and which could eat off a roof of a house fifteen and possibly

twenty feet high. He would not have trouble in pulling coconuts off of palm trees or stealing clothes out of second or even third story windows. We saw two sights near the Zoo which remind us much of America. One was a mule and the other was a drunkard. Possibly I have referred to these before. But both are so unusual in the East and so usual in America that they left an impression.

#### THE GOVERNMENT.

To the credit of Great Britain it can be said that her rule in Egypt has been beneficial and uplifting. Some twenty-six years ago when Egypt was in practically a bankrupt condition both England and France took charge of her finances. The result was that the country passed into a condition of subjection to Great Britain. The debt has been to a large extent extinguished, and the country appears prosperous. The people are controlling their own affairs to a much greater degree than the people of India control theirs. In real fact Great Britain has them under her wing.

I saw the Khedive. He is a nice looking young fellow, is not Egyptian in appearance, but looks more like an American. He seems about thirty years of age and appears as if he would enjoy a good cigar and a drink. If he were in St. Louis you would take him for a son of a millionaire who liked a horse race and took his lunch at the noon-day club and spent his evenings at bridge whist. He has a pleasant, harmless face, and Great Britain is permitting him to play at royalty much as she does the Maharajahs in India. There are a few thousand English soldiers in Egypt, and a large native army. When the Khedive refuses to take advice or evinces a disposition to do his own thinking the British lion shows his teeth just a bit, and the Khedive is soon in

line. Great Britain knows she has a good thing in the possession of the valley of the Nile and the many attractions of Egypt. She also knows the people will fight. So she is proceeding carefully, astutely and with diplomacy, but all the time is strengthening her grip upon things.

## OSTRICH FARM.

In Heliopolis, the site of the ancient city of On, now part of the suburbs of Cairo, is one of the largest ostrich farms in the world. There are 1,400 of the huge birds. They had just been plucked when we visited the place and presented a naked and destitute appearance. They yield annually \$40 worth of feathers each. The white and black feathers grow upon the male and the grey upon the female. They are long-lived. Some attain to the age of sixty years and most of them live to be forty. No other birds mate as they do. The devotion of the male to the female is beautiful. When she dies he pines away and dies. When he dies she does not pine as he does but she never marries again. He also helps her in raising the children. He takes turns with her in sitting upon the eggs. Each sits upon them three hours. It requires six weeks to hatch them. The male ostrich is a model husband and can give many pointers worthy of imitation by other husbands who walk on two feet. They raise a family of ten to twelve a year, and the business of selling their feathers is quite profitable.

## AN OBELISK AND THE PLAGUES.

Near the ostrich farm stands an obelisk, the only relic of ancient On. It is similar to Cleopatra's needle to be seen in Central Park, New York. It is sunk in the ground, or rather the soil from

the silt of the Nile has been deposited about it to several feet in thickness. But a space has been excavated around it which is partly filled with water and is of a blood red color. We were informed that there is some quality or element in vegetation of certain kinds here which dyes water red. Our thoughts recurred to the ten plagues in Pharaoh's time. And we wondered if this was not the natural method the Almighty used to color the water. All the other plagues exist here yet in various forms. We can bear testimony as to the flies which are the most vicious to be found anywhere we have been. So strong is their assault and so pertinaciously do they stick that people carry brushes of long hair with handles to fight them. You may see people in hotel dining rooms, and parlors, and the verandahs and on the streets with these weapons of war, perpetually battling with the flies. If they were any worse in Pharaoh's time we do not wonder that he let the children of Israel go. The mistake he made was in hardening his heart and bringing the flies back.

#### THE DRESS OF THE PEOPLE.

Most of the Arabs and Turks of the higher order dress in the ordinary garb of Americans and Europeans. But the laboring classes adhere to the kimono or skirt and red fez or turban. All classes wear the red fez, the most graceful headgear for men we have seen. The women are not seen often, and those that are upon the streets wear long black shawls which envelop their entire bodies, while their faces are concealed from view by a black, or colored or white veil. Only women of bad character, or of foreign birth appear upon the streets without these veils, which are worn not only by Mohammedan, but by women of all nationalities except European and American.



## DONKEYS AND CAMELS.

The donkey is in universal use. It is surprising how rapidly they can travel and the weights they can carry. They have pacing and racking gaits which are very smooth and they go like a house afire. To see big men whose feet nearly touch the ground, speeding through the streets upon the hind quarters of these little creatures is a very funny sight. Mr. Bryan is correct in his defense of the donkey. No other one animal serves so faithfully so many people, especially poor people. No animal serves so few as does the elephant, and these few are the rich. The Democrats can afford to let the Republicans adopt the elephant while they stick to the donkey.

The great burden bearer of the East is the camel. He is a solemn, plodding, lugubrious individual. He never smiles. He is slow, but sure. In Egypt and Palestine he is in universal use. He sells for about the same price as the American horse, from \$40 to \$200, according to quality. It is surprising the weights he can carry and the fatigue and heat and thirst and starvation he can endure. As a riding animal he is better than the elephant. We tried both and can speak from experience. He has an easy swinging gait that is pleasant.

## RELIGIOUS CONDITIONS.

The only missionary work being done by any Protestant denomination is that by the American mission. It is chiefly Presbyterian and was established in 1860. It has now 67 organized congregations and 200 mission stations. There are twenty ordained missionaries at work, and seventy other mission helpers. There are 9,349 members of the various churches and a Protestant community estimated at 30,000, or one in every 300 of the population.

There are 12,364 in Sabbath schools. The mission has in operation 179 day and boarding schools with a total attendance of people of about 16,000. It is also doing a fine medical work in the establishment of hospitals, and is distributing many Bibles and religious books among the people.

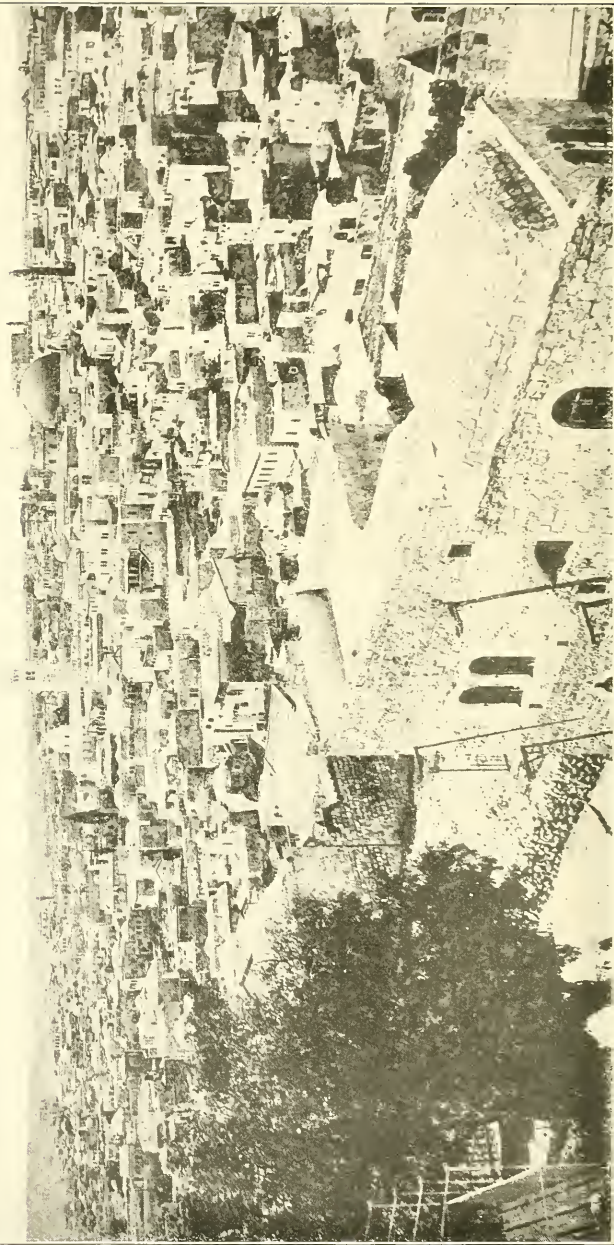
A trip up the Nile and a visit to the site of the ancient Thebes and the many other interesting points along the river we were compelled to deny ourselves on account of the heat and the plague. We hope to have this pleasure another day. I feel sure that no country on the earth is more interesting and instructive than this one which in its magnificent memorials bears testimony to have been the seat of a civilization which not only antedated those of Greece and Rome, but in many respects surpassed them.



*"F. Wester american Colony" Jerusalem.*

Jerusalem from the North.

Jerusalem.



## PALESTINE.



## XLVI.

### PALESTINE.

The proper appreciation of any country is largely a matter of mental attitude, is determined by the condition of mind and heart one carries into it. Of all countries this is most true of Palestine. Concerning it opinions are diverse, for they are often colored by the religious or non-religious views of the visitor. There is a danger of error upon both sides. If one be a non-believer in Christianity or even a believer, and ignorant of the Bible the country is apt to be disappointing both from a scenic and an utilitarian standpoint. If he be a fervent believer there is a tendency to exaggeration of its attractive features. If in addition he possesses a fluent or imaginative pen he can scarcely restrain drifting into poetic description or investing what he sees with a glamour of fancy which will not be sustained by practical examination. Then there are other credulous religionists who accept every tradition or fable which superstition or fancy has invented as to the various sites, many of which thousands of deluded and devout pilgrims actually bow down to and almost idolatrously worship.

In what I shall write concerning the land, properly designated "holy," I shall endeavor to steer clear of these extremes and in plain language to state the impressions the country has made. In doing so there shall be before me a realization of the solemn fact that it was the birth place of Christianity and the scene of most of those wondrous events recorded in a Book I believe to be divine. Here I believe lived and died most of the long line of prophets who were inspired of God. Here were enacted through the centuries the scenes which foreshadowed and led to the coming of Him who came from Heaven to die for the sins of men. Here



He spent His life and rendered forever hallowed so many places by His teachings and miracles. Here He died and arose from the dead and ascended to Heaven. One who believes all of this can but be stirred by a reverential and burning enthusiasm as he moves through a land so filled with sacred associations. But this will not deter from a sane observation of the country and a plain and truthful presentation of the impression it makes.

#### THE COUNTRY.

I will not consume space with any extended historical or geographical outline of Palestine. This is familiar to every student of the Bible. The most remarkable fact about the country is that in such small compass it should embody so much of climate and scenery and such a variety of productiveness. From Dan to Beersheba is not over 200 miles, and from Jaffa to Jericho not sixty. It has an area of less than twelve thousand square miles, not one-fifth of that of the State of Missouri. And yet within this limited space are eternal snows and unending summer, the torrid and almost the frigid zone. There is every variety of scenery from the majestic Lebanon mountains on the north to the more modest promontories of Benjamin and Judea on the south. There are frowning precipices and gentle valleys, bleak mountains of rock and smiling fields of waving wheat and barley and orchards of orange and pomegranate and lemon and apricot. The wonderful clearness of the atmosphere brings great distances within the range of vision. The Dead Sea, although twenty miles away, looks from the Mount of Olives as though it were not distant two leagues. The western border is lined by the broad and beautiful valley of Sharon and the north is intersected by the valley of Esdraelon, both opulent and fertile. But most of the country is

broken, the mountains ranging from two hundred to a thousand feet. Upon many of these mountains are terraces upon which grapes or other fruit is being grown. There are also many upon whose sides are wrecks of walls indicating that at one time in the past they were terraced orchards or vineyards. It is easy to believe that four thousand years ago when the Israelites entered or two thousand years later it was a most attractive and fertile land, loaded with vegetation and fruits and grain and luminous with flowers. Nowhere have we seen as beautiful or as great variety of wild flowers. The Sea of Galilee, and the Dead Sea are beautiful sheets of water and the river Jordan is a much prettier stream than I had imagined.

## JAFFA.

But I find I can convey a more intelligent idea of the country by a description of my entrance to and journey about it. We came from Port Said, Egypt, in a much crowded and stuffy little Russian steamer. We were unable to secure satisfactory berths and had to pay the captain an unreasonable sum for the use of his room for our party for the one night's trip over. We sighted Jaffa, the ancient Joppa, about eight o'clock in the morning and anchored a mile or two from the shore an hour or two later. The port is famous as being difficult and perilous to enter. Ships do not attempt to cast anchor there in any but quiet weather. Even then the waves beat tempestuously against the rocks. Passengers are conveyed upon skiffs or launches from the ship between huge rocks, through which the sea dashes constantly like the rapids of a Niagara. Dexterous engineering is necessary to pass the place safely. But we did so. Jaffa is a city of several thousand inhabitants located upon an eminence overlooking the sea, and ancient

in appearance. Its houses are of stone with flat roofs and look old enough to have been there from the beginning of time. It has several good hotels. The first thing to attract our attention was the remarkable productiveness of the country. Nowhere, not even in Java or Southern California or anywhere in America have we seen such a variety of fruits. The oranges are the finest in the world, not excepting those in California and Florida. Besides, there are lemons equally as large. Riding about the city we were shown flourishing orchards of pomegranates, dates, almonds, apricots, mulberries, pears, apples and peaches. We know of no other place where oranges and apples and peaches are grown successfully in the same soil. Vegetables are equally as abundant. Radishes, peas, tomatoes, beans, cauliflower, potatoes, grow luxuriantly. Of grain there are barley, wheat and even Indian corn. Cotton also is produced in great quantities. Surely we thought we had come to the land flowing with milk and honey. On all sides as far as the eye can reach and for hundreds of miles farther stretches along the Mediterranean, the beautiful valley of Sharon, presenting a spectacle of opulence scarcely surpassed by the valley of the Nile. It is even better than the latter, because it is watered by rains and not by irrigation. This valley extends all along the western shore of the country and in ancient days was occupied by the Philistines and the Phoenicians.

#### THE PEOPLE.

We had not gotten off the steamer before we were given evidence that we were among a very different people from the cringing and servile creatures we had seen elsewhere in the Orient, Egypt excepted. The rival representatives of tourist agencies, some twenty or thirty, engaged in a rough and tumble fight that

was terrible to behold. It looked as though there were to be several homicides within a minute, but the storm was quieted without bloodshed. Upon reaching the shore we found the people brighter and more spirited than any we had seen. They were Turks, Arabs, and Jews, chiefly. The population seemed thrifty, were not half dressed as elsewhere and there were not many beggars.

#### SCRIPTURAL SITES.

Two places in Jaffa are pointed out as recalling events recorded in the Bible. One is the alleged tomb of Dorcas, whom Peter raised from the dead. It is situated upon a hill overlooking the town, and near to a handsome church erected by the Russian Catholics in commemoration of this gentle character whose name has been a synonym of self-sacrifice and an inspiration to feminine service the centuries since. Whether this be Dorcas' tomb or not it is a fact that is recorded that in this town Peter raised Dorcas from the dead.

A better authenticated sight, but not wholly trustworthy, is the house of Simon, the tanner, from whose roof Peter saw the vision of the four footed beasts, regarded by the Jews as unclean, and whence he heard the voice "rise, Peter, slay and eat." Henceforward he understood the command to be to preach the gospel to the Gentiles. The next day he received the messages from Cornelius the Roman Centurion, who lived at Cesarea twenty miles north. There he went and in the centurion's house made the first proclamation that the gospel was for all men. The house is on the seashore and is occupied as a Mohammedan mosque. But the view of the ocean from the roof where Peter is supposed to have been praying when he saw the vision is a striking one. The waters of the sea are near at hand, are blue and beautiful, and it

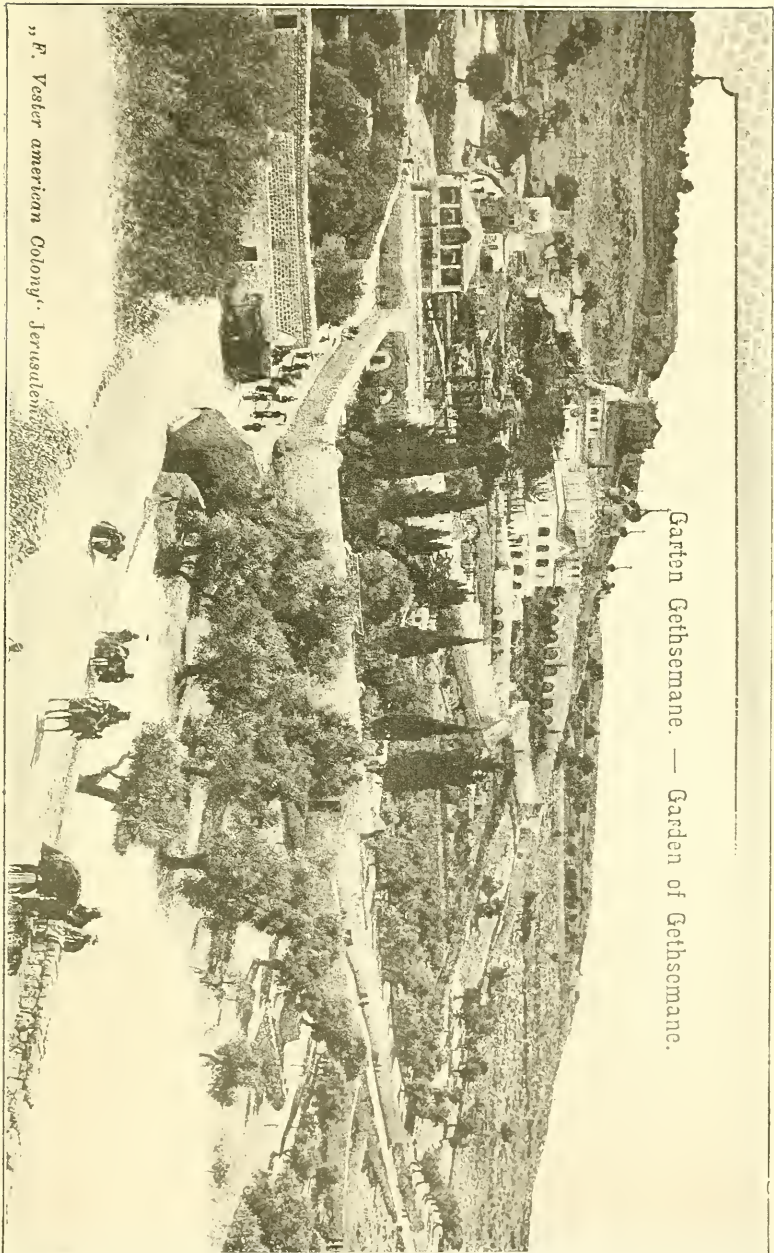
is easy to imagine a vision above them. The building is of stone with a concrete roof, and is shadowed by a fig tree. A stone reservoir is shown to indicate its use as a tannery.

#### THE JOURNEY TO JERUSALEM.

It is fifty-four miles from Jaffa to Jerusalem by railway and forty-two miles over a very fine macadamized road by carriage. As we were anxious to reach Jerusalem to be present at the Greek Easter, which was to be the next day, April 25, we went by rail. The accommodations were good, the train was crowded and the roadbed smooth. There were on the train besides our party, a number of tourists, among whom were Dr. Cortland Myers and family, of New York, Rev. W. S. Leak, of Virginia, Rev. Mr. Wicker, of New Jersey, a large number of Russian pilgrims and natives. The weather was ideal. The first portion of the trip lay through the beautiful Valley of Sharon. A more attractive spectacle than the limitless fields of green wheat and barley with the Mediterranean for a background upon the west, and the mountains of Judah upon the east, could not well be imagined. Our first station was near ancient Lydda where Peter performed the miracle of healing the man Aeneas, who was afflicted with the palsy. It is an humble little village of stone houses. Thenceforward our way was through the mountains, not lofty ones as are the Rockies or the Alleghenies, but what would be denominated foothills in America. Many are terraced, stone walls supporting the terrace from base to summit. We passed a place which is pointed out as the abode of Samson and the train pursues its way through immense fields whose parched grass could easily have been set on fire by the burning tails of foxes as Samson, we are told, did. Upon our right we are shown the site of Bethshemesh, where the ark



Garten Gethsemane. — Garden of Gethsemane.



"F. Vester american Colony" Jerusalem





of the covenant first rested when it was brought back by the oxen from the Philistines. At this Bethshemesh it will be remembered Jehovah smote dead over fifty thousand of the people who dared to look into the ark. Samson's cave may also be seen in a neighboring cliff.

The train also runs not far from the spot where David slew Goliath. This point is in dispute, but the place, a brook or wady well supplied with smooth stones, seems not an unnatural one for it.

Down these dark defiles and across these beautiful plains the Israelites and Philistines swept in repeated battles, and there is no doubt but that Joshua, soon after his entrance to the Land of Promise, led his conquering hosts across the pathway upon which our railroad lies. The very spot where he beheaded the five kings is pointed out.

The trip from Jaffa to Jerusalem consumed several hours. It was full of interest. One historic point followed so closely upon another that we could scarcely take them in. Just as we were endeavoring to collect together in our minds all that we had seen and heard upon the journey so that we would not forget them "Jerusalem" was called, and the domes and minarets and walls of the Holy City hove in view.

## XLVII.

### JERUSALEM.

JERUSALEM, PALESTINE, May 12, 1908.

"Beautiful for situation" is the well-merited exclamation of the Psalmist concerning the Holy City. We know of no city which is more eligibly or attractively located with reference to the country of which it is the capital and metropolis and which in time of war is a more ideal fortress of defense. It is at the geographical center. It is over 2,700 feet above the sea level, on nearly the highest point in Palestine, except the mountains of Lebanon. It is visible for many miles. If properly garrisoned it is practically impregnable upon all sides except the northern and northwestern. The valley of Jehoshaphat upon the east, of Hinnon upon the south and of Gihon upon the west are deep gorges up whose nearly perpendicular steeps it would be very difficult for any attacking force to ascend. David and his great lieutenant, Joab, alone accomplished this feat, and they did it by means of a subterranean gutter. Titus, the Crusaders, the Saracens and all who have captured it reached it from the north. I have viewed it at distances of many miles from every direction and it is ever majestic, towering and imposing.

#### WALLS, GATES AND STREETS.

The city sits upon four hills, Zion on the southwest, Akra on the northwest, Bezetha on the northeast and Moriah, where the temple was located, upon the southeast. The Tyropeon valley runs north and south through the city. In the days of David and Solomon this valley was spanned by a bridge which extended from Mount Zion to Mount Moriah, or from the palace to the

Temple. Through successive destructions of the city the valley has been filled up, until part of the area it covered is nearly upon a level with the hills. The city is surrounded by a strong stone wall about fifteen feet high and two and a half miles in circumference. In some places the debris upon the side has piled up almost to the top of the wall. There are eight gates, the Jaffa upon the west, the New and Damascus on the north, Herod's and St. Stephen's upon the east, and the Dung and Zion gates on the south. The most important is the Jaffa gate. It is at the terminus of the road from Jaffa and about it outside and inside the walls there are the hotels and foreign business quarters and an ever surging crowd.

The city is bisected by David street which is an extension of the Jaffa road and runs entirely through the city from the Jaffa gate to the Temple Area or Mosque of Omar. It is a dark street about twelve feet wide and lined with little bazars or shops. It is paved with stones and as it descends into the Tyropeon valley becomes a sort of stairway. Most of the distance it is covered overhead with stone arches built during the Crusades. Upon the north side of the street is the Mohammedan and upon the south side the Jewish quarters. Little narrow, dark streets branch off north and south from David street, and are also lined with bazars or shops and lead to the dwelling places of the people. The latter are narrow and contracted, and have none of the characteristics of Christian homes as to amplitude and modern conveniences.

#### CLEANLINESS, CONVENIENCES, PEOPLE, ETC.

While the city inside the walls is much crowded and the streets are narrow it is not as uncleanly as similarly built cities in either Japan or China. There are no water works, no sewerage and no

gas or electric light. Of course there are no tramways or street cars inside or out. Wheel vehicles are not permitted inside the walls, for the reason that the streets are not wide enough to admit them, and if horses are taken in they have to be led through. The crowds, while they fill the streets to uncomfortable degree, are not as noisy as in China, nor are there the smells and offensive sights of the Chinese or Japanese city. The people are a mixture chiefly of Jews and Syrians, with a sprinkling of Arabs, Bedouins and Turks, and people of all nationalities. They are law-abiding and not discourteous to strangers. While there are some beggars outside the gates they are not to be compared in number or obtrusiveness with those in India. The city is finely provided with hospitals, leper, blind, surgical. The English, German, French, Jew and other nationalities besides several church organizations have excellent hospitals, in fine buildings, with skilled physicians in charge.

#### POPULATION, SCHOOLS, HOSPITALS, AND CHURCHES.

The present population is estimated at about 80,000, of whom 47,000 are Jews, 15,000 are Mohammedans and 15,000 Christians. There is a steady increase in the Jewish population, it being fifty per cent greater now than it was a quarter of a century ago. While the government is in the hands of the Turks they form but a small proportion of the population. There are English, German, French, Italian, and Mohammedan schools, and several Mission schools, under the supervision of the Church Missionary, and the London Mission Society. Of churches there is scarcely any limit. The Greek, Roman Catholic, the Armenian, the Greek orthodox, the Armenian orthodox, Syriac, Copts, Jews, Abyssinian, Syriac, Protestants, all have organizations. The Catholics have large

monasteries, and hospices which are sustained by the many thousands of pilgrims who flock here every year. There were here fully twenty thousand Russian pilgrims when we arrived. They were attending the Greek Easter. The pilgrims of all the organizations are coming and going continually. They are a devout and ignorant people, and walk hundreds of miles to reach the city. They are the chief source of revenue to the local population.

#### OUTSIDE THE WALLS.

Outside the walls the scene is different from that inside. There is a larger population than upon the inside. There are several fine hotels, churches, hospitals and schools, many business establishments, broad streets and a general aspect of progress. All the buildings are of stone with red tiled roofs, stone and tiling being cheaper than wood. But they are lacking in modern conveniences, candles being used for illumination, and there is no sewerage, water works or gas. In all Jerusalem there is not a newspaper printed, and the mails are irregular. News from the outside world is so inaccessible and infrequent that the people lose interest in it and but few read newspapers at all. There are many cultivated people of foreign birth. Jerusalem is an illustration of how it is possible for an educated community to exist in this twentieth century without newspapers. Those who have tried it say it works well, that they are not worried by the news gossip, the trash, the crime and bitterness and strife which find vent and outlet through the columns of newspapers and that the time they would waste upon these things they devote to better advantage to higher reading and more profitable occupation. At any rate they appear to be getting along fairly well.

## CHURCH OF THE HOLY SEPULCHRE.

The chief interest in Jerusalem consists in it having been the focal point wherein took place the most important events in the history of Christianity. Some of the places where occurred much of which the Bible tells can be identified beyond question. The city itself, the Mount of Olives, the brooks and valleys and country here about are all as they were thousands of years ago. As to whether there is any reliability to be attached to many of the places pointed out as the scenes of Bible interest and record is a matter of doubt. Among these is the alleged site of Calvary and the sepulchre commemorated by the church of the Holy Sepulchre. It is a large and handsome building located in the north-western part of the city. It is said that Queen Helene, mother of the Emperor Constantine the Great, came here in the third century after the city had been destroyed and there was revealed to her in a dream the site of our Lord's crucifixion and burial. It is also claimed that upon excavating at the spot there was discovered the cross upon which the Savior was crucified. The cross, it is said, was placed under a paralyzed woman and she was restored. Upon such a tradition the church was built. Millions of ignorant creatures visit it constantly and bow down and kiss with almost idolatrous passion the various alleged scenes of the Savior's suffering, death, burial, and resurrection. The site of the cross is pointed out, of the slab upon which His body was laid, of the tomb in which He was buried. The grave and the skull of Adam, the alleged center of the world, the place where the cross was exhumed and where the Queen watched the work of exhumation are all shown. People are to be seen constantly kissing and mumbling prayers over them. The reputed scenes of our Lord's sacrifice

and resurrection are worshipped with a superstition similar to that of the followers of Buddha.

#### THE GREEK EASTER.

We hastened our trip to Jerusalem to be present at the celebration of Easter by the Greek Orthodox church. It took place on Sunday, April 25, a week later than the Latin Easter. We saw it under favorable conditions. Our party was among the few admitted to the robing room of the Greek Patriarch as he donned his robe and there was placed upon his head his crown for the greatest annual event of his church. Both crown and robe glittered with precious gems and were composed of the most costly material. His robe was of brocaded white satin covered with gold embroidery. His deep gauntlets were studded with precious jewels. He wore an emerald cross said to have cost \$10,000 and his jeweled crown was reputed to represent an expenditure of a half million of dollars. This brilliant garb fittingly corresponded to the church itself, which is hung with costly paintings, adorned with brilliant chandeliers, and its walls and ceilings are decorated in a most elaborate manner. We were permitted to follow closely after the procession led by the Patriarch as he and his long line of habited and gowned assistant priests, each carrying a lighted candle, moved down into church. A battalion of soldiers guarded the procession. There came near being war between them and the female members of our party as they tried to keep us back. But a courteous officer admitted us and we had opportunity of witnessing at close range the celebration of the Greek Easter as conducted by the Patriarch. He went through with quite a long ritual, none of which we understood, sprinkled incense over the people and was continuing with the ceremony when the intense



heat compelled us to leave. The crowd was something tremendous. Three sects of Christians, the Roman Catholics, the Armenians, and the Greeks claim right to worship in this church of the Holy Sepulchre. The constant presence of Mohammedan soldiers is necessary to preserve peace between them. There was something revolting in the fact that the alleged scene of the suffering and death of the Prince of Peace should have to be guarded by soldiers with guns to keep peace between those who claim to be His followers. It is said that but for the presence of the soldiers there would be, has been repeatedly, bloodshed between the rival sects. It is distressing to every believer in the Christ to witness such fanaticism, ignorance, superstition and even idolatry upon the spot where He is thought by some to have died and risen from the dead.

#### THE REAL SITE OF CALVARY.

Most Protestant Christians do not believe that the church of the Holy Sepulchre is the real site of the Lord's crucifixion and burial. They fix it at an elevated knoll and an adjoining garden just north of the city. The knoll is now a Mohammedan cemetery and in shape it resembles a human skull. There are large cavities in the side of the hill beneath the surface which are not unlike eyes. The place was first selected by Gen. Chinese Gordon and the longer the subject has been studied the more unprejudiced persons have drifted to the conclusion that it must be the original site. The tomb near by answers every description of the new tomb of Joseph of Arimathea. The ground adjoining it was bought by English Christians for two thousand pounds, has been planted in flowers and is carefully superintended. The Mohammedans refuse to sell the cemetery at any price. It belongs to the



*GORDON'S CALVARY—Spot Where Most of the Christian World Think Christ was  
Crucified—The Elevated Portion is the Supposed Site of the Crucifixion  
and the Lower Ground in Front the Tomb in Which the  
Body of the Savior Was Laid*



government. They are at least preserving it from occupation for commercial purposes. The site is on the Damascus road, outside the walls and occupies a commanding position and is visible from the Mount of Olives and from many points about the city. It is known that the crucifixion took place outside the walls. It seems practically impossible that the present Church of the Holy Sepulchre should occupy a place which then was outside the city. The Gordon site fills every condition of the Bible description and is the Calvary of the Christian imagination in its elevated position, its proximity to a garden, its shape and its relation to the city. An interesting and significant fact is that the rocky strata beneath it has been rent and displaced as if by an earthquake.

Many scholars doubt the authenticity of this site. They claim that there is no satisfactory evidence to verify it.

## XLVIII.

### MOUNT OF OLIVES AND TEMPLE AREA.

JERUSALEM, PALESTINE, May 15, 1908.

The two spots in Jerusalem of chief interest are the Mount of Olives and the Temple Area. About their identity there can be no question. While the buildings and other structures upon them have changed with the successive mutations which have befallen the city, the ground itself is there in the same form as it was before Jerusalem was a city. They are opposite to each other. They are separated by the valley of Jehoshaphat through which runs the Brook Kedron, making the height from the top of the city wall in front of the Temple Area so great as to justify Josephus' description that one almost grows dizzy looking down into it. They are on the east side of the city. The intervening space between them on each side of the Brook is covered with tombs and gardens. Among the latter is the Garden of Gethsemane, which may or may not be the spot where the Savior endured the agony and the bloody sweat and where He was betrayed and delivered into the custody of the Roman soldiers. A Russian church building with gilded minarets stands near by and this section as well as the side of the Mount is a network of stone walls, either lining the streets or enclosing cemeteries or gardens or buildings.

#### THE MOUNT OF OLIVES.

The view from the Mount of Olives is one of the most interesting anywhere in the world. On the west almost all of the city of Jerusalem is in plain view. The sight is an imposing and impressive one. Its Mohammedan character is revealed in the numerous mosque domes to be seen, especially in the gigantic dome of the

Rock or Mosque of Omar, which stands upon the Temple Area in front. To the north the Gordon site of Calvary and to the south the Valley of Hinnon and the House of Evil Counsel, and the Mountain of Offense are in plain view. It is a striking panorama, and is the one which called forth from Jesus His lament: "O, Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets and stonest them that are sent to thee; How often would I have gathered thy children together even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not." The heathenism and perverseness of the city are nearly as pitiable now as then.

To the south may be seen the wilderness of Judea, a mass of untenanted hills where John the Baptist preached the gospel of repentance and proclaimed the coming of the Messiah. To the north lies Mount Scopus, from which there is even a finer view, and beyond is the Gibeah of Saul.

But the most striking scene of all is that to the eastward. Across ranges of desolate cliffs and at seemingly a short distance but really twenty miles off—lies the Dead Sea, four thousand feet below, quiet, still and clear, while beyond loom up the mountains of Moab, Nebo the highest of them all. The extraordinary clearness of the atmosphere makes the scene a vivid one. Even the river Jordan, over twenty miles away may be easily descried as it pursues its serpentine course into the Dead Sea.

Upon the summit of the mount is a Russian church called "the church of the Ascension," and a very tall minaret, from the top of which may be had a magnificent view of most of Palestine, and which upon a clear day may be seen many miles distant. This is the spot according to the Christian view whence Christ ascended to Heaven. Like every other, it has also been made a place for the vaunting of fanatical superstition. The stone from which He is



said to have made His ascent, with an impression of His foot upon it, is shown. Pilgrims reverently kiss it, as they do many places on the Mount. There is also a Roman Catholic Cathedral which is also claimed to have been the spot from which our Lord ascended. Both show stones which they claim have impress of His foot as He left the earth.

BETHANY AND BETHPAGE.

To the southeast of the Mount of Olives and within easy view of it is the village of Bethany, where Jesus raised Lazarus from the dead, where resided Mary and Martha, and where was the house of Simon, the Leper, in which Mary anointed His feet with oil and bathed them with the hairs of her head. It is a miserable little Bedouin village of probably a hundred inhabitants, whose ragged children worry the visitor for "backsheesh." The alleged grave of Lazarus, upon a side street, is pointed out. It is thirty-five feet below the surface and is reached by several successive flights of steps. The sepulchre itself is nine by eight feet and about six feet high, and is cut in the solid rock. A short distance away is said to have been the home of Mary and Martha and Lazarus. Only part of the lower story remains. But the handsome marble carvings upon the walls would indicate it to have been the abode of a family of wealth. Across the street are the ruins of what was once a handsome dwelling said to have been that of Simon the Leper. The houses and locations seem reasonable, but there is no reliable evidence that they are what they are claimed to be. There is also a Catholic church in Bethany in which is shown a stone on which it is claimed the Savior sat.

At the eastern boundary of the village upon the Jericho road is pointed out the spot where Martha met Jesus and said to



Him: "Lord, if thou hadst been here our brother had not died," and where He said to her, "I am the resurrection and the life; he that believeth in me though he were dead yet shall he live." About a fourth of a mile northwest of Bethany is Bethpage, where by direction of the Savior the disciple found the ass' colt upon which He rode into the city upon His triumphal entry when the multitude sang hosannas and laid palm branches upon the road for Him to ride over.

I rode across to Bethpage and three times have ridden over the road from Bethany to the city upon which He made His triumphal entry. It is about two miles in length and it is a smooth, broad highway. The bend in it around the Mount of Olives at the point where the full view of the city first burst upon Him and where He wept over it is there now just as then. As the sun went down we lingered upon the spot and not only was the scene itself thrilling but far more so the memory of the great event that transpired there on that Palm Sunday, 1900 years ago.

#### THE TEMPLE AREA.

On the eastern border of the city, directly across the Valley of Jehoshaphat from the Mount of Olives, the city wall being its eastern boundary, lies the most interesting spot on the earth. It is Mount Moriah. Upon it Abraham is believed to have offered up Isaac. It is known to have been Araunah's Threshing Floor, purchased by David as a resting place for the Ark of the Covenant. Here he had hoped to erect a temple. But God would not permit him because he had been a man of war. He only collected the material therefor. The glory and honor were reserved for his son, Solomon, who erected here without sound of hammer the greatest edifice of the ages. It was torn down by Nebuchadnezzar,

rebuilt by Zerubbabel, and afterwards enlarged to proportions even greater than that of Solomon by Herod. It was Herod's Temple that was standing when the Savior was on the earth. It was destroyed by Titus in 71 A. D., and after being the site of various structures, was at last occupied by the Mohammedans as a beautiful mosque.

#### ITS SIZE, TOWER OF ANTONIA AND ECCE HOMO.

The Area embraces thirty-two acres, the space it did in the time of Christ, and is laid with a stone pavement. Upon the northwest corner is a soldiers' barracks, formerly the castle Antonia, and near the Pretorium in which Jesus appeared before Pilate. Near by and just outside the wall of the Temple Area stands a Catholic church and orphanage called "The Ecce Homo," this being in all probability the spot where Jesus stood scourged and bleeding with the crown of thorns upon his head when Pilate uttered that famous expression and in the presence of the multitude washed his hands in fancied but futile innocence of His blood. In the basement of the Ecce Homo building may be seen the stone pavement on which Jesus stood, and across which He bore the cruel cross. In the southwestern part of the Temple Area is a building which occupies the spot where the Sanhedrim sat when Jesus was tried.

#### THE DOME OF THE ROCK.

In the center of the Area is the main building surrounding the Dome of the Rock. It is 174 feet in diameter by 98 feet in height, is constructed of marble and porcelain and inlaid in the interior with exquisite mosaic. The windows are remarkably beautiful and of rich colored glass, which admits a soft and mellow light.

The building is surmounted by a handsome oval dome of dark color and consists of one room, the roof of which is supported by two rows of eight columns each. These columns are of marble and are all different in carving and design. Inscriptions in Persian from the Koran adorn the frieze. In the center of the room enclosed in a handsome screen is a rock 58 feet long by 44 feet wide which rises six feet above the surrounding pavement which is a beautiful mosaic. Upon this stone Abraham is supposed to have offered up Isaac. It was also probably the stone which stood in front of the temple upon which the sacrificial offerings were made. The Mohammedans have a fabulous tradition that from it Mahomet went to Heaven to get the Koran. They show the print of his foot on the rock when he left it, and also a cleft of which the angel Gabriel caught hold to prevent the rock from following him. Thus heathen superstition touches the most sacred spots.

In the basement are shown alcoves where David and Elijah and Abraham and Moses and Solomon are said to have prayed. The floor has a hollow sound as though there was a cavern beneath it. But no one has been permitted to explore it. If so important discoveries might be made.

#### ANCIENT TEMPLES AND COURTS.

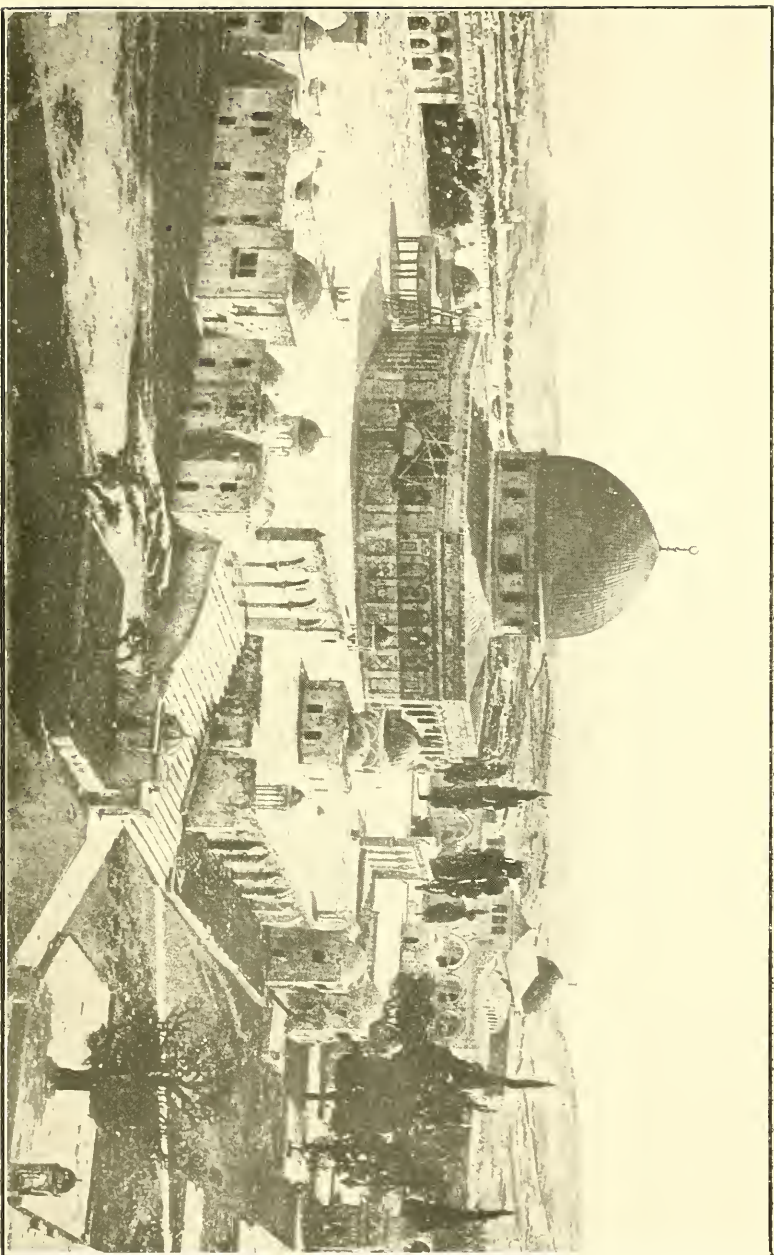
The area is not level, but ascends by successive gradations from the eastern border. The ancient courts of the Gentiles, the women, and Israel, and the Priests and the location of the brazen laver and of the temple itself can easily be fixed. The outer court was occupied by the money-changers and tradesmen whom the Savior drove out upon His triumphal entry and also at the beginning of His ministry. These same classes may be found

today at the entrances to the church of the Holy Sepulchre and at all the heathen temples in the east. Money changing is and was as legitimate a business as selling doves or animals for the sacrifices, for it is necessary in countries where so many different kinds of coin are used. But the Savior meant to teach these people and the world that His house was not to be made one of merchandise.

From these courts Solomon ran pipes to three large pools which he built nine miles south of the city and which are yet in use. From these water ran by gravity through an aqueduct twenty-eight miles long and was used in the sacrifices and for the people to drink. It is still carried to the city from the same pools, but in iron pipes. Just southwest of the Temple Area in a deep valley about a half mile away lay then and still lies the pool of Siloam, whence water was brought to the temple to be used in worship. Some modern scholars locate here Mt. Zion and the city of David instead of upon the southwest or traditional site.

#### SOLOMON'S STABLES AND QUARRIES.

Below the Temple Area are Solomon's stables, a large space supported by stone pillars in which he kept his horses. He must have had an enormous collection. But more curious than the stables are the mammoth quarries from which the stone for the building was taken. They are entered from near the Damascus gate in the northern part of the city and extend for a thousand feet or more until they reach a point under the Temple Area. The stone is soft and white, but hardens upon exposure to the air. The marks of the chisel are still plainly visible upon the rocks, which were hewn into the proper shape in the quarry and placed in the building without the use of hammer or chisel.



THE MOSQUE OF OMAR IN JERUSALEM  
*The Site of Solomon's and Herod's Temples*



ENTRANCE TO TEMPLE.

There is but one entrance to the Temple Area through the city wall from the east. That is through the Golden Gate, which has long been closed. Christians believe it will not be opened until Christ enters it at His second advent. Mohammedans say it shall not be opened until Mahomet comes. Hence they keep it closed. Both in the preservation of Calvary and the Temple Area and many other sites sacred to Christians the Mohammedans are unconsciously, but by a seeming overruling Providence, protecting from desecration places forever hallowed to those who believe in the God and Christ of the Bible.



## XLIX.

### SCENES IN AND AROUND JERUSALEM.

JERUSALEM, May 18, 1908.

Few places in the world contain crowds so curious and cosmopolitan as those which gather daily outside and inside the Jaffa Gate. This is the focal point of all Jerusalem. It is the business center and the local forum. Turbanned Arabs and Turks, with long kimonos, bearded Jews with broad hats and flowing gowns, smart Syrians attired in European garb excepting the red fez upon their heads, Armenian, Greek, Roman and divers other priests and monks in flowing black robes, some with high, others with broad hats, all with long hair and beard and looking as we imagine the chief priests and scribes must have appeared in the days of the Savior, Europeans of all nationalities, and last but not least the ubiquitous Americans mingle promiscuously in this heterogeneous, bustling, motley throng. Hucksters and beggars and fakirs, blind and lame and decrepit, all classes and conditions are represented. The domestic animals are nearly as varied. Horses and mules, donkeys and camels and oxen, some hitched to carriages, others to carts, many ridden and all brutally lashed amid the yells and screams of their drivers add to the din and confusion and turmoil of the scene. What makes it all more exciting is that everybody talks at the top of his voice, as if every one else were deaf. The world is well represented at Jerusalem in people, in religions, in fads and conditions of life. There is but little social life. There are no places of amusement, no libraries, no parks, no means of recreation except lawn tennis. It is a place of donkeys and camels and small shops and churches. A lady objected to living here because she said she was never out of hearing of a donkey

bray or a church bell. The most prosperous people are the monks, who take in vast sums of money from the many thousands of pilgrims who come here annually. Monasteries and hospices are to be found everywhere. There are outside the walls many delightful and cultivated people and numerous hospitable homes of Europeans and Americans. Many of the shop keepers are of the latter nationalities.

#### AROUND THE WALLS.

I have ridden several times around the walls, a distance of two and a half miles. Starting at the Jaffa Gate and going north the first place of interest is the Gordon site of Calvary, which I have already described. Under it is the grotto of Jeremiah and the miry pit in which he was thrown. Near this are the tombs of the kings and the baths of Solomon, all cut in solid rock. On the east we pass the Garden of Gethsemane and opposite the southeast corner the pillar of Absalom, the pool of Siloam and the Virgin's Fountain. The most stately and imposing part of the wall is that on Zion Hill occupied by David's tower and tomb, now a soldiers' barracks. The walls are strongly built. Only a portion of them is as ancient as the time of Christ.

#### INSIDE THE WALLS.

An interesting place inside the walls is the pool of Hezekiah, just as the ancient king built it 700 years B. C. It is about one hundred feet square. If ever used for religious purposes it has mightily fallen. To see it we had to pass through a room where men were gambling at cards. The pool of Bethesda, with its five porches, still exists, but it is buried under many feet of rubbish and is damp and foul. No angel, unless it be one of death, moves its waters

now, which, however, are intermittent as in the days of Christ. Several other places are pointed out which may or may not be reliable. Among them are the tomb of David, the upper room where the last supper was had, the house of Caiaphas and the palace of Herod. These are on the southwestern hill of the city. The Via Dolorosa is a long narrow street leading from the Pretorium on the northwest corner of the Temple Area by circuitous route to the church of the Holy Sepulchre. Part of this route must have been taken to reach the Gordon site. Along the way are marked the points where the Cyrene took the cross, where a woman spread a veil over His face, where the daughters of Zion were told not to weep for Him, and the house of Dives and Lazarus. All are purely imaginary and some of them impossible. It takes ten minutes to walk from the Pretorium to the church of Holy Sepulchre and twice as long to the Gordon site. The city has been destroyed and rebuilt so often that it is practically impossible to fix many sites with any degree of accuracy.

On the inside the streets are narrow, paved with stones and many of them arched with stone and dark and gloomy. It is the abode of little shops, bazars, churches, monasteries and hospices. The population of the city within the walls is about equally divided between the Mohammedans and Jews. On Friday afternoons the Jews gather outside an old wall and lament the loss of the city. It is called their wailing place. They did not wail a great deal on the occasion of our visit, but seemed to be engaged in a fervent, tearful worship.

#### BETHLEHEM.

Six miles south of Jerusalem lies Bethlehem. It is reached by a broad macadamized roadway, bordered on both sides most of the

way by stone fences. The trip and city are full of interest for one is well aware that both were undoubted scenes of great historic interest. There are one or two monasteries along the way and the vale of Rephaim is passed where David heard the soundings in the mulberry trees. Other purely traditional points are the well of the wise men and the rock where Elijah is said to have rested when he was running away from Jezebel. The most interesting and probably authentic place is the tomb of Rachel, a stone building over the grave of Jacob's beloved wife near Bethlehem. West of the city is the tower where Samuel anointed Saul king of Israel, from "the high place" where he lived, yet plainly visible.

Bethlehem itself is full of interest. Here we know that Jesus was born. Near by and easily seen from the road are the fields where Ruth gleaned after Boaz and where the shepherds lay at night on that Christmas eve nineteen hundred years ago and listened to the angelic choir in its heavenly refrain of "Peace on earth, and good will to men." The fields are now sown in wheat. Its green surface shone beautifully under the afternoon sun and in pleasing contrast with the neighboring hills. It is a quiet and charming spot. Just beyond it David led his flocks "in the green pastures and by the still waters," and near there he was anointed king by Samuel. No spot in all Palestine possesses more tender and romantic interest. Christians hereabout are in the habit of celebrating there Christmas eve in a most interesting way.

On a terraced hill covered with olive trees and in a high state of cultivation sits the city of Bethlehem, but little changed from what it was when Joseph and Mary were unable to find an abiding place in one of its inns, or even from what it was in the days when the boy David played in its streets. It has a population of about 8,000, chiefly Christians. The buildings are of stone, the streets

narrow. There is an atmosphere of higher intelligence and prosperity among its people than any we have yet seen in Palestine. The Church of the Nativity built above the manger where the Savior was born stands upon the eastern border of the village overlooking the fields of the shepherds. It is a square structure of no special architectural beauty. It is divided into three parts, one of which is occupied by the Roman Catholics, another by the Greek orthodox and another by the Armenians. A guard of Mohammedan soldiers is necessary at all times to keep peace between them. There is something awful in the thought that at this place of all others, where peace and love should dwell, guns and bayonets are needed to keep the worshipers of the gentle Christ from killing each other.

#### WHERE THE SAVIOR WAS BORN.

The manger or chapel of the Nativity is in the basement. It is 40 feet long, 12 feet wide and 10 feet high. The pavement and walls are of marble. There is a recess at one end of the room. Here the Christ was born. Upon the floor is a silver star with this inscription, "Hic de Virgine Maria Jesus Christus Natus Est," "Here of the Virgin Mary Jesus Christ was born." Around the recess burn fifteen lamps, of which six belong to the Greeks, five to the Armenians and four to the Latins. Clefts in the rock are shown where animals were tied. There seems little doubt but that this was the spot where Jesus was born and hence it is a sacred one. The original manger was carried away centuries ago.

On the same floor is the tomb of St. Jerome, who died in 420, but who lived in Bethlehem and possibly in the Church of the Nativity where he translated the Bible into Latin.

David's well, mention of which will be found in Second Sam-

uel, twenty-third chapter, fourteenth to seventeenth verses, may also be seen just north of Bethlehem.

#### THE ROAD TO HEBRON.

South of Bethlehem fifteen miles lies Hebron, the oldest city in the world, where lived Abraham and where is the cave of Macpelah in which he and his wife, Sarah, and Isaac and Jacob are buried. The cave is covered by a Mohammedan mosque into which no Christian is permitted to enter. The road to Hebron is a broad, smooth carriage way, through a mountainous region. An occasional shepherd leading his flock of goats is about the only evidence of human life. The three pools of Solomon mentioned in a former letter are passed, and are in seemingly as good condition as when the wise king built them to secure water for his temple three thousand years ago. They are nine miles from Jerusalem, but the aqueduct which conveyed water by gravity from them was twenty-eight miles long. One is 381x228 feet, another 423x159, and the largest is 582x147 feet. They are supplied by springs and rain water. Farther on are passed the ruins of a reservoir built by Pilate to supply Jerusalem with water. The subterranean aqueduct still exists. Through it the water rushes in a constant stream. Another spring is pointed out along the road as Philip's fountain where Philip is said to have baptized the Eunuch.

#### HEBRON.

The city of Hebron looks as ancient as it is. It probably contains a population of three or four thousand. The business is confined to small shops and to the manufacture in a crude but expert manner of pottery. About a mile west of the Valley of

Mamre is a huge oak, which is claimed to be the one under which Abraham and Sarah entertained three angels unawares. On a neighboring hill they saw the smoke arising from the burning cities of Sodom and Gomorrah, south of the Dead Sea. All of which was possible and probable.

This is also the Valley of Eschol, from whence Moses' spies brought such enormous bunches of grapes. The vineyards are there yet in great numbers and size. The vines are quite large and immense clusters are yet grown. The soil is remarkably productive after these four thousand years of constant use. I have never seen finer fields of wheat or barley or richer vegetation.

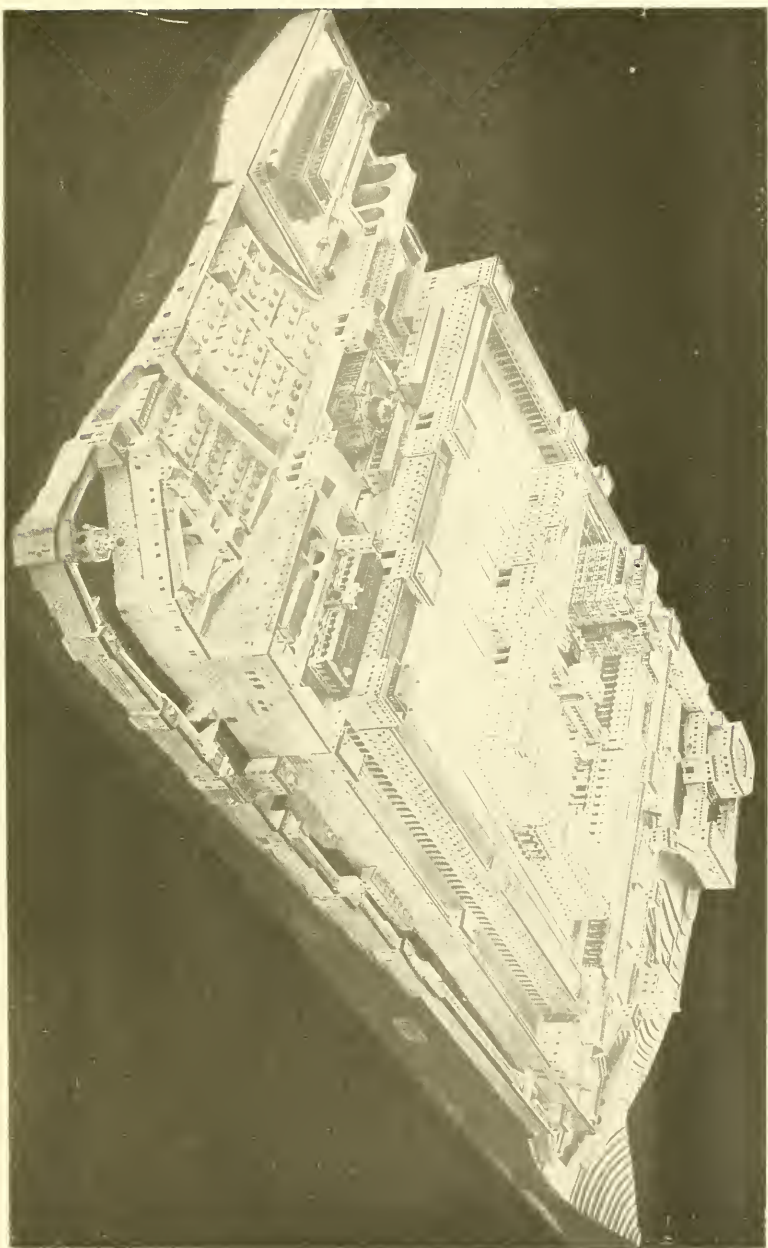
Hebron, it will be remembered, was claimed and given to Caleb for his fidelity. Afterwards David reigned there as king and was called from that position to be king of Judah.

There is a medical mission conducted by Dr. Patterson and a Protestant mission under the management of Mr. Jakko, late of Canada. The people are fanatically Mohammedan. Christian missionaries were not permitted there until a few years ago. There are few more interesting places in the world than the ancient city of Hebron.

#### MIZPAH AND EMMAUS.

By horseback we made a trip to Neby Samuel, the ancient Mizpah, where in the presence of the assembled millions of Israel, Samuel announced Saul to be king. It is five miles northwest of Jerusalem. To reach it we followed the line of the ancient Roman road, now nearly obliterated, upon which Paul was taken by the Roman soldiers to Cesarea. The journey is full of historic interest and inspiring scenery. Upon the left and to the west is an eminence upon which stood the house of Obedom, where the ark





*PLAN OF SOLOMON'S TEMPLE*



of the covenant rested. Upon a neighboring hill as if stuck against it is a village where John the Baptist is said to have been born, and upon an adjoining hill another village whence came the unrepentant thief. To the east lies upon a great eminence Gibeah of Saul and to the north Ramah where the prophet Samuel lived and died.

Mizpah, or Neby Samuel, as it is now called, is upon a very elevated point and is occupied by a Mohammedan mosque, from the tower of which there is a magnificent view of the surrounding country, from Jerusalem to Jaffa on the Mediterranean. It affords an idea of the splendid scenery of Palestine. The tomb of Samuel is claimed to be in this mosque, and is pointed out to travelers. But the Bible places his burial place at Ramah.

#### WHERE THE SUN AND MOON STOOD STILL.

To the north and at the foot of the mountain upon which Neby Samuel stands is the beautiful valley of Ajalon, a waving field of emerald, and in the center of it stands ancient Gibeon, the same where Joshua gave the command: "Sun stand thou still upon Gibeon; and thou moon in the valley of Ajalon. And the sun stood still and the moon stayed until the people had avenged themselves upon their enemies." All of which we believe. Some have declared that the sun and moon never shine together in Palestine. But we have seen them so shine.

#### EMMAUS.

A few miles beyond Neby Samuel, along the same old Roman highway, is Emmaus, in a quiet valley occupied by a church and monastery of Franciscan monks. A beautiful flower garden surrounds the place, which has an air of refinement and comfort.

Our party enjoyed a refreshing noonday meal here, and as we did so we thought of Him who on the day of His resurrection walked along the same road which we came, was joined by two disciples whose eyes were holden that they did not know Him and whose hearts burned within them by the way and who may have broken bread with Him near the place where we sat. No experience we have had in Palestine brought us into more conscious and even thrilling relation to scenes of our Lord's life in this land than did the simple bit of home life in this quiet village of Emmaus, near by where He honored a similar function on the greatest day of His worldly career nearly nineteen hundred years ago.

## L.

### JERICH0, THE DEAD SEA AND RIVER JORDAN.

JERUSALEM, May 19, 1908.

Of the three thousand annual visitors to Palestine it is said that not over thirty, or one in a hundred, visits the country east of the Jordan. The expense, or the Bedouins, or the strenuous journey, or all together, deter them. But we took the trip. It consumed ten days and a ride on horseback of two hundred and forty miles. There were five in our party, three ladies and two men. We had a dragoman, an armed Turkish soldier and Bedouin body guard, ten servants, ten mules, ten horses and four donkeys, in all seventeen people and twenty-four animals. We carried five tents and had practically every luxury we would have in the best hotel. The tents were carpeted, furnished with iron bedsteads and clean linen, and the fare was excellent, much of it being fresh, and consisted of game and vegetables purchased en route. We traveled twenty-five miles a day. We rose at five o'clock each morning, rode several hours, rested during the heat of the day under a tent carried along for the purpose, traveled several hours farther in the afternoon and reached our camp, which was always waiting at six o'clock.

#### FROM JERUSALEM TO JERICH0.

The distance from Jerusalem to Jericho where the Jordan is crossed is about twenty-three miles. It is a broad well macadamized carriage way and is much traveled. The descent is four thousand feet, from over twenty-seven hundred feet above sea level to one thousand three hundred feet below. Bethany is passed beyond the city two miles. From thence to Jericho there are but two

buildings along the roadside. One is the Apostle's Fountain a few miles beyond Bethany. This is the spot where David was stoned by Shimei as he was fleeing from Absalom. The other is the Good Samaritan Inn about midway. A more barren and cheerless journey, or a hotter one at this season, cannot well be imagined. It is a long gorge, through the hills of Judea, which are barren, rocky and treeless, only enlivened by occasional flocks of sheep or goats and the weird voice of the shepherd. It is easy to understand how it could have been, may yet be, infested with thieves. There is no lonelier spot than that of the Good Samaritan Inn, a stone building, where refreshment is furnished and the proprietor drives quite a business in curios. Upon a hill near by are the ruins of an old fort from which there is a fine view of the plain of Jericho, the Dead Sea and the Jordan. The road is one of the best patronized highways in Palestine and has been from the beginning of time. Along it undoubtedly the Master and the disciples often journeyed.

#### WHERE ELIJAH WAS FED.

Just before reaching the plain we departed from the regular highway and led our beasts down a precipitous place upon the left until we came to a dashing little stream which has cut a deep gash in the mountains. It is the Brook Cherith or the Wady Kelt where Elijah was fed by the ravens. Following its course a short distance we came to a monastery built against the cliff a hundred feet above the brook. It is called the monastery of St. George which our dragoman informed us was another name for Elijah. This weird, elevated lonesome monastery is occupied by several monks, who were engaged in a service when we visited it. Behind it is claimed to be the cave in which Elijah lived. Along the edge

of the brook which dashes in a foaming torrent is a pretty flower and vegetable garden in which we noticed tomatoes, pomegranates, bananas, figs, grapes, lemons and oranges in rich profusion. Further down the brook are ladders leading high up the cliff into caves which are inhabited by hermit monks. There are numerous dwellings along the edge of the stream in the rocky recesses in which there are people living. From this brook the Romans built five aqueducts to furnish water to Jericho. Their ruins may be still seen. The waters are now used to irrigate the plains of Jericho, much of which is kept perennially green and productive.

#### THE PLAIN AND CITIES OF JERICO.

The plain of Jericho is seven miles wide by sixty long, amply large enough to have been a camping place for the Israelitish millions upon their entrance to the Promised Land. It is planted in wheat and barley. Few spots on the earth's surface are interwoven more interestingly and romantically with both sacred and profane history. Not only was it the place where the ark of the covenant and Joshua's host first rested, and of the chief city of the Canaanites, but the Savior must have often visited it, and we know that here He restored sight to the blind Bartimeus and gave salvation to Zaccheus. So beautiful and attractive was the plain that Marc Antony gave it as a present to Queen Cleopatra. She sold it to Herod, who rebuilt it in great magnificence and had here his winter palace where he died. It was called "the City of Dates and Palms," both of which yet grow there. Its soil is fertile. There were evidently two Jerichos, one in the time of Joshua, the other in the days of Christ. The present city of two or three thousand is situated between them. The ancient Jericho is being excavated by the German government, and several buildings and



streets, all small and narrow and of stone, have been discovered. Near these excavations is Elisha's fountain, whose waters we are told in the Bible were sweetened by the prophet placing salt in them. They are certainly sweet and pure now and furnish the inhabitants of all the plain with drinking water.

The site of ancient Gilgal is also fixed near the center of the plain not far from the present city or village of Jericho. There are several fair hotels in modern Jericho and a few stores.

On the west of the plain among a number of bleak mountains is Mount Quaritania, treeless, a huge mass of rock surmounted by a monastery and with another church or monastery upon the eastern side. This is supposed to have been the Mount of Temptation where Jesus spent forty days after His baptism.

#### THE DEAD SEA.

At the southern end of the plain of Jericho lies the Dead Sea. In appearance it is placid and beautiful. But its waters are horrible to the taste. Twenty-five per cent is said to be solid matter. The salt made from it has a commercial value and is manufactured in large quantities. At its southern end is a mountain of salt, three miles long. The sea is twelve miles wide, forty-five miles long and very deep. So heavy is it that one who undertakes to bathe in it will not sink. There is no vegetation near it, but it is not true that it is fatal to birds that fly over it. No boats sail upon it, although they might do so. This is said to be the lowest spot upon the surface of the earth.

#### THE RIVER JORDAN.

We rode from the Dead Sea to the river Jordan under a burning sun. The view was inspiring. To the west lay the mountains of

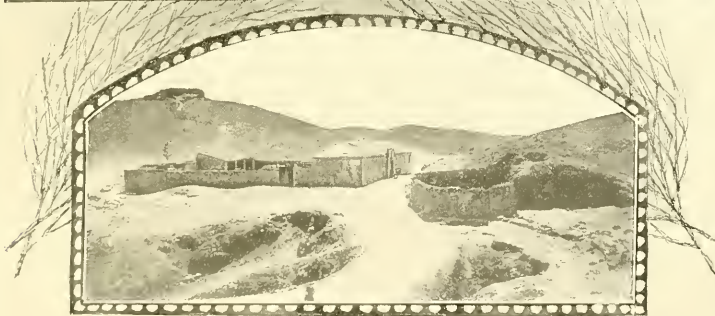
Judea and Benjamin and in plain view the Mount of Olives. Across the Jordan on the east in solemn grandeur rose the mountains of Moab, the highest of all being Nebo. Strange to say there was marked upon it in clear outline near the summit a white cross which grew more conspicuous the farther we rode. We suppose it was made by the peculiar rock formations but we could not discover it when we reached the top of the mountain. But this picture of a cross upon the mountain whence the Lord took Moses was most suggestive. The river Jordan is a more beautiful stream than we had supposed. It runs through grassy and wooded banks, and upon the occasion of our visit its waters were high. While not clear it is not muddy. It reminded us of the Tweed in Scotland, or the Avon near Shakespeare's birthplace. The forest on both sides is of tamarisk and willow and so dense as to be almost impenetrable. The river is about fifty feet wide at the place where we visited it, the reputed site of our Lord's baptism. The spot is a quiet and lovely one which shall linger in our memory always. We camped several miles farther up the stream. The moon was at its full, the air was gentle and balmy and the place and the hour were such as to awaken the holiest thoughts and memories. We were beyond question upon the spot where over three thousand years before the Israelitish host had crossed into the Land of Promise upon dry land, not far from where our Savior had stood in the baptismal waters beneath the open heavens, while a dove had descended to announce His Divine Sonship; while but a short distance off Elijah had ascended to Heaven upon a chariot of fire. I think all of our party were properly and deeply impressed with the solemnity of the hour, so much so that we gave expression to our feelings in song, among which there was one which, while not as classic as some others,

awakened memories sweet and tender of the long receded past and whose first stanza came back to me as a requiem from the dead :

“On Jordan’s stormy banks I stand,  
And cast a wistful eye  
To Canaan’s fair and happy land,  
Where my possessions lie.”

Often to the ancient tune have I heard it sung by lips long silent. As we sang it upon the banks of this earthly Jordan I wondered if they heard it in the real Canaan to which they have gone. I lay awake almost the night through thinking of so many of those who had crossed the Jordan of death and whom I know I must follow in the dim unknown.

At this point we crossed the river upon a bridge to spend the next eight days in the land of Moab and Gilead. An account of this trip one of the most interesting and informing we have taken anywhere, will be embodied in the next letter.



IN PALESTINE—The Dead Sea—Via Dolorosa in Jerusalem—Syrian Women—  
The Good Samaritan Inn



## LI.

### ON THE EAST OF THE JORDAN.

JERUSALEM, May 21, 1908.

Breaking our camp at the bridge over Jordan on the morning of May 16, we started upon our tour of the country "beyond Jordan," so often referred to in the Bible, but so little described and since then so rarely visited. We have not spent any week of our journey around the world in a manner more enjoyable, interesting and profitable.

#### THE SPRINGS OF MOSES.

Across from the plains of Jericho lie those of Moab, of about the same size and general character, flat with occasional large mounds or hills, formed of some sort of alkaline or other mineral deposit left by the ocean in ages past. Here the children of Israel gathered before crossing the Jordan. There was ample room for them. We ascended from the plain to the springs of Moses under Mount Pisgah. Reference to these springs may be found in the last verse of the fourth chapter of Deuteronomy. Undoubtedly Moses drank from them. A strong stream of pure water gushes from the mountain side, refreshing all the valley. The scene from here is beautiful. At this sequestered spot we camped for the night and drank water as we had not since we left America.

#### MOUNT NEBO.

I arose early next morning and saw the sun rise over the mountains. It was a scene of glorious charm and beauty. I heard a gun shot upon the side of Mount Pisgah just above us.

Looking up I saw a Bedouin, gun in hand, rushing down the mountain side to pick up a partridge he had slain. I thought of David's reference to Saul hunting him as a partridge on the mountain. The partridges of this region are as large as the prairie chickens of America and the color of a dove but more beautiful. They are a delicious fowl, fully equal to the pheasant or quail. Early we rode to the summit of Mount Pisgah, which is the central of three peaks of Mount Nebo, the other two being Suf and Nebo. From this point Moses viewed the Land of Promise. He could unquestionably have seen much of it upon a clear day. The day was hazy when we were there, but the view was very fine. There are the ruins of a large church upon the summit. We spent Sunday there and read all the Bible passages bearing upon it. Bethpeor was probably south of Mt. Suf, another peak, and in the neighboring valley it is supposed Moses was buried.

It is remarkable how all this region verifies the Bible record.

#### MEDABAR.

Through immense fields of wheat we rode southwest some eight or ten miles to the Bedouin village of Medabar. It is a place of about a thousand inhabitants and was standing when the children of Israel reached this point on their way to Canaan. There is reference to it in the ninth verse of the thirteenth chapter of Joshua. Upon the east is a large and beautiful plain, verdant with wheat where Joab, David's great lieutenant, vanquished the combined armies of the Ammonites and Syrians in one of the greatest battles of ancient times. At the town is a church in which is a map of Palestine wrought in mosaic very ancient and interesting. There are several other traces of mosaic and ancient architecture in the place.



## HESHBON.

From Medabar we pursued our journey north through continuous fields of wheat and a most picturesque country until we came to a huge mound, which is the remains of Heshbon, where resided the king of Sihon, who opposed the onward march of the children of Israel and who, with all his people were slain by the order of Moses. It seemed cruel, but it was necessary. Else the children of Israel could not have reached the Land of Promise. Thence the Israelites turned westward and entered the Jordan valley. Heshbon was their turning point. We descended from the city into a deep gorge and entered a valley in which are the Springs of Heshbon, whose fish-pools are referred to in the Song of Solomon. The Israelites must have passed along this valley and have drunk these waters.

## AN INTERESTING COUNTRY.

We rode for eighty-four miles from south to north through this ancient land of Moab and Gilead. This was given by Moses, it will be remembered, to Reuben and Gad, who being cattle raisers, preferred it to the land on the other side. They were wise for it is the richer of the two. There are but three or four cities or villages along this entire district. It is thinly inhabited by Bedouins, who live under wretched tents or sheds of black goat hair, for there are no walls to them. The sheep and goats and dogs share the abodes with them. There is not a farm house or building of any kind through this entire distance, except those in the villages. The people grow wheat and raise sheep. I have never seen sheep as large or with such luxuriant coats of wool. The magnificent herds moving over the green fields look like great billows or enormous logs of white rolling over the land. The

landscape is beautiful. Nowhere in the world have I seen such quantity and such luxuriance of wild flowers. At places as far as the eye can reach it resembles one great flower garden. The fields of wheat are illimitable. But it is all harvested by sickle and bound by hand as it is cut. The soil is red. The intermingling of the green of the wheat, the bright hues of the many-colored flowers and the red of the soil under the lights and shadows of the sun as reflected in the valleys from the neighboring mountains is a picture of indescribable beauty. Yet with all this magnificent growth of wheat added to luxuriant fruit and vegetable products the people are very poor. They are grievously taxed by the Turks.

#### RABBOTH AMMON.

At the extreme eastern point of our journey we reached and camped at Ammon, the ancient Rabboth-Ammon of scripture. This is where David made Joab put Uriah, whose wife Barsheba, David had taken, in the forefront of battle and had him killed. In the center is a high hill, on the top of which is a citadel, which David and Joab captured from the Ammonites, description of which will be found in Second Samuel, twelfth chapter, twenty-sixth to thirty-first verses. It must have been a valorous achievement, as the hill is still difficult of ascent. There is a powerful wall around most of it and several temples of handsome architecture. At the foot of the hill in the city are the ruins of a roofless theater capable of holding an audience of six thousand. It is built of marble, and the style of architecture is classic. Neither the Stadium at Harvard or that at the University of California surpass or equal it in architecture. In front of it is an elliptical forum surrounded by Corinthian pillars of marble, where it is

probable there were fights between gladiators or wild beasts. The proscenium has fallen down, but was evidently very handsome. There is a beautiful marble Odeon building near by and a temple, church and other buildings of equal beauty in the city. There are the remains of a row of columns lining each side of a street through the city, the ruins of a bath and there still stand portions of the archway of a bridge. These improvements were made some time during the Roman occupation, probably about the time of Christ. This city was then called Philadelphia and was one of the ten cities of Perea. Through it the Savior and his disciples probably passed en route from Galilee to Jerusalem, and here some of his miracles may have been performed. These classic ruins indicate the high civilization which existed when the Savior was on earth and that too among the people where He taught and wrought.

#### JERASH.

Forty miles north of Ammon is the city of Jerash, the most interesting in its ruins of any city we have seen in Asia. The indications strongly are that it is the ancient city of Mahanaim named by Jacob when he met two hosts of angels there when he was en route to Canaan after his parting with Laban. A few miles south of it is the brook Jabbok and in all probability the ford which he crossed and where he spent the night in the wrestle with the angel. There is not a more beautiful stream of water in the world. It is not over twenty-five feet wide, it is clear as a crystal, dashes over a bed of smooth white stones and is lined on both sides as far as we could see with oleanders, which when we were there were in full bloom. The sparkling little stream was literally embowered in flowers.

Mahanaim was the city to which David fled when driven from Jerusalem by Absalom. It was in the country near there that the battle was waged between the followers of Absalom and those of David under Joab. It was in one of the oaks in this region that Absalom was caught either by the hair or head and was slain by Joab. The oaks are there now and as then, of thick and tangled branches. It is easy to understand how a man with long hair could have been caught in them, for the forest is dense in some places. It was at the gate at Mahanaim that David received the news of the death of Absalom and it was from the watch-tower between the two gates that the messengers were despatched running with the sad tidings. It was to this watch-tower that David ascended crying, "Oh, Absalom, Absalom, my son Absalom, would God I had died for thee. Oh, Absalom, my son, my son." A gate, very ancient, stands there today, or a double gate which exactly answers the Bible description. From the tower or arch between, the two gates is a clear view of the plain which stretches in front. If not the same gate it may be a copy of it.

#### ARCHITECTURE OF JERASH.

Jerash is one of the sights, if not one of the wonders of the world. It is a mass of magnificent ruins unsurpassed by any we have seen in any land. We have already referred to the gate. The central part, which we have mentioned as a watch-tower, is also a triumphal arch 82 feet wide. The carvings and general architecture of the gateway are very handsome. Just inside the city is an enormous reservoir 300x700 feet, called a Naumachia and used for the representation of naval battles. In the city are two long streets crossing each other lined on both sides with handsome colonnades, mounted with an elaborately carved entablature.

The chief street terminates in an elliptical forum, enclosed by one hundred Ionic columns, most of them still standing. Fronting upon this street and overlooking this forum is a splendid temple nearly all in ruins with columns probably thirty feet high and six feet in diameter. By its side is a large theater similar to the one at Ammon and overlooking the entire city.

On the highest point in the city is the Temple of the Sun, a splendid structure with a portico of fourteen magnificent columns 38 feet high and six feet thick. There are near the temple another open theater similar to but smaller than the one already mentioned, several massive bridges across the Jabbok and other temples and edifices numerous and classic.

The wall around the city is ancient. It was also one of the ten cities of Perea or of the Decapolis and its fine buildings were erected about or soon after the Christian era. It indicates the existence of a very advanced civilization. It is so isolated and inaccessible that few see or hear of it, but it is worth the cost and labor of a visit.

#### CITY OF ES SALT.

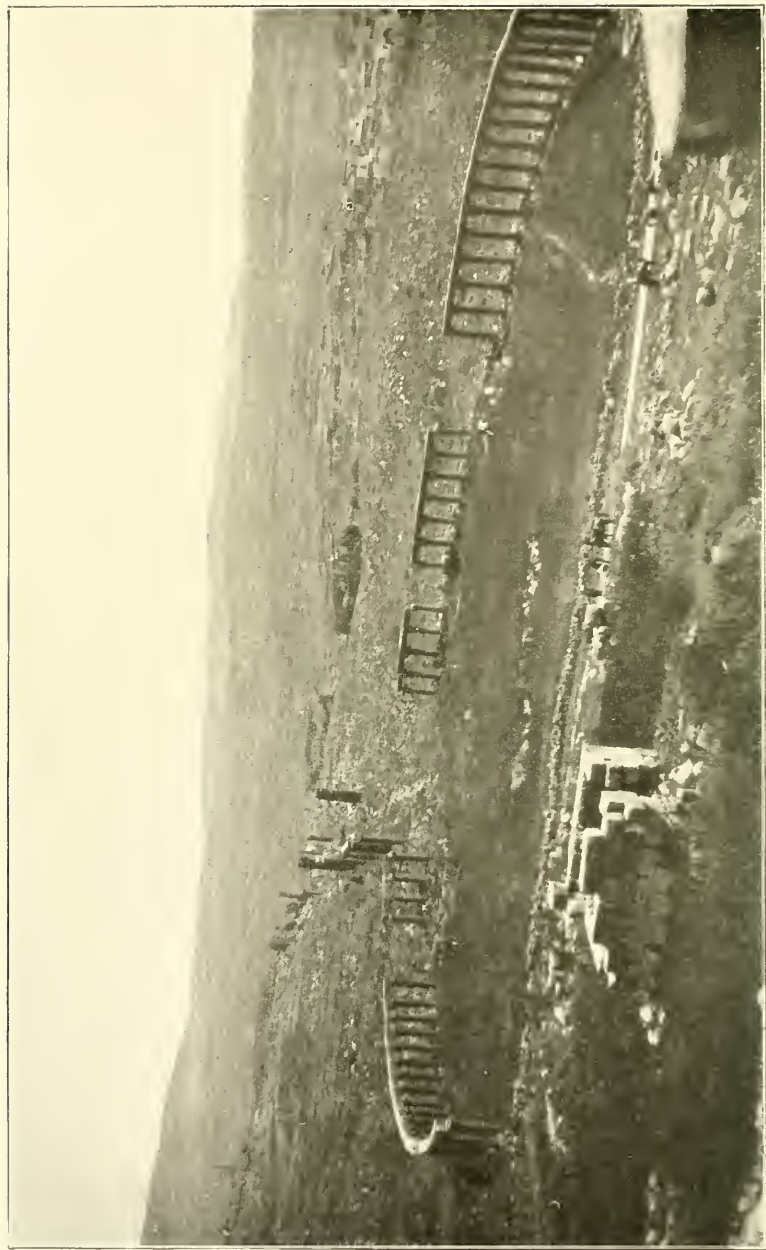
Jerash was the farthest point north which we reached. We were told that Gadara farther on and near Galilee also contained some interesting ruins and that not far distant was Ajlun supposed to be the ancient Ramoth-Gilead. But the strength of our party being about exhausted we returned. Much of our journey was up and down hills over which even our animals, climbers as they were, could not carry us. Nearly all of it was by paths and through a most wild and broken country. But the people were not unfriendly, a fact possibly influenced by the presence of our armed guard. On our return to Jericho we stopped and camped

for the night at the ancient city of Es Salt, thirty miles northwest of Jerusalem. It contains seventeen thousand people, is built of stone in between mountains and is similar in appearance to most Palestine and Syrian cities. Like the valley where Jerash stands the country is very fertile, but there are no evidences of handsome architecture present or past. It is difficult to identify Es Salt with any of the cities mentioned in the Bible. Some have thought it to have been Mahanaim; others Ramoth-Gilead. But there is not much reason to sustain either theory. It is very ancient and interesting and the most important city we saw east of Jordan.

A railroad is now being built from Damascus to Mecca which runs not many miles from Jerash, Ammon, and Es Salt. The natives are resisting it, but the Turks are pushing it through by force of arms. We met a large body of Turkish soldiers en route there to protect the builders. It is already finished far southward. When completed to Mecca it will open up this long hidden region to the light of progress.







*RUINS OF JERASH—East of Jordan—Supposed by Some to Be Site of Ancient  
Mahanaim—Where David Received Notices of Absalom's Death*

## LII.

### INTERESTING AND SACRED SPOTS IN PALESTINE.

NABLOUS, PALESTINE, June 1, 1908.

A representative of Cambridge University, England, a cultivated and interesting man, who has been engaged in excavating Palestine cities for the past ten years, is my authority for the statement that there are the debris of twenty distinct cities under the present Jerusalem. Babylonians and Assyrians and Egyptians and Moslems and Crusaders and many others have wrought this work of devastation not only in Jerusalem but all over Palestine until there are very few buildings which are older than the twelfth century and few even of those destroyed whose sites can be identified. Hence practically all the structures named in the guide books as having existed since the days of the Savior are fictitious and many of the sacred sites are purely traditional and not to be relied on. But the hills and valleys and plains and rivers and lakes are still here, as are also the sites of the cities and other spots where there were not cities. And about these there is a fascinating interest to every lover of history and believer in the Scriptural narrative.

#### GARDEN OF GETHSEMANE AND VICINITY.

The place designated as the Garden of Gethsemane must be either the identical one where our Lord suffered the agony and bloody sweat or near to it. It is now a well-kept flower garden enclosed in a stone wall, an iron fence surrounding the garden, while a pavement separates it from the stone wall. There are in the garden a number of handsome spruce trees and several old olive trees none of which however could have existed since the Christian

era. The garden lies on the east side of the Brook Kedron, at the foot of the Mount of Olives, and directly opposite the Temple Area. Near it are the tombs of Mary and Joseph and down the Kedron valley about two hundred feet are Absalom's pillar, and the tombs of St. James and Zechariah. Still farther south down the brook are the Virgin's Fountain and the pool of Siloam, the latter much neglected and filthy. Across the Kedron from the pool of Siloam, southeast of the city, is the Field of Blood or Potters' Field bought with the money paid Judas as the price of betrayal. All these points are fairly well identified. This section is covered with tombs or gardens and being located upon the precipitous sides of Moriah or Olivet or in the picturesque valley of Jehoshaphat through which flows the Brook Kedron it is most interesting. There are many buildings here of ancient stone type. It is called the Village of Siloam. Modern scholars are beginning to fix this as Mount Zion instead of that heretofore regarded as that location. As most of it is in the valley it is difficult to understand how it could have been called "Mount." But there are many arguments in favor of this being the ancient city of David or Mount Zion.

#### KIRJATHJEARIM AND HOUSE OF OBED-EDOM.

Ten miles west of Jerusalem on the Jaffa road is the village of Aboosha, the ancient Kirjathjearim, containing several hundred inhabitants in a pleasant valley into which gushes a living fountain and which is green with olive and fig and other trees of luxuriant growth. Here the Ark of the Covenant rested for twenty years when it was brought back upon an ox cart from the Philistines. It will be recalled how that when David started to remove it one Uzzah touched the cart as it jostled and he was

stricken dead. If the road there was as rough then as now the ark must have been well fastened on the cart or only a divine hand could have kept it from overturning. The house of Obededom, whence it was taken for three months, still is to be seen upon a high point not far from Kirjathjearim and between that place and Jerusalem. Nestling among trees upon a neighboring mountain upon the south is the reputed village where John the Baptist was born. All this region as is that in every direction from Jerusalem is an endless chain of treeless mountains, dotted at rare intervals with villages, some perched upon the summits, others seemingly glued to the sides, or others reposing amid green trees in the valleys.

#### LEAVING JERUSALEM.

We spent five weeks in the city of Jerusalem. We explored it inside and outside the walls we think thoroughly. Every spot of interest we visited, some of them several times with competent guides. We went as far south as Hebron and were ten days beyond the Jordan. We had already traveled from Jaffa on the west to the city. Having thus visited the country fairly well east, west and south as well as the city itself we started upon May 30, by carriages for a trip to the north, our objective point being the Sea of Galilee and Nazareth. The recent construction of excellent roads by the Turkish government renders it possible now to reach nearly all the important points in Palestine by carriage. As the hotels are fairly good it is probable that this method of transportation through the country will supplant camping, not because it is more comfortable, for it is less so, but because it is quicker and cheaper. Then the probabilities of broken limbs or even fatal injuries by horse-back riding are removed. Many serious

accidents occur from this cause. One occurred in our own party, the result of a horse stumbling and falling on level ground. So we concluded to take carriages.

Viewed from any direction Jerusalem is beautiful, but the most inspiring sight to be had of it is from the northeast. It is the summit of Mount Scopus. Not only are all the red roofs, the domes and towers, the city walls and splendid stone structures of the city in conspicuous view, but the Mount of Olives, the Mosque of Omar, the fields of green and the orchards of olive trees stretching away to the mountains. Upon the east are the desolate and frowning mountains of Judea, yawning from hundreds of feet below, as they descend into the Dead Sea and the River Jordan. The latter were flashing the sunlight from their waters at the base of the mountains of Moab twenty miles away as we bade adieu to Jerusalem. The morning was a glorious one and the scene will linger with us always. I do not wonder that the Savior so often sought these heights upon the east of the city and that from them were delivered some of His most wonderful teachings. For it was His custom to seek places of natural beauty. And when looking upon such a scene He realized that within a few years it would be swept away by the ruthless invaders and its people murdered or exiled, all as a penalty for their rejection of Him, it can be understood why He should have wept over it and uttered the most plaintive wail of His life.

#### FROM JERUSALEM TO BETHEL.

Our first day's journey was from Jerusalem to Nablous, the site of ancient Shechem. The region is one of great scenic beauty and unsurpassed historic interest. It is continuously mountainous, with occasionally fertile valleys. The mountains

are not of the massive, lofty kind like our Rockies, but are huge foot-hills. You will recall the plates of apple dumplings which our mothers used to serve us in Missouri. They are a topographical miniature of the surface of nineteenth-century Palestine. The mountains are void of trees, but are limitless masses of rock. Occasionally the soil has been caught and held in terraces by stone walls, but most of it has long ago washed down into the valleys which are exhaustlessly fertile, the depth of soil being great. On the road we meet continuous trains of camels and donkeys, loaded with stones and wood and grain, and accompanied by crowds of Arabs of all sexes and ages. If any of them are riding it will be the men. The women invariably walk. I have felt my humanity rise within me repeatedly as I have beheld a big, strapping man riding placidly upon a camel or donkey, while a bare-footed woman or several of them trudged along over the stones leading the animal. Camels, donkeys and women all bear the same meek, submissive and surrendered look in Palestine. They are the burden bearers of the land. There are no wheeled vehicles of any kind to be seen in central or southern Palestine outside of Jerusalem. Those there are chiefly carriages for local transportation of travelers.

There are no farm houses or fences or farms, but occasional fields of wheat or barley. In the valleys and where there is water upon the hill-sides there are groves of olive, fig or pomegranates, the chief fruit trees of the countries.

#### PLACES OF BIBLE INTEREST.

Nearly every one of the ancient cities of Palestine were built upon high points. We are told that the worshippers of Baal sought "the high places," but not more so than did the Lord's



chosen people. The first site of interest north of Jerusalem is that of Nob, which stands upon an elevated point a few miles north of the city. This it will be remembered is where the high priest Abimelech lived and where David ate the shew bread when he was hungry. Hearing of this Saul slew Abimelech and all his priests. Upon the adjoining hill to Nob is Gibeah, the capital of Israel during Saul's reign, and a few miles farther is Ramah, where Samuel lived and died. Of these only Ramah has a house left upon its site, and it is now a wretched village of a few huts. Upon the high point several miles to the west and opposite the foregoing stands Neby Samuel, the ancient Mizpah, where Saul was declared king. Upon another high point to the left is a bare hill where once stood ancient Ataroth whence Deborah judged Israel.

About ten miles from Jerusalem we pass ancient Beeroth, which according to tradition is the spot where Joseph and Mary discovered the absence from the company of the child Jesus and turned back to seek for Him, finding Him in the Temple with the Doctors. Beeroth is also interesting as having been the home of the sons of Rimmon, Rechab and Baanah, who slew Ishbosheth, the son of Saul, and took his body to David, who at once ordered both of them to be slain and their hands and feet hung over the pool in Hebron.

#### BETHEL AND SHILOH.

A short distance east of Beeroth and away from the carriage road is the site of ancient Bethel. It became necessary for us to deflect from our course and go there by horse-back. The pathway is a rugged one. En route we pass a pool of water fed by a living spring. It is claimed to be the pool in which Philip baptized the Eunuch. But as we had been shown at least one other pool



south of Jerusalem where this event occurred, and as the pool shown us did not seem deep enough for a baptism to satisfy our Baptist views we were not inclined to accept it. Before reaching the site of Bethel we entered a valley between two mountains, the stratified rocks upon which cause both of them to resemble stairways. We wondered if the sight of these hills had impressed the mind of the boy Jacob as he passed along so as to lead him to dream of the ladder of Angels at night. We see nothing inconsistent with such a natural means for attaining a supernatural end. Bethel itself is now a mass of miserable mud structures. There are the ruins of an old church and a fountain near which Jacob is supposed to have slept. The place is a valley and there are some fine fruit trees and a vineyard near by. Not far away upon an adjoining hill is the supposed home of Abraham, whence he removed from Shechem. A few miles to the southeast nestled in the mountains is the site of Ai, where Joshua and his hosts had their first encounter with the Canaanites upon their arrival in the Promised Land. And Michmash, another historic point, lies hard by. This is a wild, rocky, mountainous and desolate country, relieved by neither stream nor valley, shade tree nor flower. Whatever it may have been in ancient days it possesses no attraction now.

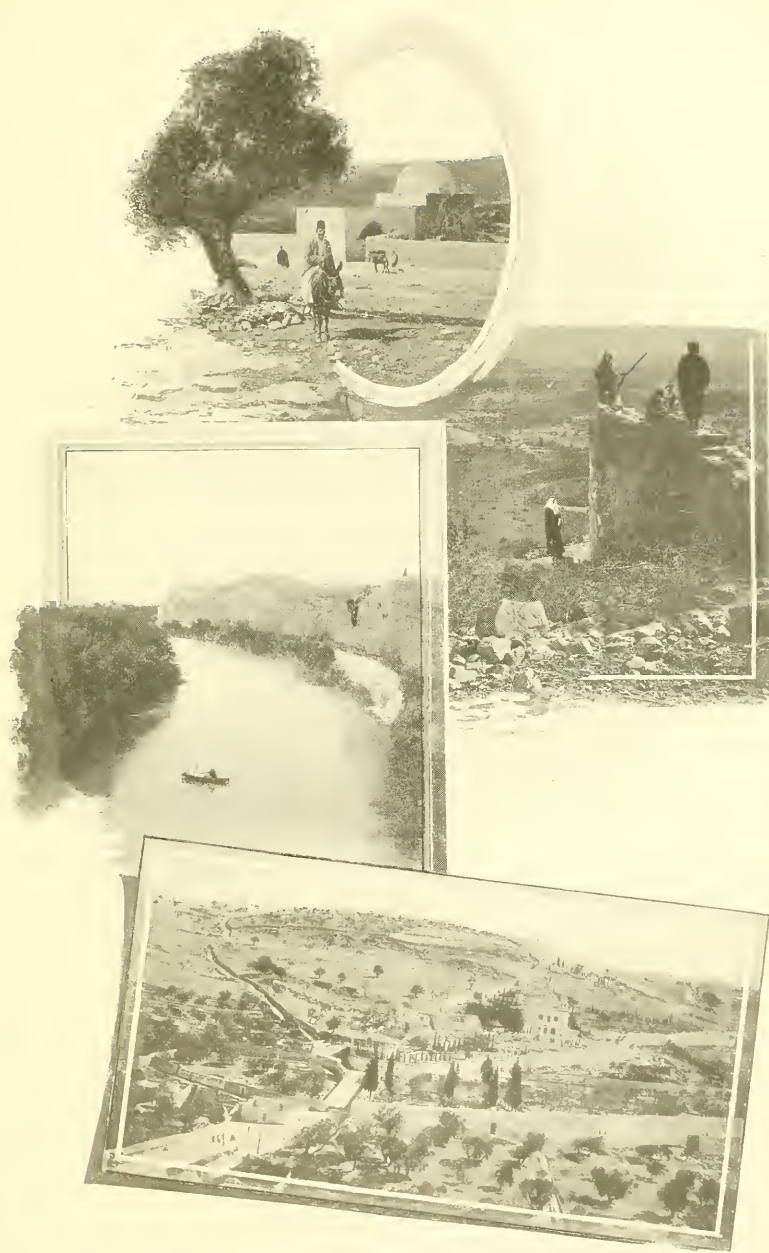
North of Bethel several miles is the valley where for four hundred years rested the Ark of the Covenant, and which during all that period succeeding the entrance of the children of Israel into Canaan was their national capital. It was then named Shiloh, and its fame has descended for these four thousand years. Now but a few stones and huts mark the spot. In its wildness and its desolation it is typical of the wreck and ruin and change in this land once flowing with milk and honey and among these people once the chosen of God.

### LIII.

#### **SHECHEM AND SAMARIA.**

NABLOUS, PALESTINE, June 4, 1908.

At almost the exact geographical center of Palestine is the site of ancient Shechem. No place in all that land has a more fascinating history or is in the midst of a more charming and fertile region. The broad and beautiful valley of Moreh, opulent in fruits and vegetables, in barley and wheat, stretches upon the east. In its flowers, its green fields and greener trees and its coral soil, a symposium of multi-colored beauty, enlivened by frequent villages and a scene of busy pastoral and agricultural life it lies in between ranges of purple mountains and runs north and south intersecting the narrow Shechem Valley at Jacob's Well. We reached the latter just as the rays of the setting sun were shedding a flood of golden light upon the mountains and valleys, rendering the whole scene one of indescribable gentleness and charm. The well is one of the sites whose genuineness is undisputed. It was there four thousand years ago that Abraham first pitched his tent upon entering Canaan, and there Jacob owned the land which was given by him to Joseph. Its chief interest lies in the fact that upon the stone above it, possibly the identical one that rests on it now, the wearied Christ sat and had His memorable conversation with the Samaritan woman. It is being preserved by the Greek orthodox church which has erected a wall about it and a house above it and carefully guards it. A few years ago it was covered with and was full of rubbish, but this has been removed down to a depth of eighty feet. There is no water in it now, but it fills with water in rainy seasons. There still remains a quantity of rock in the



IN PALESTINE—Rachel's Tomb Near Bethlehem—The River Jordan—The Valley of Jericho—The Mount of Olives



bottom. How much deeper the well is no one knows. Its diameter is seven feet and the walls which are of excellent stone masonry are in perfect condition, never having been repaired so far as any one knows. A fourth of a mile to the north lies a dome covered tomb, which is said to be that of Joseph. A mile farther north is a group of houses which are claimed to be upon the site of the ancient city of Sychar. Modern scholars are inclined to place the latter nearer to the well. Many olive and fig trees grow in the vicinity and a stream of water runs near. The soil is very fertile.

#### THE VALE OF SHECHEM.

Our father Abraham knew a good piece of ground when he saw it. We visited the valley of Mamre near Hebron where he spent most of his life, and thought we had never seen a more fertile tract of land. But it is equalled if not surpassed by Shechem. Into both the rich alluvial soil of the adjacent mountains has been carried until it has exhaustless depth and productiveness. There is every reason to believe that it was as prolific when he first pitched his tent in Palestine in this spot over forty centuries ago. Fig, pomegranate, lemon, orange, olive, all the trees indigenous to the land grow in luxuriance and beauty. Interminable gardens of flowers and vegetables and fields of grain extend along it, and the fountains of pure water which dash from the mountain sides keep the soil at all times fresh and its increase prolific. The valley lies in between the mountains of Gerizim and Ebal, which are nowhere over a mile apart. It also extends far beyond them to the westward. It is never more than a few miles wide.

#### NABLOUS.

The city of Nablous, containing 25,000 people, next to Jerusalem the largest city in Palestine, also lies in the vale between

Ebal and Gerizim. Its inhabitants are nearly all Mohammedan and quite fanatical. A church and hospital both under the Church of England are the only Protestant organizations here. This was the city of the ancient Samaritans, whose temple was upon the summit of Mount Gerizim where they still observe the passover as did the ancient Jews. There are 180 of this sect yet left. We visited their synagogue and were shown manuscript copies of the Pentateuch and the Book of Joshua, which they claim to have been copied by the grandson of Aaron thirty-five hundred years ago. While their claim cannot be sustained it is thought that the manuscripts are as old as the Christian Era and among the most ancient in existence. The Samaritans are Monotheists, believe in Moses, but not in Christ. They also believe in the resurrection and the last judgment, but still maintain their ancient hostility to the Jews.

#### SHECHEM'S PLACE IN BIBLICAL HISTORY.

In addition to having been Abraham's first stopping place and Jacob's home and Joseph's place of burial Shechem was the spot where the tribes of Israel first gathered after their conquest of the country to hear the law read and to enter into their national covenant with each other. Upon the two mountains of Gerizim and Ebal the people were stationed and exchanged the blessings and the cursings. The human voice can be easily heard from one mountain side to the other. The mountains extend along the valley four or five miles. There is ample space upon them and in the valleys for the tribes to have assembled. The incident of Abimelech described in the ninth chapter of Judges can be well understood by a visit to the spot which is in many respects a natural auditorium.

Here at Shechem the tribes of Israel separated during the reign

of Rehoboam, and Jeroboam set up the capital of the Northern Kingdom. It was also the scene of many bloody battles during the Roman period and the time of the crusades. Next to Jerusalem no spot in Palestine has played so important a part in the history of the country with the possible exception of

#### ANCIENT SAMARIA.

On a beautiful hill 330 feet high and a mile and a half square, ten miles west of Nablous lie the remains of ancient Samaria, the most splendid city of its time. Luxuriant olive and fig and oak trees cover the hill and adjoining valleys and mountains and living fountains preserve the whole region in perennial green. From its summit is a splendid view, extending to the Mediterranean on the west and the Lebanon mountains on the north. We spent a half day in a most interesting visit to its ruins. In the day of its glory it must have been magnificent. Here Ahab had his gorgeous ivory palace located probably upon the western extremity and the highest point upon the summit. Here Jehu, the fearful avenger of the Most High, slew all the representatives of Baal, and all the kinsmen of Ahaziah, King of Judah. Here for many years stood the capital of the Northern Kingdom and was the center of pride and luxury of the different dynasties which held court there from Omri its builder to Herod. In the sixth and seventh chapters of Second Kings will be found a record of the terrible condition of the city during its siege by the Syrians and of the relief which came by Divine interposition through the prophet Elisha.



## SPLENDID RUINS.

Not a vestige of the city of Ahab's time remains. It was destroyed by Sargon 722 B. C. But the magnificent ruins of the city of Herod the Great, which were built above the ruins of the ancient city are to be found both upon the surface and in the excavations now being made by a party of explorers from the Harvard University. This exploration is in charge of Dr. David G. Lyon, Hollis Professor of Divinity and teacher of Semitic Languages and Literature of Harvard University. He attended William Jewell College in Missouri in the early seventies and afterwards graduated at the Southern Baptist Theological Seminary at Louisville, Kentucky. He is assisted by Dr. Schumacher, of Haifa, Palestine, and Mr. Clarence Fisher, of Philadelphia. At present the natives are objecting to the excavations, but this trouble will no doubt be overcome. Important information is expected from the work. Enough exploration has been accomplished to afford a fair idea of the plan of the city and the character of the principal buildings and streets. Upon the eastern terrace of the summit stood the palace of Herod the Great. Its great size as well as its magnificent architecture is indicated in the long lines of noble marble pillars with their Corinthian capitals still standing. Some of them including the bases upon which they rest are in an excellent state of preservation. Adjoining the palace and extending to the valley below was the mammoth theater, the side of the hill being utilized for the seats and the valley for the amphitheatre where no doubt occurred gladiatorial contests, or human beings were made to combat with wild beasts for the amusement of the bloody monarch and his court. There are remains of other noble buildings upon the summit. Upon its western edge are the foundations of a great edifice, possibly a temple

from whose pinnacle the Mediterranean was plainly visible, and the view of Palestine was extended and very fine.

Portions of the ancient wall of the city have been excavated, and there is still standing the city gate on the west side as in the days of Ahab, and in which was trampled to death by the starving inhabitants, the lord appointed by King Ahab to guard the gate the morning after the withdrawal of the Syrians. His death came as a penalty of his lack of faith in the prophet Elisha.

The terrace upon which stands the Palace is surrounded by three or four colonnades of marble pillars, over 2,000, lining a wide street which completely encircled the terrace. Many of these pillars are still standing.

#### JOHN THE BAPTIST.

In a mosque in the little village which still stands upon the eastern side of the hill are the alleged tombs of Obadiah, Elisha and John The Baptist. Some think that the latter was beheaded here rather than at Machaerus upon the Dead Sea. That bloody deed was by order of Herod Antipas, the son of Herod The Great. Whether Herod Antipas ever resided here is a subject for historians to decide. If he did it is not improbable that in one of his revels in the splendid palace the great forerunner here lost his head. The only authority for placing the act at Machaerus is Josephus, who is is not always accurate. If it be true that John the Baptist was here beheaded there is a singular and fitting coincidence in the fact that the two kings upon whom the two Eliases had uttered anathemas, Ahab, who had been denounced by Elijah, and Herod who had been boldly charged with his sin by John, the Second Elias, should have been bereft of their glory in the same city, and have likewise incurred the judgments of the Most High and the

obloquy and detestation of mankind. A parallelism in their lives is to be found in that each was dominated by a bad and designing woman, and that each stands as an illustration of the inevitable doom which follows a life of pride and cruelty and wickedness.

PROPHECY FULFILLED.

Few spots upon the earth have a history so revoltingly and dramatically tragic and so expressive of the vengeance of the Almighty upon the flagrant violators of His commandments and the enemies and oppressors of His people. Probably the most vicious and blood thirsty monarchs of the Old Testament were Ahab and his cruel queen Jezebel, and of the New Herod the Great. All three were not only steeped in iniquity of the deepest dye, but they rioted in power and glory and luxury. As upon a quiet Sunday morning in May I walked over this site of this ancient and remarkable city, and wandered amid these classic memorials of its pride and greatness and recalled the deeds of blood and rapine, the scenes of luxury and wickedness of which it was once the center, and then as I listened to the singing of the birds in the trees and felt the stillness and solitude of this peaceful place I could but be impressed with the object lesson it presented, of what changes time had wrought, and of how the judgments of the Almighty were sometimes slow, but righteous altogether. I understood then as I never had before the malediction of Israel's greatest prophet, who undoubtedly had reference to this very spot and the doom which would befall it in his memorable prophecy.

"Behold the Lord hath a mighty and strong one which as a tempest of hail and a destroying storm, as a flood of mighty waters overflowing, shall cast down to the earth with the hand.

The crown of pride, the drunkards of Ephraim, shall be trodden under feet; and the glorious beauty which is on the head of the fat valley shall be a fading flower and as the hasty fruit before the summer."

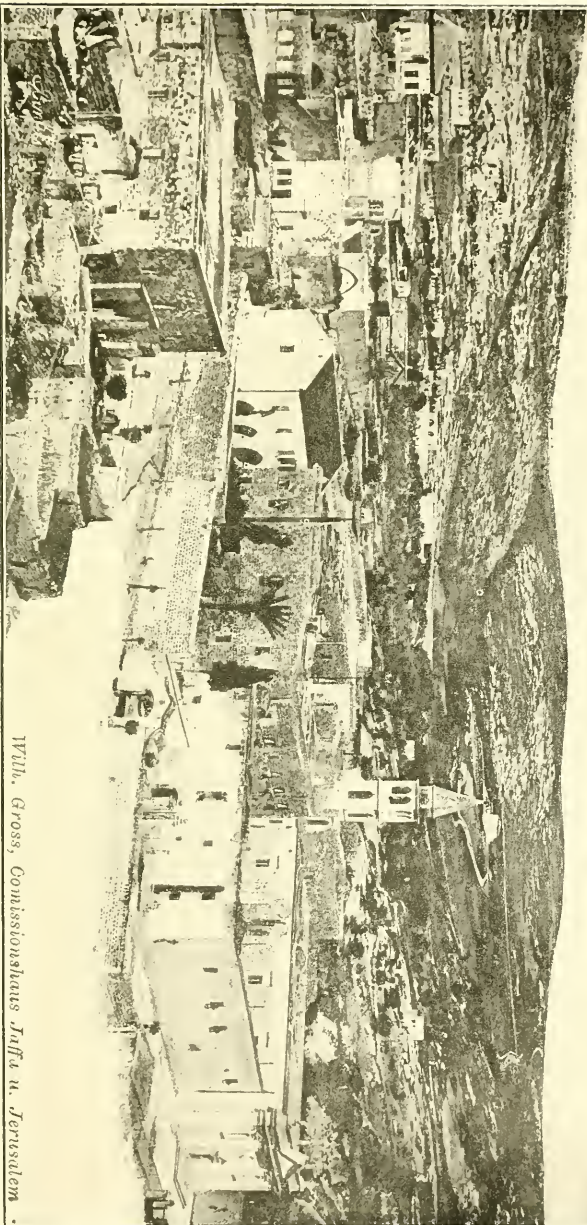
LIV.

FROM NABLOUS TO NAZARETH.

NAZARETH, GALILEE, June 5, 1908.

Twenty miles north of the vale of Shechem lies the plain of Dothan in the midst of some of the most beautiful scenery of Palestine. Only a few ruins and trees and an old spring mark this spot where Joseph was sold by his brethren and where Elisha strengthened the faith of his servant by the celestial vision of horses and chariots. To reach the point from Shechem it is necessary to go upon horse back. Our route by carriage had to be by the northwest along the Mediterranean. There is a broad, smooth stone highway which runs through the beautiful vale of Shechem until it enters the plain of Sharon which skirts the western border of Palestine. This plain varies in width from five to twenty miles and extends from ancient Philistia upon the south to Phoenicia on the north. It resembles a broad Missouri prairie and is equally as fertile and beautiful, having the additional attraction of the Mediterranean as a background. The principal product grown is wheat, of which there are large fields. The reaping is chiefly by hand, the grain being cut with sickles of the primitive type and bundled as it is cut. Along our way we frequently pass large threshing floors precisely like those of ancient days. Either donkeys, horses or oxen are treading out the grain, which it is claimed more effectually separates it from the stalk than can be done by machinery. There is not a threshing machine in Palestine or Syria. After the wheat is trodden out it has to lie in a heap until the tax-gatherer comes along and claims a part of it for revenue. The taxation of the produce of the country is like the tariff in ours, all and more than it can bear. Plowing is all

Nazareth.



Wilh. Gross, Commissionshaus Juffé u. Jerusalem.





done by oxen and with one straight iron piece or stick of wood. Nearly all the implements of labor are the same as those used in the days of Abraham. This is especially true of middle and southern Palestine. In the northern part near Haifa there is a German colony, which has introduced cheap McCormick reapers and mowers, which they buy for a hundred dollars each. They have also substituted wagons for camels and donkeys as a means of transporting merchandise and produce. Both Jews and Germans are organizing colonies in various localities. Mr. Rothschild, the millionaire, has established several Jewish colonies and furnished money to them.

## PEOPLE OF MODERN PALESTINE.

Four distinct elements constitute the population of modern Palestine, viz.: Syrians, Arabs, Jews and Europeans. Of the last-named there are comparatively few. Some are employed in keeping hotels, conducting tourist agencies and in merchandising. There are also many of them, notably, the priests, engaged in religious work, and others in hospitals and hospices. The Syrians are a bright, up-to-date people, of about the color of an American mulatto. They dress as do Americans, except that they invariably wear the red fez. They are the gay and festive, the debonair element, the young bloods and the old ones also. The Jews are quite clannish. They constitute half the population of Jerusalem, and have three other cities distinctly their own, Hebron in the south and Safed, the city set upon a hill that could not be hid, and Tiberias in the north. They wear long coats, long beard and long hair, are close bargainers and shrewd tradesmen. The Arabs are the laboring class, the stock raisers and the farmers. They are yellow and dark in complexion, long, lanky and solemn,

and wear great coats which they wrap closely about them as they do handkerchiefs about their heads and faces in the hottest weather. They are the traditional Bedouins. They look quite warlike and dangerous as we meet them on horses or donkeys upon the highways: Many of them carry guns, why no one seems to know, as they have no use for them either for hunting game or for purposes of defense. Most of the people are very poor. Taxes are so burdensome as not only to prevent farming from being profitable, but to render it impossible to operate manufactories or engage in any commercial business upon a large scale. However, there are fewer beggars in Palestine than in any country we have visited.

#### CESAREA, ATHLIT AND THE CRUSADERS.

On our road to Haifa we pass not far from ancient Cesarea, once the capital of Judea, where Paul was imprisoned and made his memorable defense before Festus and Agrippa. It is now but a small and nearly deserted village upon the seashore, scarcely a relic of its former glory remaining. Further north stand the ruins of Athlit the seaport of the crusaders. The remnants of the great walls, churches and other buildings show it to have been magnificent in its day, but it is now only a melancholy wreck. Not only are the buildings in ruins, but the population has vanished. Only a few wretched Bedouins dwelling in mud huts wander about in its deserted streets and through the corridors of its noble buildings. As solemnly and quietly it stands upon the sea, the wail of the winds and the beating of the waves sound like funeral dirges ever moaning their requiem to the strange religious frenzy which for a century dominated the Holy Land and left an impress which eight hundred years have not effaced. All over

Palestine may be found the ruins of cities and churches erected by the crusaders. There is scarcely a spot of historic interest, especially is there not a place sacred to Christianity where they have not left some memorial of their zeal and devotion. They had control of the Holy Land for a century and only surrendered it after a terrible sacrifice of life and money. At Athlit there still remains the splendid hall in which they held their last meeting before taking ship and finally abandoning the land for which they had sacrificed so much. As I wandered through it there came upon me a feeling of awe and reverence as it recalled the history and unhappy ending of this most remarkable movement for the rescue of the Holy Sepulchre and the glory of God. Although the crusaders failed they left a heritage of consecration scarcely paralleled.

#### MOUNT CARMEL AND HAIFA.

For ten or twelve miles we drove along the base of Mount Carmel, celebrated in Holy Writ as the home of both Elijah and Elisha, and as having been the scene of the trial of strength between Elijah and the prophets of Baal in the presence of all Israel. No event in all ancient Biblical history was more dramatic or important. None has been more doubted or ridiculed. But a visit to the spot reveals both its plausibility and its possibility. The time had arrived when it was necessary that the power of the Most High should be vindicated, when there should be tangible demonstration of who was God, Jehovah or Baal. The children of Israel were deserting the religion of Moses by millions. The Kings and their courts, the temples and places of worship, the priests and all the religious orders were being given over to idolatry. Only a splendid heroic demonstration could rescue the

true faith. The place selected was the highest point in central Palestine, overlooking the beautiful valley of Esdraelon where all Israel could gather to behold it.

The victory of the prophet was complete and unanswerable. Like many other spots in Palestine it is a powerful vindication of the Bible narrative. The place of the sacrifice was at the southern extremity of the mountain summit. A Carmelite Roman Catholic church occupies it and is plainly visible for many miles.

At the northern extremity of the mountain overlooking the Mediterranean is a Carmelite Monastery of the Roman Catholics, a very handsome building. Below it in the side of the mountain is a large cave now used as a Mohammedan mosque where Elisha is said to have had a school of the Prophets.

In the valley below lies the beautiful modern village of Haifa, one of the three seaports of Palestine, Jaffa and Beirut being the other two. To the north and within view is the village of Acre upon the seashore, and farther north are Tyre with 8,000, and Sidon with 140,000 people. At the latter place is a boys' large boarding school, Gerard Institute, under Rev. George A. Ford, D. D., which is doing a fine work, and also a girls' school. This is a fertile and well-wooded country. Many orchards of figs and mulberry and olive may be found and the oak grows wild luxuriantly.

#### NAZARETH.

No place we visited in Palestine, not even Jerusalem, left a profounder impression than did Nazareth. The fact that in this isolated Jewish village dwelt for thirty years He who is the founder of our Christianity, who constantly increasing millions believe to have been the Lord from Heaven, and all who do not

hold such belief must admit to have been one of the greatest leaders and forces in history, this fact of itself makes the place most interesting, almost hallowed to Christians. But it has attractions of a physical nature also. It contains about 10,000 people, nearly all Syrians and Arabs, most of them members of the Roman and Greek Catholic and Greek Orthodox churches. There are very few Jews and not many Europeans. There are several church buildings belonging to these religious organizations. The Church Missionary Society, which operates under the church of England has a building and a church organization and a finely managed orphanage where some seventy girls are being trained. The Roman Catholics have a large school, the building for which is the most conspicuous and prominent in the city. The Russians, Roman and German Catholics and English all have hospitals and day schools for boys and girls.

#### ITS LOCATION AND CHARACTERISTICS.

The city is built upon the side of a mountain, in fact of two mountains, for it now straggles over a gorge into a second one from its ancient site. Its streets are narrow and rambling, and its buildings of one and two stories and of stone, most of them with flat roofs. The business quarter consists of little shops and bazars similar to those to be found in most Oriental cities. Nowhere we have been did there seem to be as many people working by hand, without the aid of machinery. There is said not to be a labor-saving device in the place. The Divine carpenter boy who wrought here for so many years seems to have so consecrated manual labor, that it has continued until this day. I took special interest in visiting the various shops where so much is being done by hand. It is the boast of the people that everything they use is made by

the hands of their own people, furniture, implements of a domestic or industrial nature, household utensils, in fact everything for personal daily use. I spent some time in a carpenter shop and in talking with the mechanic who was making with his ordinary tools a well carved piece of furniture. He was a skillful workman, spoke English well and told me he was paid seventy-five cents a day for his work, which was above an average wage. From another shop I purchased a pocketknife made by the workman who sold it to me.

#### SCENES OF THE SAVIOR'S LIFE.

There is one spot in the city which no doubt the Savior frequently visited. It is known as Mary's well and supplies almost the entire community with water. Gen. Lew Wallace gives a graphic description of it in *Ben Hur*. We lingered about it for some time, for we felt sure that we were upon ground that had been trodden by the Son of God. Women and children were continually flocking to it and filling their jars with water. Some of the jars would contain several gallons, and these they carried away poised in a careened position upon their heads with a dexterity hardly to be believed. The jar is not set flat, but poised on one edge upon the head, presumably to keep the water from splashing out. How the woman carries it in this position is a mystery. Upon the supposed site of Joseph's workshop where the Savior toiled is a Roman Catholic church. It is upon the side of the hill overlooking the valley upon the east. In the little church which covers the spot is a very fine picture of the Holy Family representing the boy, Jesus, at work and His mother and Joseph looking on in an admiring and wondering way. Recently there has been excavated the original pavement nearby and still



further down in the earth have been found grottoes, which were evidently inhabited. Some think it probable that Joseph and Mary may have occupied one of these caves, and that the Son of God was not only born in a cave but lived in one.

The Greek Catholics occupy what they claim to be the site of the synagogue, if not the identical synagogue, where Jesus once sat and taught the people from the prophet Esaias, and declared His Divine nature for which He was led by the crowd to a hill, now a part of the town, to be thrown over it. The room is 20x40 feet, has a raised platform at one end and is plainly furnished.

The Greek orthodox have a church building which they claim occupies the place where the fountain of the city stood in the days of the Savior and from which He drank.

#### BEAUTIFUL FOR SITUATION.

The glory of Nazareth is its location. It is situated upon the Plain of Esdraelon, within view of Mounts Carmel and Hermon and Tabor and of the Mediterranean sea. Not only is the natural scenery noble and inspiring but there is not a part of the wide expanse of view that does not contain within itself a thrilling bit of Bible history. All this splendid, natural and historic panorama is in plain view from the hill back of Nazareth and no doubt the Child, the Boy, the Youth, the Man, who was to go hence upon His Divine mission not only often gazed upon and strolled amid these scenes, but received from them in His purely human nature much of the education, the poetry, the knowledge and the love of nature and of the world which shone forth so in His teachings and in His life.



## LV.

### THE PLAIN OF ESDRAELON.

TIBERIAS, PALESTINE, June 5, 1908.

For the last of the six weeks spent in Palestine were reserved two of its places of greatest scenic beauty and historic interest, the Plain of Esdraelon and the Sea of Galilee. Nowhere in the world is there a spot of earth or a sheet of water of equal size hard by each other which so combine physical charm with fascinating and tender association. We spent a day on each. We rode over one and rowed over the other. We visited nearly every point of interest upon them and viewed all their features from so many positions that we think we took mental photographs which will be indelible. Our first view of the Plain of Esdraelon was just before entering Nazareth, and we were astonished as well as delighted. But we had a still better view of it from the hill north of Nazareth. As this was no doubt the spot from which the Savior often beheld it there was a special pleasure and interest in studying it from there.

#### THE PLAIN OF ESDRAELON.

The plain is forty miles long and extends from Mount Carmel on the west to the River Jordan on the east. It varies in width from ten to twenty miles. It is undulating and fertile and almost entirely planted in wheat which was being harvested. Fortunately its beautiful surface has not been desecrated to any great degree by human enterprise or greed. Except that a railroad line runs through it, with one or two modern stations, it is much as it was four thousand years ago. Even the wheat is cultivated with crude plows and oxen and reaped with



*OUR TURKISH GUARD, OUR CAMP AND OUR DRAGOMAN*



sickles as it was then. There are no modern cities, but the sites of the ancient ones are marked by miserable and squalid huts as if to give expression to the glory which has departed from them. No stream of water runs through the valley, but there are frequent fountains which pour forth cold and pure water in abundance, giving life to the thirsty soil and clothing its surface in perennial green. In traveling through Palestine one frequently finds these fountains of water, clear and sparkling, in the midst of arid plains and understands the better the significance of the symbolism of life and purity they are so often made to serve by the Savior and the Psalmist and the prophets. The water is from the melted snows in the mountains and is never failing.

At the west end of the plain lies Mount Carmel and along both sides extend mountain ranges not of the gigantic proportions of the Rocky Mountains, but about two thousand feet in height and purple, hazy or covered with verdure. Near the center of the plain rises Mount Tabor, the most symmetrical mountain in Palestine, as our dragoman described it, looking like a plum pudding, 2,000 feet in height, covered with green grass and trees and with a Catholic monastery and a few ruins upon its summit. From it can be had one of the finest views in Palestine, embracing the Mediterranean on the west, the Sea of Galilee, the Jordan and the Mountains of Hauran and Gilead on the east and many miles to the north and south. To the north in plain view is the snow covered summit of Mount Hermon, the highest mountain in Palestine, generally regarded the Mount of Transfiguration, although there be some who think that event took place on Mount Tabor. Scattered here and there on the mountain sides and also in the valley of Esdraelon may be seen villages, each one of historic interest. In fact you cannot look in any direction that there is not some place which recalls a thrilling event either ancient or modern.

## HISTORIC SPOTS.

The most conspicuous feature is the eastern brow of Mount Carmel, which is the west end of the plain. Upon it stands a Carmelite monastery. This was the place where Elijah called down fire from Heaven upon the sacrifice and in the presence of all Israel put to shame and defeat the four hundred and fifty prophets of Baal and destroyed them. It is in view of all the plain and the feat could have been witnessed by millions. Directly across the plain, twelve miles from Carmel and located upon an elevated point near the mountains, is the site of the ancient city of Jezreel. It will be remembered that Elijah covered this distance on foot in front of the Chariot of Ahab. He was so flushed with pride and excitement after having overwhelmed the Baal prophets and brought rain to the earth that he felt equal to anything. But alas, when he got to Jezreel his leonine spirit forsook him in the presence of a woman. For when Jezebel, the awful queen of Ahab, shook her finger at him and told him that he would the next day be served as the prophets of Baal had been by him, he was so frightened that he ran southward for three hundred miles, never stopping until he reached southern Palestine, where it became necessary for an angel to restore him to a normal condition. Some have been mean enough to say that he was not the only brave man who has similarly surrendered.

## JEZREEL, JEZEBEL, JEHU AND JEHORAM.

If there is one filthier place than another it must be the ancient city of Jezreel, the once proud capital of northern Israel, where dwelt in luxury and reveled in wealth and power Ahab

and Jezebel, the Macbeth and Lady Macbeth of ancient history. The curse of the Almighty pronounced by His prophets of old still rests upon it. We rode through its vile streets, the abode of wretched and half-naked Bedouins, and goats and sheep and donkeys and dogs, all living practically together beneath sheds or in mud houses. From the spot where stood the watch-tower upon its highest point, described in Scripture, we had a magnificent view of the valley and the surrounding mountains. Within a few minutes we obtained a better knowledge of ancient Biblical history than all of our reading of it had afforded. To the west lay Megiddo where was fought the celebrated battle between the Egyptians under Pharaoh Necho and King Josiah as recorded in Second Kings, 23d chapter. To the south was Mount Gilboa, where Saul, after his tempestuous life of failure, fell upon his sword and died, and where his son Jonathan also was slain. Just across the valley stood Little Hermon where were gathered the hosts of Philistines whose formidable and powerful appearance had so frightened the unhappy Saul, deserted by Jehovah, that he sought counsel at night from the witch of Endor. Upon the farther side of the mountain is the village of Endor marking the site of his interview with the female conjurer of familiar spirits the night before he met his unhappy end. Nothing in all history is more uncanny and ghostly than Saul's interview with the spirit of Samuel at Endor the night before his death.

To the east of the city, adjoining and just below it is a plateau of ground, where must have been Naboth's vineyard, upon whose possession Ahab set his avaricious and envious eyes, and which having not the courage to take possession of his more resolute and conscienceless queen took for him after having slain the owner. Still farther east and extending many miles towards the Jor-

dan is yet a broad roadway. It was up this road that the watchman on the tower descried Jehu driving furiously, as he came upon his mission of vengeance from Ramoth-Gilead where he had been anointed King. In imagination we could see King Ahaziah of Judah and King Jehoram of Israel as they sallied forth to meet him, apprehensive, but anxious to appease him. We could imagine his fierce and fatal plunge of his sword into the side of Jehoram and the flinging of the lifeless body into the Naboth vineyards, while the hapless King of Judah fled wounded into the city and thence to Megiddo to die there. We were standing near, probably upon the spot where Jehu stopped upon his entrance to the city when he turned his eyes upward and beheld Jezebel looking from a window, and from which her body by his command was thrown down to be eaten by the dogs. All these and other thrilling events troop up in vivid succession as one stands upon this spot, than which none in all the history of Israel calls up more tragic memories.

#### GIDEON'S FOUNTAIN.

It was only a few miles east of Jezreel and in plain view of that city that Gideon, with his three hundred intrepid followers armed only with pitchers and lamps and trumpets put to flight the hosts of Midian and relieved Israel of its long and terrible oppression. Out of a cave near there gushes what was known then as Herod's well, but is now called Gideon's Fountain. A flood of cold, pure water pours forth refreshing and irrigating the plain for many miles, and near its source flowing over a rocky bottom is a wide, but shallow stream. A man and his wife were wading it as we came to it. It is less than knee deep. We could understand how easy it was for



soldiers without breaking ranks to bring the water to their mouths with their hands and "lap like dogs," as they walked instead of stopping to lie down to drink. The water is not only clear and pure, but full of fish.

## SHUNEM AND NAIN.

Crossing the plain from Gideon's fountain we pass the fountain of Jezreel, whence the city obtained its water. A few miles to the south we reach upon another eminence in the plain, the ancient town of Shunem, surrounded by fruit trees, but squalid and dirty as Jezreel. This is where the prophet Elisha was graciously entertained by a hospitable woman who always kept a guest chamber at his service. It is in plain view of and some ten miles from Carmel. When her son had died from sunstroke it was there that she went in quest of the prophet. Any one who rides across the Plain of Esdraelon in summer as we did can understand how possible it would be to be similarly stricken. We ourselves lay under the shade of a fig tree in Shunem at noonday for several hours to escape its heat. It will also be recalled how that Elisha came in response to her call and restored her son to life, thus everlastingly indicating to all women the virtue and wisdom of hospitality, especially to preachers.

On the south side of Little Hermon some eight or ten miles, and around the mountain from Shunem lies the city of Nain. A Catholic church marks the spot where our Lord is said to have restored the widow's son to life. It is a small village of Arab huts. Hence within a few hours we were upon two spots where the greatest of all miracles had been performed, the restoration of the dead to life, in both cases of sons of widows.

## NAPOLEON'S VICTORY.

In the center of the Plain of Esdraelon in 1799 Napoleon had a great battle with the Turks, defeating 25,000 of the latter with but a small force of 1,500 of his own troops. Thus this little plain has been the scene of many of the most remarkable events, human and superhuman, in the history of the world.

## FROM NAZARETH TO TIBERIAS.

It is about twenty miles eastward from Nazareth to Tiberias upon the Sea of Galilee. There is a fine carriage road through a region nearly all mountainous. A few miles east of Nazareth is passed Cana of Galilee, where Jesus turned the water into wine at a wedding feast. It is a small village in a fertile valley. We are shown the spring from which it is claimed the water was taken. The Roman and Greek Catholics have churches alongside each other, each claiming to be upon the site of the feast, and each having jars which they represent as having held the water which "saw its God and blushed."

Near Tiberias we pass to the right of a not very slightly eminence which is said to be the Mount of Beatitudes, where was delivered the Sermon on the Mount. It is called the Horns of Hattin and commands a fine view of the Sea of Galilee and the surrounding country. It may or may not be the site where the sermon was spoken. The claim is purely traditional.

## LVI.

### THE SEA OF GALILEE AND SYRIA.

BEIRUT, SYRIA, June 13, 1908.

The first view of the Sea of Galilee is disappointing. It is over nine hundred feet below the sea level and the descent to it is abrupt. We had imagined it in a valley with considerable distance between its shores and the mountains. But the latter descend almost precipitously to it upon the east and west. They slope down to it from the north. There are recesses on the shores upon both sides sufficient for cities of smaller size. I remembered to have read in Josephus that in his days there were over two hundred cities around it. This led me to look for a large area adjoining its shores, for the remains of cities and for quite a teeming population. My disappointment was considerable when only one city could be observed, that of Tiberias, while the sea did not seem large enough for but a limited number upon its shores, not a dozen even if every level spot were occupied. Either Josephus was mistaken or he must have included in his estimate all the cities upon the adjacent mountains for many miles around.

#### ITS SIZE, APPEARANCE AND ENVIRONS.

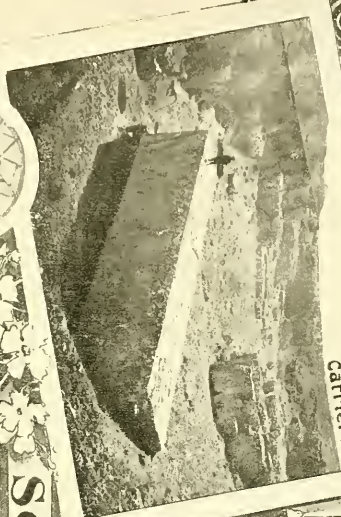
The sea is simply a widening of the River Jordan to six miles for a distance of fourteen miles when it contracts again into its ordinary channel and pursues its course to the Dead Sea. In other words the river broadens until it fills the space between the mountains and forms a lake six by fourteen miles. The water is clear and under certain reflections of the sun from the mountains assumes a beautiful coloring of green or blue. Ordinarily it is calm, but is easily lashed by the winds into turbulence and its

"squalls" come without warning. It is full of fish which are served at the hotels at Tiberias and are of delightful flavor. They are caught by nets as in the days of Christ and most of them are of small size. Of all the great population that once swarmed upon the shores of Galilee, the city of Tiberias and the village of Magdala alone remain. Tiberias contains about 4,000 people, nearly all Jews, and is located about midway of the lake upon the west shore. Its streets are crooked and dirty. The houses have flat tops, and the people sleep upon the roofs. Many of them have straw booths upon their roofs under which the beds are placed. We discovered the wisdom of this method of living after one night's experience. We found the room in which we slept, although the windows were open, so stuffy and close that we could not sleep but an hour or two. The next night we tried the front porch under the open sky and slept the night through without interruption. Besides there is a little sandfly that tortures one so as to render sleep impossible under roof but which the wind blows away upon the outside. Owing to its low elevation it is quite warm at Tiberias when it is cool upon the adjacent mountains.

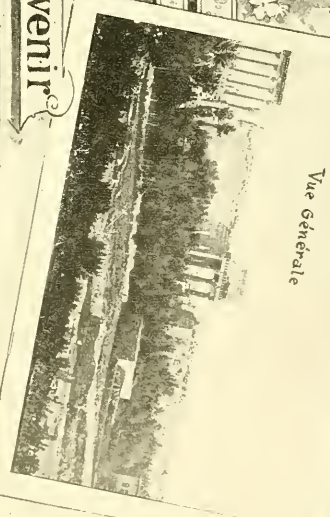
#### PLACES OF BIBLE INTEREST.

With no spot is the name of the Savior more closely associated than with the sea of Galilee. Here He loved to linger with His disciples. Upon its shores the multitudes gathered to listen to His teachings, to witness His miracles, to be healed of diseases, or to be miraculously fed when they were hungry. When driven from His own home at Nazareth upon its shores He had His home. Upon its waters He walked and when they were angry He stilled them, and at His command they yielded its fishes to the nets of His apostles. There was something about the sequestered and

En vente chez Charlier-Bézis, Beyrouth (Syrie)

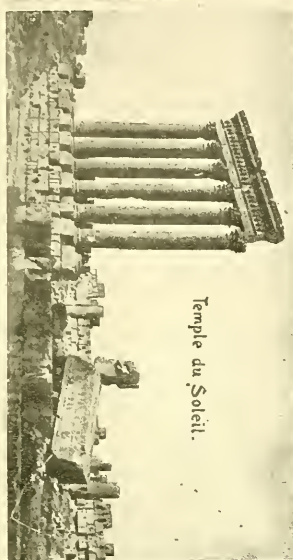


Carrière.



Vue Générale

Souvenir



Temple du Soleil.

de Baalbek



quiet retreat in the mountains of this beautiful lake, of its gentle winds and its blue and placid surface that found a responsive sympathy in the heart and life of the tender Christ. Every spot upon it therefore possesses an interest and a charm. Of these there is not one which so engages the visitor as Capernaum. Here is where He lived and taught and wrought most of His miracles. Its site is believed to have been reliably fixed at the northern end of the lake about midway between the eastern and western shores. Within the past two years a beautiful synagogue has been exhumed. It is of handsome architecture evidently erected during the Roman period, and by some supposed to be the one built by the Centurion mentioned in the seventh chapter of Luke. It is 60x50 feet and has three entrances. There is a portico in front 10x60 feet. Two rows of pillars 39 inches in diameter inclose the auditorium which is 35x65 feet. The pillars are ten feet from the walls. Outside of them and entirely around the auditorium is a corridor. The pillars are adorned with Corinthian and Doric capitals. The building has been excavated by the Franciscan monks of the Roman Catholic church who intend to re-erect and restore it according to its original plan. Apparently Capernaum was a very small place. But recently ruins have been discovered to the north of it which indicate the size to be greater than it has been hitherto regarded. The site of the city is the finest on the lake, commanding a full view of all parts of it and being at the terminus of a gentle slope from the mountain.

## BETHSAIDA, CHORAZIN, MAGDALA.

The site of Bethsaida is in some doubt. But modern scholars are inclined to fix it to the west of Capernaum upon the shore of the lake where some ruins have been discovered. Bethsaida



Julius is thought to have been a distinct city and is located to the east of the Jordan at the northeast corner of the lake. Near the latter place is thought to be the spot where were fed the five thousand, although there are many who incline to the view that the site was near the northwest corner of the lake. The site of Chorazin has been determined to be several miles north of that of Capernaum. There are the ruins there of a synagogue of black marble. Fortunately, none of these sacred sites have been occupied for commercial purposes, but have been left free for future exploration. Whatever may be the objections held by those of differing views to the Roman Catholics it can be said to their credit that they have carefully protected these sites all over Palestine, and have expended much labor and money in exploring them. The fact that Palestine presents no special inducements to the wealth-seekers, has no mineral and but little agricultural or manufacturing possibilities also is a providential provision which has arrested the hand of enterprise from despoiling and obliterating places which must be of tender sacredness to Christians. While the worship of material things and places is a danger which may come to those whose religion is based largely upon ignorance or superstitions, there can be only an exaltation of sentiment and deepening of spiritual attachment in a close and conscious acquaintance with those places which we know the founder of our faith hallowed by His presence.

#### RAILROADS IN SYRIA.

After six weeks' stay in Palestine in which we had traveled over six hundred miles over the country, nearly two-thirds of which had been by horseback, we took the train at the southern shore of the sea of Galilee, several miles south of Tiberias for our

final journey through Syria to embarkation from Beirut a week later. The railroad runs from Haifa upon the west coast to Damascus, a distance of three hundred miles, or rather it taps east of the Jordan a line twelve hundred miles in length which the Turkish government is building from Damascus to Mecca. The branch through Palestine has been built about eight years, but has been carrying passengers only three years. The main line has a fine roadbed and is well equipped and managed. It runs from Damascus to Beirut. There is a branch between the two latter places to Aleppo which is not far from ancient Palmyra. An extension of this branch to Bagdad is being agitated. It will probably be built within five years. This will then make it possible to reach ancient Babylon by rail, possibly without changing cars from Paris, France. The trip from Tiberias is for many miles up the Yarmuk river, a dashing mountain stream lined with oleanders in full bloom. Afterwards it reaches a broad plateau occupied with great wheat fields, while much of the journey is through a tenantless desert.

#### DAMASCUS.

In our travels around we have come across several cities which claim the honor of being the oldest in the world. But if the earliest city mentioned in the Bible entitles one of them to precedence the palm must be given to Damascus, for in the second verse of the fifteenth chapter of Genesis we find distinct reference made to Damascus as the city where Abraham refers to his steward, Eliezer, as being a resident. Frequently is it referred to in both the Old and New Testaments down to the time when it received its greatest fame as being the scene of Paul's conversion to Christianity. Although always the most important

commercial point in the vast region surrounding it seldom if ever was it destroyed in war. It is now in most of its characteristics as it has been from the days of Abraham. Its buildings, its shops and bazars, its methods of trade and its people have changed but little. There are few cities which have so retained ancient conditions or where they can be studied in such life-like distinctness.

#### POPULATION, LOCATION AND APPEARANCE.

Its present population is about 200,000. Most of its streets are wide. It has electric light and tramways, but no sidewalks, and so far as we have observed is the filthiest city in the world, as well as the most perilous to wayfarers. Both man and beast have equal liberty of the streets which are rarely if ever cleaned, although the beautiful Arbana river dashes its swift mountain current of pure water through the heart of the city. Nowhere have we seen such reckless driving or riding or jostling by pedestrians. He who perambulates the streets takes his life in his hands. The horses are the finest we have seen anywhere except in Manila and Cairo, and are ridden and driven furiously. The babel of noise, of shouting and yelling is almost unbearable. The business section is divided into quarters, each one being for certain branches of business. The finest rugs and carpets in the world are to be found here, and some of the most beautiful brass. Everything is made by hand, labor saving machinery being scarce, but the prices paid for labor is higher than in any Oriental city we have been. The population is nearly all Mohammedan, there being three hundred mosques, the largest of which is one of the finest in the world. The city lies in a beautiful valley, covered with green trees, the result of irrigation from the Arbana and Pharpar rivers, those of which Naaman boasted, and the

view from the neighboring mountain is magnificent, so much so that it is related of Mahomet that having beheld it he declared he would not visit the city for fear it would dissatisfy him with Paradise. The climate is cooler than in Palestine, and much sought by invalids. Practically every variety of fruit and vegetables, as well as all kinds of flowers are grown while the trees are vocal with the songs of birds. Nowhere have we seen purer water, sweeter flowers, balmier air, brighter sunshine, more delicious fruit or in matters of trade smarter people.

#### SOME ATTRACTIONS.

Nothing is more interesting than a visit to some of the private homes and to study the magnificence of their architecture and the luxuriance of their living. The handicraft of Damascus is famed the world over, and it has been turned to profitable account by many shrewd tradesmen, who have become princely in wealth.

The street called "Straight" is here now as in the days of Paul, but is much narrower, and it is arched over as are many streets.

The house in which Naaman the Syrian lived is to be seen as is also the place where St. Paul was let down over the wall by the disciples and the house of Ananias where he was brought after his conversion.

#### BAALBECK.

From Damascus we journeyed by rail to Baalbeck where are to be found the splendid ruins of the temple of Jupiter and the Sun, hardly surpassed by any in the world. It covers an area of eleven acres, has single stones of the enormous length of seventy feet and width of fourteen, columns of beautiful architec-

ture sixty feet long in great quantity. The temple was built in the first three centuries after Christ and is modeled after Solomon's and Herod's temple. It was built by the Romans, but construction was stopped by Constantine. It was used by the Arabs for several centuries as a fortress and was destroyed by both Moslems and Christians. There are also temples of Bacchus and Venus adjoining.

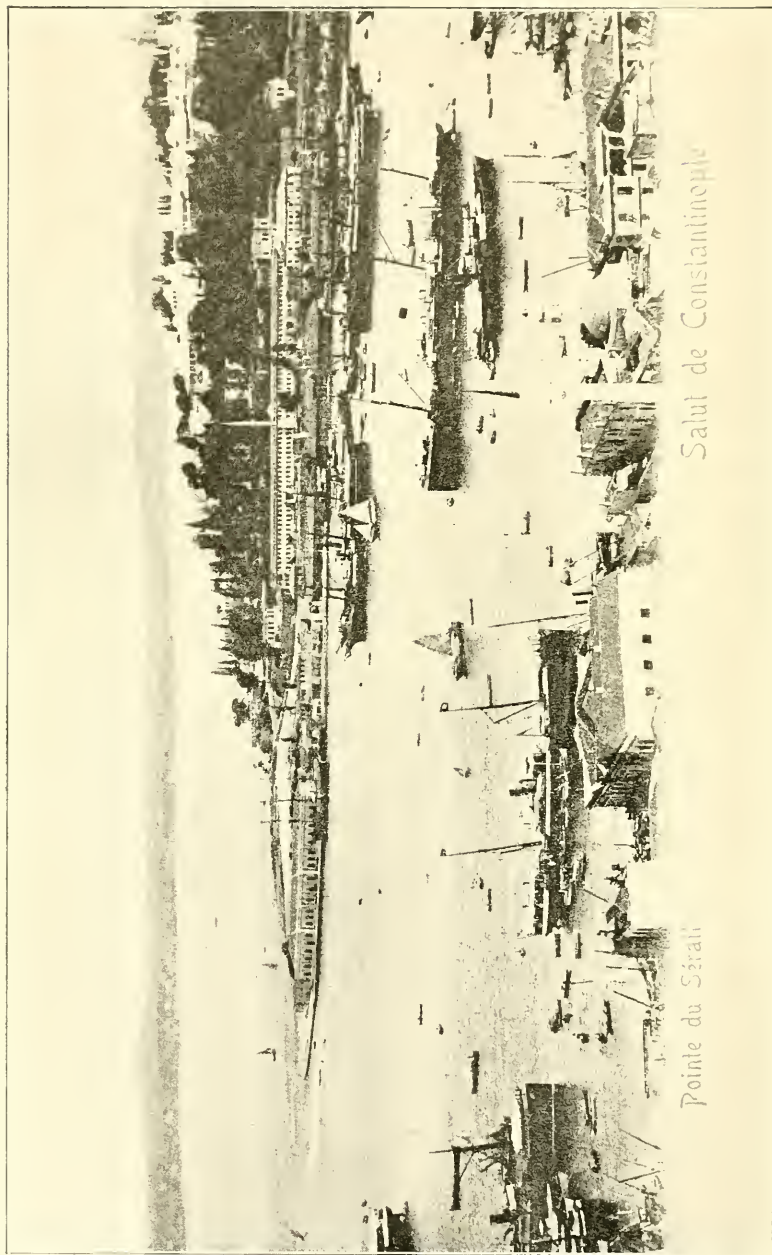
FROM BAALBECK TO BEIRUT.

The railroad trip from Baalbeck to Beirut will compare in beauty of scenery favorably to that in Switzerland, which it much resembles. As we near Beirut we are astonished at the sublimity of the mountain scenery and the prodigal profusion of newly improved villages which are scattered over the mountains as if emptied from a pepperbox. They are in such contrast with the plain and crude villages of mud and stone we have seen in Palestine and elsewhere that we inquire the reason, and are informed that both the ideas and money which constructed them came from America where it is said over a hundred thousand Syrians have gone in late years. Many have returned with wealth which they are thus expending in their native land.

Beirut is a flourishing seaport city of over 130,000. There is here located what is claimed to be the largest mission Protestant college in the world. It is 42 years old, has 878 students, 68 instructors, seven departments, fifteen splendid buildings, covers 40 acres of ground and has a library of 20,000 volumes. It is operated by the Presbyterian church of America, and was largely founded by the late W. E. Dodge and Morris K. Jesup.

From this place we take ship for Constantinople. Thence we go to Athens, whence after a week's stay we hope to sail for "home, sweet home," as rapidly as the boats and the trains will carry us.





Pointe du Sérail

Salut de Constantinople

CONSTANTINOPLE



**TURKEY AND GREECE.**



LVII.

THE TURK, HIS COUNTRY AND HIS RULER.

CONSTANTINOPLE, June 20, 1908.

I must speak a word for the unspeakable Turk. The term "unspeakable" as applied to him is intended to mean intensely unbearable or inexpressibly outrageous. I have spent eight weeks and traveled some two thousand miles in his dominions. I have encountered him in his capacity as soldier, civil official, business man, farmer, day laborer, have come in contact with him by the thousand and even million and have studied him from many viewpoints. Besides I have talked with Americans, officials and others, who have had dealings with him, in fact have had transactions to some extent with him myself. I think I am prepared to pass just judgment upon him. And that judgment does not corroborate the term "unspeakable." So far as I can estimate him he is no worse than other Orientals. In some respects he is better. He is more respectable in his personal life than the Japanese or Chinese or the inhabitants of India. He wears clothes all over his body and is decent and modest. With the exception of the red fez he dresses as do Europeans or Americans. In his habits and his home and in the streets of his large cities like Smyrna and Constantinople he is cleaner than are any of the other Asiatics. He is sober, industrious and honest. His Mohammedan religion requires him to be temperate. He works perpetually. So far as can be judged he is reliable in matters of trade. He is not a good business man and he spends money prodigally but will pay his debts if he can.

## OFFICIALLY CORRUPT.

The official service of the country is corrupt. It is wretchedly organized. There is no legislative body, hence no well formulated laws, and no definite imposition of responsibility. Small salaries are paid, and every official understands that he is at liberty, is expected to make all he can out of his job. Taxation is excessive, not upon business, but upon land and products of the soil. This keeps the farming population poor and necessarily all other branches of business suffer. On account of the inefficient and dishonest civil service the country is in debt and has a hard time getting along.

## THE SULTAN.

More than in any nation of equal size the governmental power centers in the monarch. Even the Empress Dowager of China has not such absolute authority. For she relies upon her ministers and has but nominal control of the weakly confederated provinces of her kingdom. But in Turkey the Sultan both makes and executes the laws. It is true that he has a council of ministers, who are supposed to aid him, but with him the situation is reversed from that in China, for the ministers are nominal and he is the real thing. It is said that he is more and more taking all the reins into his own hands, while his ministers are largely figureheads. No other monarch in the world is said to have such personal supervision of all the details of his government. The popular idea that he is a self-indulgent, indolent, incapable weakling who divides his time between the harem and the luxuries of his court is an error. He is the hardest worked sovereign in the world and in many respects the cleverest. His knowledge of contemporaneous affairs is said to be something remarkable. He

not only rules over Turkey in Europe, containing 66,000 square miles and six million population, but Turkey in Asia covering 680,000 square miles and his possessions in Africa, embracing 399,000 square miles, having in all a population of 25,000,000. He personally appoints every official, big and little, for all this vast kingdom, settles many of their disputes, and is the responsible source of the laws which govern them. Every dollar of money expended for the government is by his direction. He is the head of the army and navy and the final authority of his government in all international affairs. Besides having direct control over all these vast possessions he has a suzerainty over Bulgaria, Bosnia, Herzegovina, Crete, Cyprus, Samos and Egypt. That one man in these modern days of personal liberty and independence should have such enormous power seems almost incredible. To exercise it he must be no ordinary person. His familiarity with the details of all the petty offices and officials of his vast possessions is remarkable. He is said to be well posted in world-wide affairs.

#### HIS PERSONAL LIFE.

The personality of no ruler in the world is veiled in such mystery or invested with such interest. Right in Constantinople there is nearly as much ignorance concerning him as there is anywhere. But few ever see him, or know anything of his personal habits. Hence, there are all sorts of wild and reckless stories about him. He is reported to have a thousand wives, to poison people at his table, and to direct the clandestine murder or exile of officials who have incurred his enmity. There are many like stories. None of them are true. He never leaves his palace grounds except to attend services at the Mohammedan mosque on Friday, where a large body of his troops is called out to guard him as he rides

for five or ten minutes to the mosque. Two years ago a bomb was thrown at his carriage. Since that time he has kept himself in strict seclusion and has adopted extraordinary methods for his protection. Few ever see him. He is sixty-six years of age, and has been upon the throne thirty-two years. He is stoutly built, about five feet six inches in height, is quite magnetic in manner, is an attentive listener, enjoys a good story, and will slap a man whom he likes upon the back. He eats on gold plates and with his fingers when no foreigners are around, helping himself out of a big dish in the center of the table. He has one or two favorite wives who live with him in his palace. How many other wives he has no one seems to know. The number is probably much exaggerated. We were shown a long palace on the Bosphorus, the home of the former Sultan, which we were told was the harem, or the abode of the present Sultan's wives. The building is big enough to hold several hundred. But although it was a hot day the windows were down and there was no sign of life about it. If there were any women in it they did not care for fresh air or were in cold storage and were without that presumably indispensable feminine attribute, curiosity. He is said to take a new wife every year. She is selected by his mother and the wedding is a solemn religious ceremony. We are inclined to think the Sultan is too old and busy to bother himself with all the hundreds of wives he is charged with.

#### HIS PALACE AND HIS FANCIES.

The palace is situated in the midst of a large grove of many acres upon a high hill in Constantinople overlooking the Bosphorus. It has walks and fountains and flowers and lakes with electric launches and is a kind of dream or paradise so to speak.

It is surrounded by a high wall. There is also said to be a theater, one or two manufactories and a kind of little world within itself inside the palace grounds. The palace is lighted with electric light, and there are stored within it twelve automobiles. But the Sultan will not allow electric light, automobiles or telephones in the city of Constantinople. Why he forbids them is not known, unless he fears they might in some way provide facilities for his assassination. There is much discontent and murmuring against him on account of these foolish prohibitions.

FROM BEIRUT TO CONSTANTINOPLE.

We had four days' delightful sail along the shores of Asia Minor from Beirut to Constantinople. The route was almost the same as that taken by St. Paul upon his missionary journeys. There is much along it to recall the great apostle and his wonderful achievement in carrying the gospel to the Gentiles. We passed not far from Tarsus, where he was born, and parallel and but a short distance from the tour he made when he organized the seven churches of Asia. We almost touched the isle of Cyprus, where he began his ministry, and was probably renamed. At the isle of Samos, where we lay nearly a whole day, we were nearly in sight of Ephesus, which to our deep regret we could not visit. Extensive excavations have recently been made there, revealing the great theater where Paul faced his accusers and some remains of the Temple of Diana, besides many other buildings which illustrate the wonderful architecture of that period.

At Samos, there had been but two weeks hitherto a violent rebellion, in which many shots had been fired and some people killed, and it was not regarded safe to venture far from the ship. We also passed within sight of the isle of Patmos, where John



had his wonderful vision, but we could not stop there. The scenery along the shore is mountainous. Smyrna at the west end of Asia Minor is a city of over 300,000. We spent a day visiting it and were struck with its modern appearance and commercial prosperity. We visited the tomb of Polycarp, the site of the ancient Roman theater in which he was slain and saw the finest aqueducts of the Roman period we have observed anywhere. There are excellent American schools for boys and girls. The International College for boys is under the control of an American board located at Boston. It is non-sectarian, but Christian. It was founded in 1903, and has 336 students and twenty-four teachers. It has a good building, a fine course of study and is evidently doing excellent work. Many European and American colleges are being established in Turkey. Western learning is taking hold.

#### THE WATERWAYS TO CONSTANTINOPLE.

After passing Smyrna we cross the Aegean Sea, and then enter the Dardanelles, a long narrow strait, which connects the Aegean with the sea of Marmora. Mountains clothed in green, dotted with occasional villages rise upon either side. We are reminded that we are not far from the site of ancient Troy. Something about the blue and placid waters and the adjacent mountains suggests the many scenes of classic days which were enacted upon their surface. After crossing the sea of Marmora we reach at the port of Constantinople, the bay of the Bosphorus about twenty miles long and six miles wide and which connects the sea of Marmora with the Black Sea.

## CONSTANTINOPLE.

No city in the world, so far as we know, has a so attractive waterfront as Constantinople. As it lies upon the adjacent mountains for some twenty miles along the beautiful Bosphorus, its numberless mosque domes and minarets, its palaces and public buildings and its vast area of business houses and residences, and its thousands of ships in its capacious harbor, it presents a scene of inspiring beauty and splendid proportions which enthrall the beholder and photograph themselves upon his memory. It has a population of over a million, has street cars, crowded ferry boats, continually swarming its harbors, streets thronged with people, bazars and shops and stores, bustling business and all the aspects of a great city. It is the busiest and most up-to-date city we have seen in the Orient. If the Sultan would let it do so it would rival Paris and London.

It has good streets and many large four to six story buildings. Evidently it is doing a large trade. Its population is mostly Turk and Mohammedan, although there are many of all other nationalities, and the community is cosmopolitan. About the city there is the atmosphere of prosperity. There are not many beggars upon the streets and most of the people move about as if they had ideas and purposes in their heads. The most offensive sight is that of the dogs which lie asleep by the hundred along the streets, and let you stumble over them without awakening. They are city scavengers and have been fixtures and landmarks for ages. The horses are the largest and finest we have seen anywhere. They are from Hungary and are unusually large, finely proportioned and of active movement. They are the only horses we have seen which we regard superior to American horses.

## MOHAMMEDAN MOSQUES—HOWLING DERVISHES.

The most attractive buildings and the chief institutions of the city are the Mohammedan mosques. They are very numerous and the architecture of some of them is fine, that of St. Sophia being the most noteworthy. Many of them are ancient. The Mohammedans religiously are an improvement upon the Buddhists or Hindus, for they are not idolators and they believe in one God. But they are narrow, fanatical and ignorant and their worst practice is that of polygamy and concubinage and the depreciation of woman. But they are showing evidences of improvement in their treatment of women and also in a more favorable attitude to education.

There are various sects among Mohammedans as among Christians, but the most extreme one is that of the Howling or Whirling Dervishes. They hold a service every Friday. We attended one of them. They sing plaintive songs and go on somewhat as negroes did in the old days at camp meetings. Some of them sat on the ground singing in a frantic, wailing manner, and rocking themselves to and fro. Some ten or twelve stood in line, caught hold of each other's hands and swayed their bodies backward and forward, grunting as I have heard negroes, when wielding an axe. They kept this up until perspiration poured from them and they became so excited that they would leap up and shout and throw themselves into all sorts of contortions. One of them, a big negro, black as tar, colonel of a Turkish regiment, broke loose from the line, gave a yell and butted his head against a post. The crowd thought he had gone crazy and started a stampede. But the blow seemed to daze him and he sat down.

Several lay down and the priest walked on them. Among them was a child about ten years old. This ceremony is thought to re-

lieve them of both physical and spiritual ills. In some localities they cut themselves with knives and have been known to kill themselves. A gentleman told me that but recently he attended one of their performances in which they lacerated themselves terribly, and one man apparently, if not actually, ran a sword into his stomach. The Sultan has forbidden this sort of thing in Constantinople. Another favorite practice is to whirl around for hours until they fall from exhaustion.

#### NATIONAL MUSEUM.

The National Museum at Constantinople has one of the finest collections of ancient statuary and architecture to be found anywhere. Much of it is from Palestine, the most notable being from Sidon. There is shown in perfect state a reputed sarcophagus of Alexander the Great. It is a wonderful piece of work, but while it may have been made for him it is not probable that his body ever occupied it. The remains of ancient art in the museum indicate a high order of civilization in Palestine about the time and previous to the Christian era.

#### ITS NEEDS.

A representative government, education and Christianity. These are the three needs of Turkey. She is ready for them all and waiting. No nation is in riper condition for them. As soon as she has them, as she will before many years, she will take her place with the great nations of the world.

Since the above was written the people have risen and demanded constitutional government which the Sultan has conditionally granted them. Later still he has been deposed. The time cannot be far distant before the governmental conditions of a people so enterprising and intelligent must be improved.

## LVIII.

### GREECE.

ATHENS, GREECE, June 25, 1908.

Classic Greece! You begin to feel the influence of her history and her presence even before you land upon her shores. There is something about the blue and placid waters of the Aegean Sea, and the vari-colored mountains which line her shores and are reflected in her depths, something about the gentle tremulous atmosphere whose purple veil hangs with graceful charm over all the adjacent scenery, something in the ruins of ancient temples, the melancholy columns, which stand like sentinels upon the mountains to tell the story of her vanished glory, there is that in all these to remind us that we are nearing the little island which has contributed more to literature, to heroism, to jurisprudence, to philosophy and to art than has any other country in the history of the world. Like Palestine, the events which will ever make its name glorious, are twenty centuries ago, and the memorials of them as wrought by human hands have either crumbled, or are buried, or faded, or broken. But like the Holy Land its mountains and valleys, its lakes and rivers and ocean are there now as then and in their marvelous beauty express a truth as wide and as old as the human race. That truth is that the highest achievements of genius, the loftiest expressions of human thought or character, or virtue, or of divine revelation have ever had congenial setting or inspiration in the beauty and majesty of the natural scenery which surrounded them. As in Palestine so in Greece no one can review its charming scenery, its mountains and valleys, and waters, without feeling that it was a fitting theater for the events which have made it glorious, and is the deserving

birthplace of the many remarkable men whose names were to be household words to all ages.

#### ITS SIZE, APPEARANCE AND GOVERNMENT.

Greece covers but 22,000 square miles, one-third the area of the State of Missouri, and has a population of but little over two millions, most of it native. The larger part of the country is mountainous and uninhabitable. But the valleys are very fertile and beautiful. The country is well watered both by the inlets from the ocean which wind in and out, and by numerous springs and rivers and lakes. Olives, grapes, lemons, oranges, all the fruits of the latitude and all the vegetables are produced in abundance. We have seen more Indian corn growing in Greece than in any country since we left America. Farming is a fairly profitable business.

The country is well supplied with railroads, and its insular position makes it accessible to the ocean from all directions. The people in all avocations bear the indications of prosperity.

There is a nominal king. The government is fully as democratic as that of England. The parliament is elected by the people, and has practically supreme authority. A cabinet of ministers manages the different executive branches successfully. Governmental affairs are apparently in a healthful condition, more so than in Turkey. There is an efficient judicial system.

There is a fair system of schools, better than in most Oriental countries, that is if this may be called Oriental. In Athens is a university and many high schools and academies may be found throughout the kingdom. The people have an air of intelligence. They dress as do Americans, and look not unlike all the Latin races.

In religion most of those who belong to any church are Greek orthodox. There are no Mohammedans, and not many Catholics, and still fewer Protestants. Many are free thinkers. The morals of the people are not bad. There is no polygamy as in Turkey and but little intemperance.

#### ATHENS.

As of old, Athens is the capital and the dominating element in the kingdom. It contains about 200,000 people and is the cleanest and best paved city we have seen. The streets are broad and of asphalt and the sidewalks of granitoid. It does not have the little bazars and shops as in Constantinople and Damascus, but large well arranged stores and offices and banks and looks in most respects like an up-to-date American city. Its hotels are provided with elevators and electric lights and are well managed. A beautiful park is near the center of the city in which the people gather by the thousands in the evenings and a band plays excellent music until midnight. It has been quite hot during our stay here, so much so as to make it unsafe to go out of doors in the middle of the day. Between 10 a. m. and 3:30 p. m. many of the principal business houses close, and at night the people seek the parks to get cool. No better dressed, or more intelligently appearing people are to be found anywhere than are those who gather around the little tables in the parks and take refreshments in the evenings and listen to the music.

Viewed from the ocean Athens seems to be in a valley. Much of it is. But in the valley are many eminences over which the city straggles, and viewed from these high points it presents an attractive appearance. The background of the mountains and the blue ocean as a perspective combine to make one of the most



beautiful settings for a city to be seen anywhere in the world. The ancients had an eye for the picturesque and artistic even in the location of their cities.

The presence of Mount Pentilicus, the mountain of marble, and other similar quarries, apparently as exhaustless now as twenty-five centuries ago, and the abiding influence of their ancestors, have led the people to adopt the ancient models in the architecture of their buildings, many of which are classic and aesthetic.

#### HISTORIC MEMORIES.

The absorbing element of interest in Athens is its past. As soon as one's foot touches its soil there rush upon him the memories of what he has read of the wonderful events and yet more wonderful men that have made its history illustrious. Here was the birthplace of much that has contributed to the civilization of all succeeding time. Here Plato and Socrates and Aristotle and their associates taught their systems of philosophy which have fed the thought of every age. Here Praxiteles and Phidias and their cotemporaries wrought their matchless works of art which have been the admiration and the models of all who have followed. Here Demosthenes delivered orations that have thrilled succeeding ages. Here St. Paul preached the unknown God to idolatrous Athenians on Mars Hill. Here Alcibiades and Themistocles and Pericles and Sophocles and Euripides and others too numerous to mention gave their names to undying fame. The achievements of its heroes, its philosophers, its poets, its painters, its statesmen, all are recalled, and render historic every spot within its precincts. For, while the old Athens of their day has nearly all been swept away, the site is still there, the mountains and rocks and valleys and memorials in imperishable marble of the

work they did. We walked upon the spot where stood the academy in whose groves Plato taught. We stood upon the stone on Penyx hill where Demosthenes stirred the hearts and heads of the people with his rapturous oratory. We were upon Mars Hill where Paul spoke his fearless words right under the shadow of the Acropolis and in view of all the splendid temples dedicated to heathenism. There still stand the Hill of the Muses and the Hill of the Nymphs and Mount Pentilicus as they did when Homer lived and there is the Acropolis, now as then the central figure of the city, upon which stands the partially dismantled Parthenon, the architectural wonder of all ages from the days of Pericles over three hundred years before Christ, until the present time. No one who has a head or a heart and who has been even an ordinary reader of history can visit these spots without being thrilled by the memories which they evoke.

#### MEMORIALS IN MARBLE.

The most conspicuous and interesting relic of the past in Athens is the Parthenon. It stands upon the Acropolis, a hill about 600 or 800 feet high which rises abruptly out of the midst of the city. Every student of Grecian history has seen pictures of it, and is familiar with its appearance and its history. It is ninety-five feet in width by two hundred and twenty-five feet in length and is probably forty feet in height. It was erected during the reign of Pericles as a temple of worship to the goddess Athenae or Minerva, the goddess of wisdom. It is surrounded by a colonnade of fluted marble columns, and inside stood a marble statue of the goddess, concealed from the public in a chamber corresponding to the Holy of Holies in the Jewish temple built by Solomon. There is also an outer room, corresponding to the Holy

Place in the Jewish temple, and also a porch. On the outside stood an altar of sacrifice. I observed in the heathen temples in China and Syria that they all followed the same plan of construction and worship as did the Israelites.

The Parthenon is simple, massive, symmetrical. Its pillars all lean slightly and are a shade convex for architectural effect. There is also a slight convexity of the floors which support them. The frieze by Phidias is conceded to be unsurpassed in sculptural art. It is said that no architect has ever been able to duplicate the structure in accuracy and delicacy of work. It was partially blown up several centuries ago. But the walls are still standing as are most of the columns. There is upon the Acropolis a museum filled with interesting relics and souvenirs from the Parthenon. The hill has several structures of classic mould and beauty.

Under and imbedded in the hill of the Acropolis are the ruins of the ancient temple of Dionysius of Eleutherai where were enacted the tragedies of Sophocles and others. The ampitheater which is of marble and is in good state of preservation, held 14,000 people. The space occupied by the parquet of a modern theater was used for the place of sacrifice, a ceremony which then accompanied histrionic exhibitions. There was no roof above it. The proscenium now destroyed is said to have been a beautiful work of art.

The arch of Hadrian, the temple of Vulcan and a few columns of the great Temple of Zeus or Jupiter constitute about all the remaining striking specimens of ancient architecture to be found in Athens.

## STADIUM AND MUSEUM.

One of the sights of modern Athens is its magnificent stone stadium erected several years ago and in which the international Olympian games were played in 1906. It will hold 50,000 people and is probably the largest auditorium in the world. It is elliptical in shape, and every seat has a fine view of the arena.

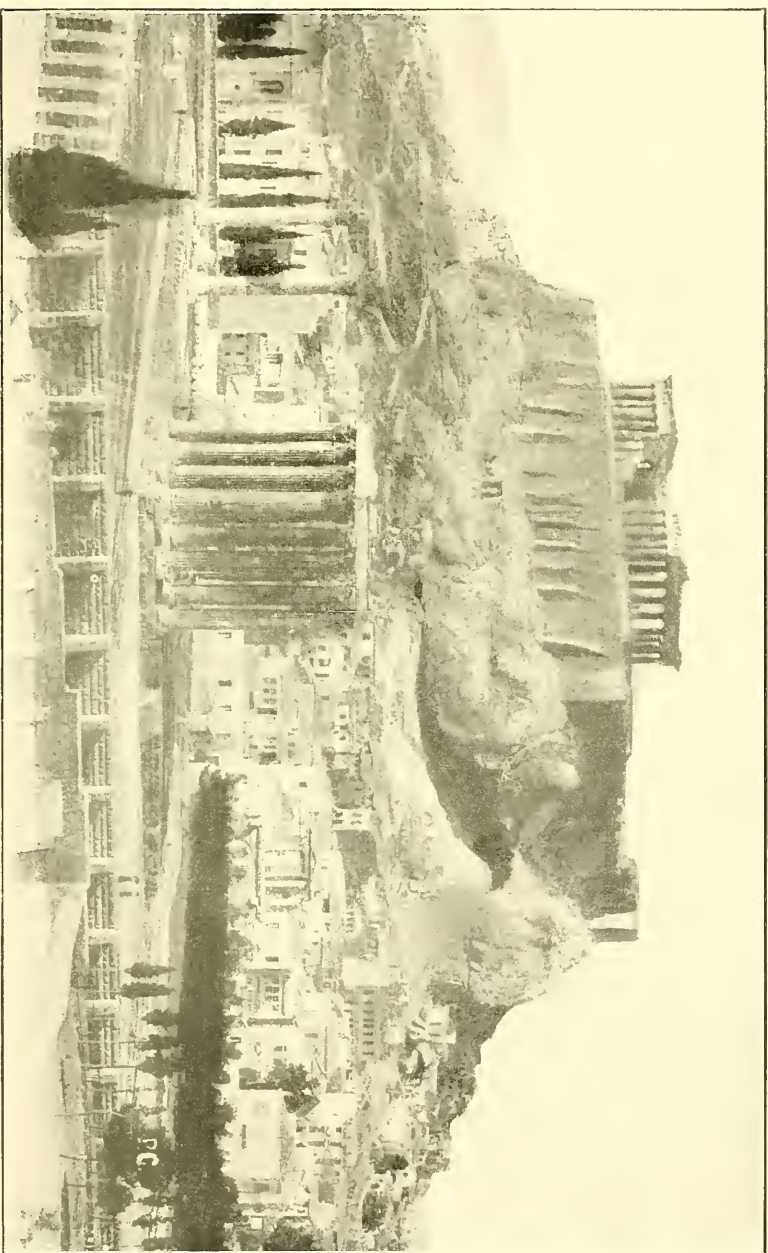
The national museum at Athens is disappointing. While it contains many objects of interest, notably the sarcophagi of the period of Agamemnon and their contents exhumed by the late Prof. Schlieman it is much inferior to the museum at Cairo or at Constantinople and one is surprised not to find more where the resources are so abundant.

## CORINTH.

Next to Athens the most interesting spot in Greece is Ancient Corinth. It is reached by train after three hours' ride along the beautiful gulfs of Salamis and Salonica. At Salamis is passed the site of the battlefield where Xerxes met his disastrous defeat by the Greeks and there is shown the spot where he stood and directed the movements of his army.

A ship canal connects the gulfs of Salonica and Corinth and is about four miles in length. At its southern end stands new Corinth. Four miles farther, overlooking the blue waters of the lovely ancient harbor is the site of old Corinth. It is upon an eminence and a plain a mile or two in width lies between it and the bay. This space was probably formerly covered either by the city or the waters of the bay.

The city is being excavated by the American School of Archaeology and many important discoveries have been made. The temple of Apollo has been fully revealed, but only the floors and



*THE ACROPOLIS AT ATHENS—Showing The Parthenon On the Summit*





porticoes are standing. A Jewish synagogue, believed to be the one in which St. Paul preached, has been found. A spring gushes from the mountain side which was represented to us as the Pierian spring, from which the ancients drank to imbibe wisdom. We ourselves felt badly in need of that article and would have drunk from it had its waters not been so uncleanly.

We wanted to visit Olympus and Delphi and Mycenae and Sparta and Thermopylae and Marathon, in fact the whole island, for it is filled with historic interest, but the heat was terrible and we were compelled to leave.

#### A ROYAL PALACE AND TRAGEDY.

Upon our sail from Patras, near which it is claimed the body of Byron is buried, we stopped the part of one day at the island of Corfu and visited the summer palace of Kaiser Wilhelm of Germany. It is a charming place, erected on a cliff overlooking the beautiful waters of the Ionian sea. It has delightful gardens and grounds filled with classical statuary and fruits and flowers. The house itself contains seventy-five rooms, is beautifully furnished, and elaborately hung with costly paintings. It was built by the late Empress of Austria who was assassinated in Switzerland some sixteen years ago. It is said to have cost a million and a half dollars. The Kaiser bought it for \$200,000. He spent a month there during the last spring. The history of the poor empress who found health from consumption here to be afterward murdered is one of the most pathetic tragedies in modern royal life. An additional sorrow is said to have been that she was coldly treated by her husband and that her life was one of neglect and suffering. In wandering through the beautiful grounds and inside the splendid rooms and corridors of this gloriously located



and ideally constructed and furnished palace, where there is apparently everything to please the eye and gratify the taste, one can but feel how little at last do all these count as against health and happiness and life. We passed on our way the huts of several humble peasants, earning their bread by hard and honest work. We thought how much happier their lots were than that of the empress with all her wealth and royalty who owned the castle on the hill, but whose life was spent in shadow and finally went out at the hands of an assassin. It is a relentless truth difficult to learn that happiness comes not with fame and wealth but that these often bring sorrow in their train. It is rarely been more vividly illustrated than in the unhappy life and terrible death of the Empress of Austria.

### **AUTHOR'S NOTE.**

The heat became so intense during our visit to Greece that we determined to hasten our return. We did not tarry but a few days in Europe, but we had previously, in the year 1904, visited that country, spending several months in England, Germany, Switzerland and Italy. During that tour several letters were written by a member of our party, Edwin Sydney Stephens, son of the author. These letters are herewith inserted, thus making the story of the tour around the world complete. His name is appended to the letters which he wrote.



## LIX.

### ROME, POMPEII AND VESUVIUS

Rome of to-day is a city ancient, mediaeval and modern, with a population of five hundred thousand. It is a city of churches, ruins and water fountains, representing the civilization of over two thousand years. It has preserved something from every stage of its growth.

#### ANCIENT ROME.

The real, the great Rome contained a population of three million people. It was the mainspring of the greatest empire ever known to the world. From it the clock work of all the nations was propelled and regulated. Not only this, but in the later years of the empire Rome was the seat of the greatest luxury yet known to man.

#### THE FORUM.

There are many relics of those days which give us a very good idea of what the civilization was. The heart of the Roman Empire throbbed in the Forum. It contained the senate, the market, the courts, and was the gathering place of all the citizens. In short it was the center of Roman life. The building now is, of course, in ruins. Only a few columns, together with the paving remain. The entire area must have been about 250,000 square feet. This embraced the market place, the rostrum, several temples and the triumphal arch of Septimus Severus. The whole building was built of marble and with its magnificent architecture, parts of which are still standing, it must have been a beautiful

structure. It was in the Forum that Cicero delivered his famous orations. The palace of Caesar stands just behind the Forum and enough of it remains to show the luxury and opulence of those ancient emperors.

#### THE COLISEUM.

The Forum was the business place and political center of the Romans; the Coliseum was one of their playgrounds—they had many. This structure was built of stone and bricks, covered over with marble and bronze. The shape was circular and the tiers of seats rose to a height of eighty feet. The seating capacity was fifty thousand.

The Coliseum was used chiefly for gladiatorial combats. When contests between man and man ceased to amuse the spectators they introduced wild beasts. The places where they were confined are still preserved. They stood convenient to the arena, so that the animals could be turned in upon their victims with great ease. It is needless to mention the awful carnage that took place in this place, as it is too well known. The Coliseum was erected by the labor of Jews who had been made prisoners by the Romans. It was not the scene of the burning of the Christians by Nero, as is suggested by certain novels. This could not have been so, for it was not built until after the death of Nero.

#### THE CIRCUSES AND BATHS.

The scenes of the greatest extravagance were the Circus Maximus, the circus of Nero, and the various imperial baths. Very little of these remain. The circuses are almost completely gone. In the Circus Maximus, with a seating capacity of one hundred and fifty thousand, were held the chariot races, besides the reg-

ular gladiatorial combats. But the circus of Caligula was the largest. It held three hundred thousand people and was the scene of the most awful spectacles in Roman history. It was here that Caligula burned the Christians or threw them to the wild beasts. Hundreds of wild animals were brought annually from Africa to be used in these imperial amusements. At one time the arena was flooded with water and a naval battle was fought to amuse the people. Amused they must be, for they had nothing to do, and if they grew restless the emperor knew only too well what would happen.

The most luxurious places of amusement were the baths. Of these only the walls are standing. But excavations have been made and some of the finest of ancient sculpture has been found in their ruins. The baths of Nero, Diocletian and Caracalla were perhaps the most gorgeous. It is said that those of Diocletian would accommodate as many as three thousand bathers at one time. Many of the tubs have been exhumed. They are most elaborate and more spacious than those in the royal Italian palace to-day. The Romans bathed as often as four times daily. The baths were fitted with magnificent libraries where the citizens retired to read and rest after the burden of bathing.

#### THE CATACOMBS.

These were the luxuries which the Emperors and their pagan subjects enjoyed. The lot of the Christians was another story. They were driven to such desperation by their persecution that they dug holes in the ground and there they lived, worshiped and died. These homes beneath the ground are known as the Catacombs. They are situated along the old Appian way, about three miles south of Rome. They extend into the ground four or

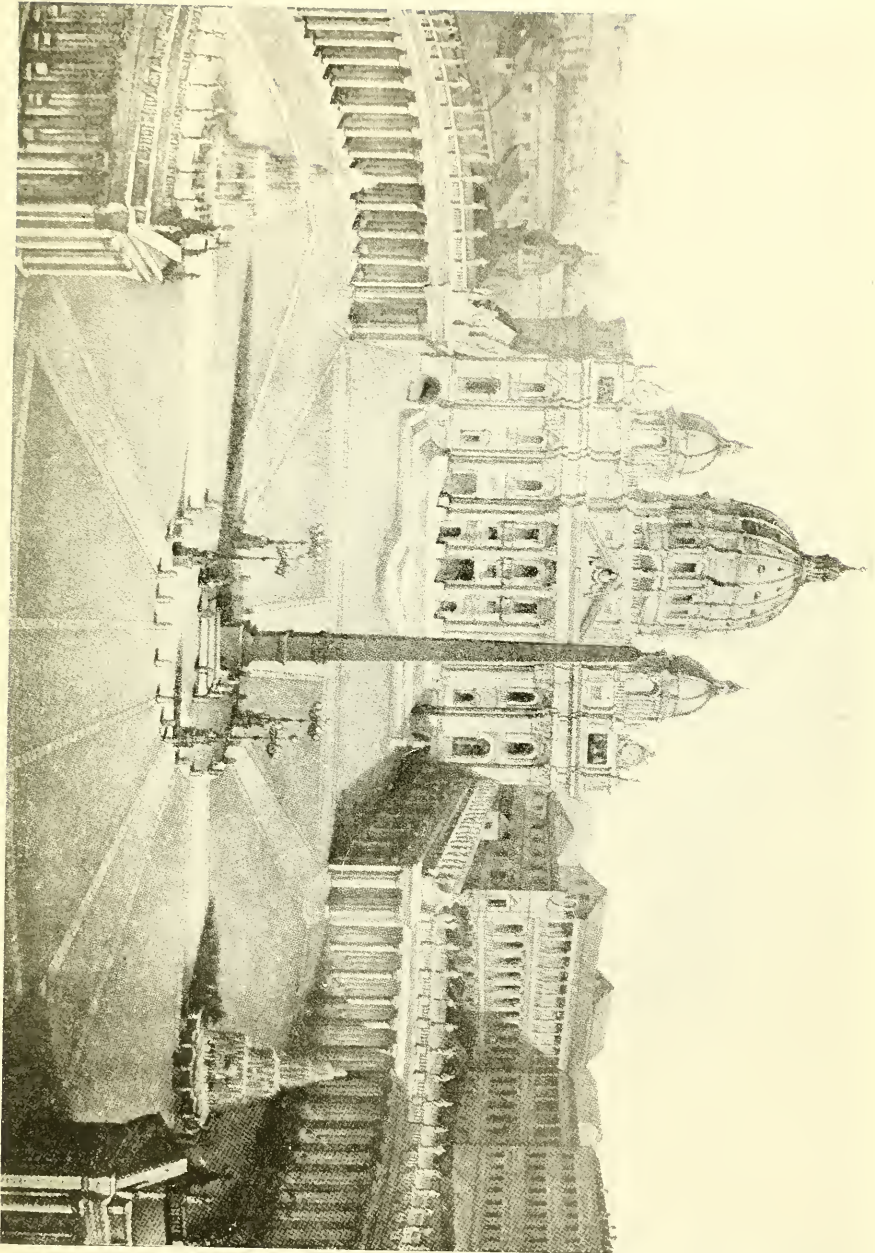
five stories and their labyrinthic windings cover a distance of twelve miles. The number of martyrs and saints who, it is claimed, are buried down there, is too large to bear belief. A short expedition into the place, however, shows that their number must have been legion; for the walls are lined with tombs from ceiling to floor, some of them still containing the skeletons. There are five hundred chapels and altars, each one about six feet wide and eight feet long.

#### THE ROME OF TO-DAY.

Modern Rome, aside from its ruins, is a city of churches. There are three hundred and sixty-five, with ten thousand priests. The finest church building in the city or in the whole world, is St. Peter's Cathedral. Its magnificence is beyond description. In the first place it is of such enormous proportion that from no standpoint can one get a view of the whole building. It stands at the head of a hill in the western part of the city. The approach is one of the most inspiring features. Directly in front of the Cathedral there is a terrace about five hundred yards long, on each side of which stands a row of white columns forming a semi-circular arcade. About half way up the terrace and on each side there are two immense fountains which throw great sprays of water twenty or thirty feet into the air. The Cathedral itself is built of white stone, somewhat yellowed by age, and is surmounted by an immense dome, the design of which was made by Michael Angelo.

The interior of St. Peter's is a wilderness of marble and gold. Built, like all Catholic churches, in the shape of a cross, the transept is 450 feet long while the nave stretches a distance of 615 feet. The famous chair of St. Peter, together with the





*ST. PETERS—In Rome*



surrounding altar, are made of bronze taken from the Coliseum. The body of the patron saint and the head of St. Paul are said to have been buried in the center of the Cathedral. Every Catholic who enters the building kisses the foot of the statue of St. Peter. This practice has been observed so long that the toes are nearly worn away.

#### ST. PAUL'S AND OTHER CHURCHES.

Equally as gorgeous, but not so large or churchly in appearance, is the cathedral known as St. Paul's, outside of Rome. This is another wonder of beauty and magnificence. Every variety of stone from Alpine granite to alabaster is used in the building. It contains the portraits of all the popes from St. Peter down to the late Leo XIII.

In one of these portraits the eyes are made of diamonds. This gives an idea of the general richness of the Cathedral. Under the central altar the body of St. Paul is said to be buried.

Among the other cathedrals almost equally as fine as this one, are St. Peter in Chains—where the chains used upon the patron saint both in Jerusalem and the Mamertine prison are kept—St. Johns and St. Mary of the Angels, built upon the ruins of the baths of Diocletian. In fact it is said that there are fifty churches in Rome of the same class.

The modern part of the city of Rome is finer than most European cities. The streets are broad and well paved; much space is devoted to expansive plazas; magnificent fountains play in nearly every square; and lovely parks crown several of the seven hills. In short the city, though one of the most ancient in the world, is, at the same time, one of the most modern. It has re-

tained its ancient architectural beauty and has kept pace with other cities in all the modern improvements.

From Rome we traveled south through a hot and sterile region about one hundred and sixty miles to Naples, Pompeii and Vesuvius.

#### POMPEII.

Pompeii, a city of about thirty thousand inhabitants, covered an area no larger than a country town. Its circumference was a little over four miles. People lived closer together than they do in modern cities and their houses were smaller. In 79 A. D. the city was buried to the depth of twenty-four feet by the eruption of Vesuvius. For three days the volcano poured its lava upon the city, killing all but ten thousand of the inhabitants and filling every nook and crevice with ashes. There were three distinct layers of lava, the bottom one pumice stone, the middle mud, and the top hot water. All three strata can be seen now where the excavations are being made. In 1748 the first explorations were made and they have been continued ever since, but even now the work is only about half completed. Every day new and important discoveries are being made.

#### HOW THE CITY LOOKS.

The ancient city of Pompeii must have been one of great beauty. The buildings were mostly covered with white marble and adorned with beautiful sculpture in columns and friezes. Just enough of them is left to tell the tale of their splendor. The streets are intact. They vary in width from about nine to twenty-five feet. They are paved with white stone which bears the marks of the chariot wheels. The sidewalks are about three feet wide and

stand about eighteen inches above the level of the street. Stepping stones were used in crossing the streets. They had no sewerage system.

The interiors of the houses and temples present evidences of the greatest splendor. There were temples to most of the gods, including Jupiter, Apollo, Neptune and Venus. Then there was the Forum which, though not so large, served the same purpose as the one at Rome. Some of the private residences are very well preserved. The walls are covered with many pictures representing the mythological traditions. And the inner courts, which are supposed to have been adorned with flowers, still contain numerous statues and fountains. These inside courts are the most beautiful part of the houses. In fact the Pompeians did not care how their homes looked on the outside. They lived in the courts and it was to them that they paid most attention. There was a portico extending entirely around the court, and this was supported by beautiful stone columns. The court of course was not covered by a roof. One dining-room is almost intact. The walls are of the famous Pompeian red and are decorated with paintings of various mythological figures. More space is devoted to this room than to any other. Nearly all the floors were of Mosaic, of which some very fine remains are still preserved.

Although about one-third of the inhabitants escaped, many were buried alive just where they stood. Several skeletons have been found which show the various positions in which the victims were caught. One skeleton was in a prison, another in a bath-tub and still another lying, face down as if in prayer. The place is full of many such interesting things but space forbids

their enumeration. Pompeii is one of the most interesting places we have visited.

#### VESUVIUS.

Overlooking Pompeii, Naples, Herculaneum and the Bay of Naples is the famous volcano Vesuvius. There is an electric road by which visitors are conveyed up to a height sufficiently near the crater to satisfy even the most curious. For the volcano is still active. When we saw it, it was especially so. About half way up you strike the lava which looks as if some one had poured thousands of tons of Missouri gumbo, soaked with water, down the mountain side. This lava has hardened and crumbled to some extent but it still has the appearance of a molten mass of earth that has flowed down from the crater. It covers acres and acres of the surrounding slopes. This deposit, it is said, was made in 1895. The crater from which Pompeii was destroyed is now quite inactive.

From the crater that is in action now there is a constant stream of smoke and vapor which seems to go up and unite with the clouds. There is also a continual seething sound followed every three or four minutes by loud reports, like those from blasting, after which great cakes of red hot lava fly into the air and go sizzling down into the crater or fall upon the ever widening cone. There is a singular fascination about the sight which makes you want to linger for hours and watch it. There is undoubtedly more or less danger attached to visiting the summit of Vesuvius, and this, of course, lends the additional charm.

EDWIN SYDNEY STEPHENS.

Naples, Italy, September 11, 1904.



## LX.

### VENICE AND FLORENCE.

Venice is a metropolis built in the sea. For nearly fifteen hundred years it has stood out there in the Adriatic two or three miles from the shore. The founders of the city were driven into the sea by Attila when he swept down from the north on his raid upon Italy. Ever since the city has thriven. At one time it was an independent city and had a republican form of government, but this was destroyed when the city was captured by the Austrians in 1797.

There are about one hundred and fifty thousand people in Venice; there are thousands of little shops and many large ones scattered through the city; and all the buildings of the town are of stone. All this is standing upon wooden piles driven twenty-five feet into the ground. The great wonder is that the whole thing has not given way long ago. It is claimed, and it must be so, that the wooden piles, after remaining a while in the ground, petrify and form a perfectly solid foundation. Every foot of solid surface is supported by these piles, from the great cathedral of St. Mark, down to the narrowest foot path in the city.

#### A CITY WITHOUT A WHEEL.

Venice is a horseless city; it is also wheelless. It does not even contain a bicycle. Every bit of transportation is done by boats. Instead of streets there are canals. A large one about one hundred and fifty feet wide, with thousands of smaller tributaries, winds through the city forming the letter S. It is the



scene of much traffic by day and of much beauty by night. During the day small steams ply up and down it performing the functions of a tramway. Electric launches are known as automobiles in Venice. They are all equipped with regulation signal horns and are practically the only things in Venice that are not thoroughly unique. Gondolas take the place of cabs in Venice. They are all painted black, in mourning for the death of the Venetian republic in 1797. This gives them a rather sombre appearance.

Every pound of freight is moved by boats. The canals are lined with little barges laden with fruit and vegetables, and here and there a boat is seen lashed to the side of a building where several men are loading or unloading bricks, sand and lumber, stone, and what not. In short, boats take the place of dray wagons. On the other hand, whenever a carriage is used in other cities a gondola is employed in Venice. They carry the guests from the station to the hotel and they are used whenever one wants to go out anywhere in the city. The gondoliers are experts and handle their boats with great ease. Although they have but one oar and although the canals are sometimes very narrow and crowded, there is never a collision or a blockade. They are born and bred in the business. Each gondolier owns his gondola and inherits the right to use it from his father. No licenses are sold; they are all hereditary.

#### VENICE, A CITY OF ART.

Venice is essentially a city of art. With the exception of Florence, it contains more masterpieces of sculpture, painting and architecture than any other city in Europe. On the tops of tens

of thousands of wooden piles stands the cathedral of Saint Mark, perhaps the most gorgeous structure of its kind in the world. It is a massive edifice, built in oriental architecture, with material consisting of every variety of marble and mosaics of such rare beauty as to pass the bounds of description. On the outside of the building are two bronze horses taken from the palace of Nero at Rome. Back of them the wall is lined with pictures done in mosaics. Inside the cathedral there is a continuation of this elegance. From the floors to the top of the five domes there is a solid mass of this tedious but artistic work. The entire Old and New Testaments are illustrated by scenes, the color schemes of which are effected by setting into plaster millions of little pieces of colored marble.

There are, besides the cathedral, many art galleries filled with works of famous masters. Venice was the home of Titian. There he lived and did his work. The old Palace of the Doges, the former rulers of the Venetian republic, is now used as an art gallery. It contains hundreds of magnificent paintings which cannot be described, but must be seen to be appreciated. Connecting this palace with a dark and dismal old prison is the famous Bridge of Sighs, made famous by Hood's poem. Prisoners were led across this bridge after being condemned in an upper chamber of the palace. Through the narrow window of the bridge they saw the light for the last time. Henceforth they languished in the dark, damp dungeons of the prison.

#### SOURCE OF LITERARY INSPIRATION.

There is something in the quaintness and uniqueness of Venice that attracts the artist, whether he be painter, sculptor or poet. In addition to the masters of the brush and chisel, there were also

those of the pen that favored Venice. First of all there was Shakespeare, who made it the scene of at least three of his plays. The Rialto and Shylock's and Antonio's homes, are still pointed out to visitors. The Rialto is to-day the market place of the city, and is crowded every morning with hundreds of men and women buying and selling fruit, vegetables, fish and trumpery of every description. The play of Othello was also laid in Venice. The house supposed to have been occupied by Desdemona stands next to our hotel. It is a quaint old house with its white stone porticoes and yellow marble walls.

Venice was the home of Robert Browning. His residence is one of the finest in the city. Like many other authors both English and American he loved Italy more than his native land. On a tablet placed in the wall of his residence are inscribed these words: "Open my heart and you will find engraved in it Italy."

#### FLORENCE.

Florence is Venice without her canals. Instead there are hundreds of narrow little streets which tangle themselves hopelessly around the quaint old yellow stone buildings. These two cities are similar in that they are primarily centres of art. This feature is carried further in Florence than in Venice. Where the latter has three picture galleries the former has half a dozen. In neither city are there any extensive manufactories but both are dependent upon their art galleries for subsistence. In Florence especially the shops do not contain wearing apparel, foodstuffs or even liquors; but they are monotonously similar in that they are all filled with statuary and paintings, copies of the famous originals which are found in the galleries. It is an excellent place to buy fine copies of the works of the masters.

VEI  
Canal



VENICE



## MICHAEL ANGELO.

In every one of these centres of art there is one man who stands head and shoulders above his fellows. In Milan there was Leonardo da Vinci, painter, engineer and public spirited citizen; in Venice there was Titian, the painter, and in Florence there was Michael Angelo, the greatest of them all, for he was painter, sculptor, architect, patriot and warrior. Moreover each one of these masters established his rank by a single work of art, Leonardo da Vinci by his "Last Supper," Titian by his "Assumption," and Michael Angelo by his statue of David. Second to Michael Angelo in Florence stands Raphael, whose "Madonna of the Chair" is regarded by most people as the finest in the world. Michael Angelo, however, was the greater genius because his talents extended to a larger number of arts.

The statue of David by Michael Angelo is a marvel. The anatomy of the figure seems to be perfect. Although it may not harmonize with our idea of David himself, we nevertheless must admire it for its intrinsic beauty. It is said that the sculptor studied for thirty years in the hospital of Florence, before he began to carve the figure. Besides his other accomplishments he was also a surgeon. In fact, it is said he was an expert in nine different professions.

Florence has not failed to pay proper tribute to this, her greatest son. His body lies in the Church of the Holy Cross, the Westminster Abbey of Italy. By the side of it are interred the remains of Machiavelli, the statesman, Alfieri, the Shakespeare of Italy, Rosini, the musician, and Galileo, the astronomer. In addition a beautiful drive, winding up the mountain side to a broad expansive square, which caps the summit, has been built and named

in honor of Michael Angelo. It is said to be one of the finest drives in the world. From the square one gets a magnificent view of Florence and the surrounding valley and mountains.

#### SAVONAROLA.

There is another Florentine as well known as Michael Angelo. This is Savonarola. The monastery where he lived and where he wrought his own undoing is still standing, but unoccupied. The bedroom and study where the martyr lived and did his work are mere niches in the wall of the great building. Even the sermon which was the immediate cause of his being condemned is exhibited to visitors, also the chapel where he received the last sacrament before his execution. In the main square of the city a scaffold was erected and Savonarola, together with two other monks was burned to death. Although his life was more valuable to Florence and Italy than that of Michael Angelo, there is scarcely a stone raised in his memory.

#### HOW FLORENCE LOOKS.

The general appearance of Florence is one of poverty. It does not possess the prosperous look of Milan or even of Venice. Its shops are small and seem deserted, while the narrow streets harbor many forlorn and hungry old women and more dirty and ragged children. Beggars are met on every hand. They accost you as you enter and emerge from the cathedrals and galleries and run after your carriage as you drive through the streets. Some of them carry a lot of rubbish which they persistently press upon you. One man tried for half an hour to sell us some sawdust. These are experiences that are not met with in Venice, because there begging is prohibited by law.



One other objectionable feature about Florence and Italy generally is the cruelty with which they treat animals. Ireland is not to be compared to this country in that respect. In the first place all the drayage is done by two-wheeled carts. To these are hitched lean and hungry looking mules and horses and loads heavy enough for a four horse team are piled upon these poor beasts until they fairly tremble and sway under the burden. Shetland ponies and donkeys are used for ordinary driving purposes and as many as three or four men pile themselves upon the front, rear and centre of the little carts, lifting the ponies nearly off the ground in ascending, and mashing them down in descending, the hills. In Milan we remarked that one horse did as much as three would do in America. In Florence ponies take the place of horses.

#### CLIMATE AND COUNTRY.

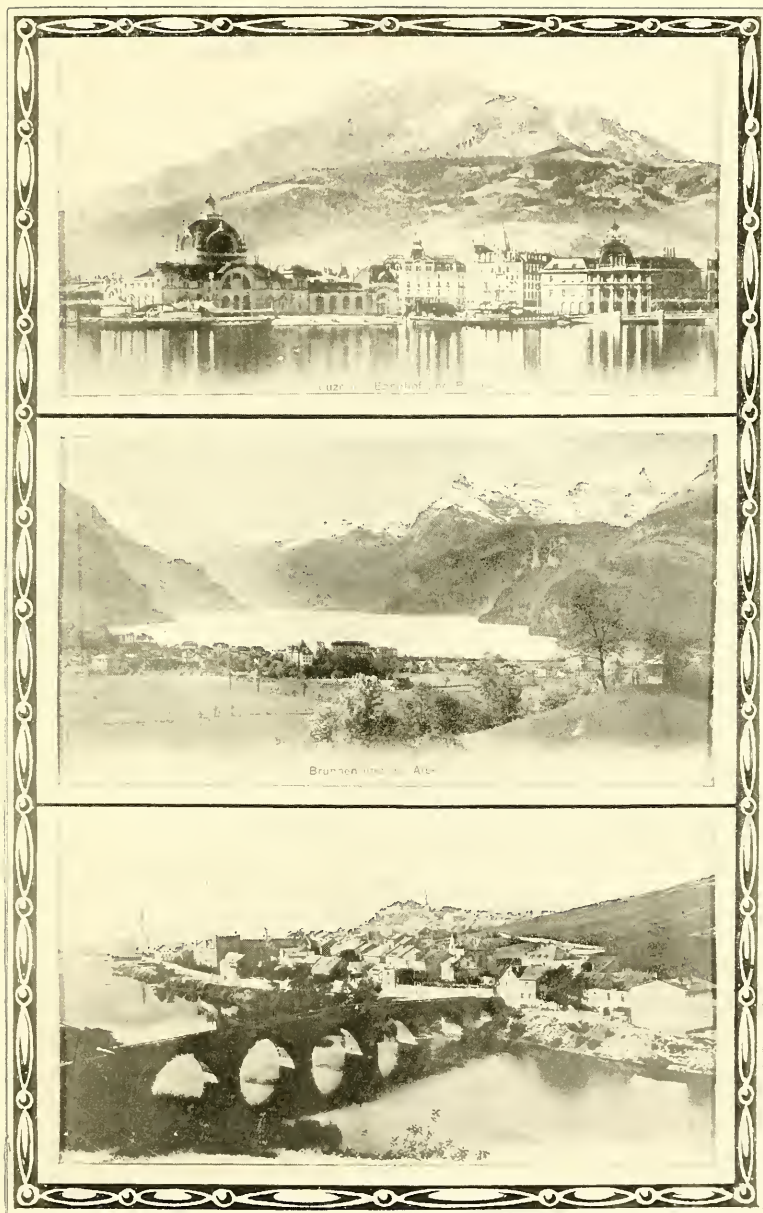
It should not, however, be concluded that Florence and Italy generally are altogether bad. Aside from the poverty, beggary and cruelty, they offer many charming attractions. The climate even at this time of the year is delightful. Of course in the middle of the day the sun is somewhat warm but in the shade the temperature is ideal. The nights are cool and refreshing. On the whole the atmosphere has a softness and gentleness that we do not get in America. There are very few mosquitoes and no flies.

The country abounds in all kinds of delicious fruits. The railroads run for miles and miles through what seems to be one continuous vineyard, burdened with immense clusters of black and white grapes. At every station, on every hotel table, and along the streets are found peaches, pears, grapes, and figs, which can be bought for a song. Wine is used instead of water all over

Italy; in fact it is said that the water is rife with fever germs. The wines are light and not intoxicating, but one becomes tired of them after awhile and longs for the pure rain water of old Missouri.

EDWIN SYDNEY STEPHENS.

Florence, September 5, 1904.



IN SWITZERLAND



SWITZERLAND.



## LXI.

### SWITZERLAND, THE ITALIAN LAKES AND MILAN.

The scenery of Switzerland is the superlative of all we have seen since we reached European shores. It is a country of beautiful lakes, verdant and snow-capped mountains and railroad tunnels. We entered Switzerland on the north after passing through the Black Forest of Germany. Northern Switzerland is one continuous lawn formed by the thousand little meadows that lie or hang on the hillsides. This seems to be the most productive part of the country. In this section women are seen here and there working in the fields, either raking hay or digging potatoes as these seem to be about the only crops. As you approach central Switzerland you come in sight of the lakes and snow-capped mountains. The first lake is Zurich, which lies in the foothills on the northern side of the Alps, just beyond it lies Lake Zug and still farther on Lake Lucerne. The latter is the most beautiful of the three. Where it extends up into the mountain passes it forms an immense cross. The color of the water is pale green. The water is really clear, but reflects the green tints of the grassy bottoms or shores.

#### PILATUS AND RIGHI.

Overlooking the lake are the two famous mountains, Righi and Pilatus, of which the latter is the higher. It receives its name from a legend that from its heights Pontius Pilate committed suicide by drowning himself in a lake. It is 6964 feet high and



its summit is covered with snow. We made a trip from Lucerne across the lake and up to the top of Pilatus. There is a cog road that runs almost perpendicularly up the mountain side. From the summit we stood in snow and had a commanding and contrasting view of nearly the whole of Switzerland. To the south we saw the whole Alpine range with their summits covered, buried in snow. On the north we looked down on the green tops of the smaller mountains and saw Zurich, Zug, and Lucerne stretching chain-like towards the north. On the east white clouds floated hundreds of feet below us, while the west was veiled in mist. The variety of the view constitutes its chief attraction. Righi is not so high as Pilatus and consequently does not command such a magnificent view, nor is it covered with snow. One surprising thing about all the mountains of Switzerland is that hardly any of them are too high or too cold for human habitation. Large hotels crown their summits and farm cottages deck their slopes. Some of these little mountain homes seem practically inaccessible. But it is surprising how every foot of available ground is utilized. Occasionally you will see on the very summit of a mountain a small herd of cattle grazing as peacefully as if they were standing in the valley below. These are the scenes which you find in traveling through the lakes and around the mountains.

#### FROM LUCERNE TO COMO.

The most wonderful part of Switzerland is seen in a trip across the Alps from Lucerne to Como in Italy. In this trip you pass through the famous Saint Gothard tunnel nine miles in length. The feat of engineering required for the construction of this road across and through the Alps is almost as wonderful as the scenery itself. The road winds and overlaps and passes directly through

solid mountains for miles and miles until it reaches the summits; then it reverses the operation on the other side. In places as many as three lines of track are visible, one above the other. The tunnels do not run straight through the mountains but follow a winding course, so that upon emerging from one of them you find the train going in the opposite direction from that which it took in entering. The result is that the railroad attracts as much attention as the mountains.

In this part of Switzerland there is very little cultivation of the soil. In fact there is not much to cultivate. The mountain sides are of solid rock and the valleys are so narrow as afford space for nothing but a dashing and foaming stream of light greenish water. The rapid descent of the mountain ranges, however, soon brings you back to the lakes and little green meadows again. By this time you have reached the Italian lakes. The first one is Lugano which forms a horseshoe between the mountains. The weather here is very hot, in striking contrast to the frigid temperature of Mount Pilatus.

Como lying at the foot of the Alps in the gentle climate of northern Italy is said to be the most attractive lake in the Alpine district. It is some forty-five miles long and one-fourth to one-half a mile wide. Its natural beauty is hardly equal to that of Lucerne. The water does not have that delicate greenish color which is found in the Swiss lake nor is it surrounded by such majestic mountains. The improvements, on the shores, however, of Como are superior to those of Lucerne. The Italian lake is dotted on both sides by the beautiful villas of wealthy Italians and by many magnificent hotels. At Bellagio, situated at the junction of Como and Lecco, there is a hotel whose grounds form a veritable paradise of tropical foliage, vari-colored flowers and shaded

vistas. These gardens are seen in all the villas and they, with the columned arcades and steps running down to the water's edge, remind one of stage scenes and curtain paintings. They are the reality of the fancies we weave after reading such novels as *Quo Vadis* or the *Last Days of Pompeii*.

#### BRITISH AND CONTINENTAL LAKES COMPARED.

We are now in position to draw a conclusion as to which are the more beautiful, the British or continental lakes. The decision must inevitably be in favor of the latter. The English, Irish and Scotch lakes might be called pretty, but never grand or beautiful, adjectives which are most appropriate to Lucerne, Lugano, Como, and Lecco. Killarney, Windermere and Lomond do not possess the towering mountain background of Lucerne nor the artistic beauty which characterizes Como. It has been said that Irish scenery is superior to that of Switzerland, but that is a mistake. Besides the greater height of the Swiss mountains there are the additional attractions of snow-covered peaks, the contrast between these and the green foothills and valleys below and the beautiful coloring of the leaves where they have occasionally been tinted by premature frost. On the whole the scenery is by far the finest we have seen.

#### THE GOVERNMENT OF SWITZERLAND.

There are between three and four million people in Switzerland. The government is a centralized republic. The country is divided up into twenty-five cantons, each of which has a representative in the national legislative body. This body is made up of these twenty-five representatives and together with members elected from the country at large—one for every forty thousand inhabi-

## Switzerland, the Italian Lakes and Milan. 499

tants. The members hold office for seven years. The president is selected by the National Council and not by direct vote of the people. His term of office is one year. Each canton is independent in the control of its internal affairs. Switzerland is said to be one of the freest countries in the world.

### RESOURCES OF SWITZERLAND.

The chief products of Switzerland are cheese, milk, chocolate and watches. She has no great natural resource. Agriculturally she is poor and with all her beautiful mountains she produces very few minerals. The country seems to be dependent upon the outside world. Millions of dollars are spent by visitors who come to enjoy the climate and scenery. In fact tourists are the chief source of its existence.

### MILAN.

Three features make Milan one of the most interesting cities we have visited: The Cathedral, paintings and the royal palace. Weeks could be profitably spent in either one of these. The cathedral is one of the finest in the world. It is five hundred feet long by seventy-five feet wide. Its architecture is a marvel of richness and detail. One is immediately impressed by the wealth and grandeur of the structure. It was begun in the fourteenth century and completed about the beginning of the nineteenth. The cost of labor on the building, exclusive of the expense for material, was one hundred and twenty millions of dollars. The exterior is adorned by numberless little pinnacles, every inch of which is sculptured. There are four thousand five hundred life-size statues on the outside walls and top of the cathedral. The interior is equally as magnificent. There are fifty-two columns eighty feet

high and six feet thick. Three windows of richly colored glass worked into scenes representing the entire New and Old Testaments, measure eighty feet in height and thirty-five feet in width. The framework of the windows as well as the fifty-two columns, the floors and many statues are of marble.

In the crypt or basement of the cathedral are the remains of Saint Charles, who consecrated the building. Although the body has been buried three hundred years, it is still preserved and visitors are allowed to see it upon the payment of a small gratuity. The casket is of silver and crystal, while on the body are placed the votive offerings of the saint's friends, consisting mainly of emeralds, diamonds and rubies. The value of the casket, together with these precious stones, is estimated at over a million dollars.

Another interesting feature in this cathedral is a nail which is said to have been used in the cross on which Christ was crucified. This nail is kept in a small case in the topmost arch of the cathedral. Every year on the third of May the Archbishop of Milan ascends to the roof by means of a small balloon provided for the purpose, takes the nail out, descends and leads a procession around the building, then returns the nail to its place. This is not a mere legend, but a practice which is earnestly and faithfully observed.

#### THE PAINTINGS OF MILAN.

Picture galleries as a general thing are tiresome even when we see them, but infinitely more so when some one tries to describe them to us. I shall therefore attempt no description here. But it may be interesting to know what famous masters are represented at Milan, for it is one of the three centers of Italian art. The galleries there are filled with pictures by such artists as Raphael, Rubens, Michael Angelo, Van Dyck and Leonardo da

Vinci. These are but a few of the more famous ones. The famous Marriage of the Virgin by Raphael is found here. It occupies the first place in the gallery. But the most popular painting is not in the gallery, but is found on the wall of a church. This is the Last Supper by Leonardo da Vinci. It would be useless to attempt to describe this painting as nearly every one is familiar with it. It covers one of the end walls in long dining hall and is considerably defaced. Numerous copies are being made which attempt to fill out the missing parts, but none of them are equal to the original. It is a wonderful analysis of character on canvas.

#### THE ROYAL PALACE.

Until the assassination of King Humbert, Milan was one of the residences of the King of Italy. It is visited but rarely by Victor Immanuel on account of the fate which his father met there. The interior of the palace is somewhat of a repetition of the other royal residences which we have seen. Some interesting historical facts, however, are connected with it. It was built by Eugene Beauharnais, the brother-in-law of Napoleon and the brother of Josephine. His fondness for luxury and magnificence are exhibited in the furnishings of this palace. There are banquet halls, dining rooms, refreshment rooms, kings' and queens' apartments, ball rooms and what not. Here are the beds occupied by Napoleon and Maximilian, while mementos of the former are found on every hand. The ball room is lighted by three thousand candles and frescoed with images representing the complete life of Napoleon. The palace is nearly as fine as Windsor except that it does not contain such a host of portraits nor so large a display of armor.

## THE CITY OF MILAN.

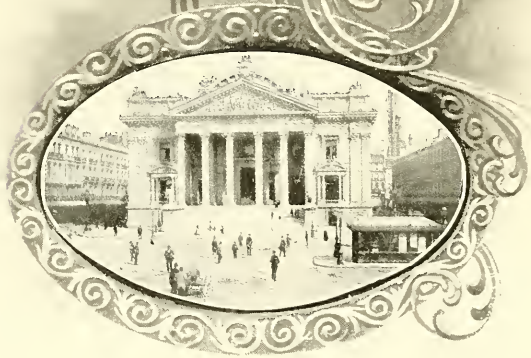
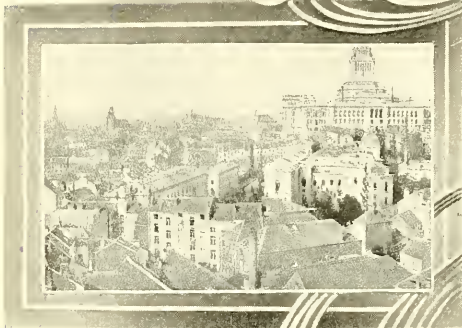
Milan is a city of cream-colored buildings, narrow and crooked streets and arcades. The last are the characterizing features of the business houses of the place. The stores are not directly on the street as in most cities, but they occupy place in a sort of portico supported by a long row of granite columns. The effect is quite pleasing, as it adds an element of beauty and at the same time gives protection from the sun. Street cars similar to our own are used in Milan, except that they are two stories high, passengers filling both stories. In most parts of Europe one horse does the work of two; in Milan he does as much as three. This is another place where the humane society would have enough to do. One thing, however, must be said to the credit of Milan as well as of all of northern Italy. Women are not employed in as many manual occupations as in Germany, Switzerland and the British Isles. Although there are a great many very poor people in Milan the city has the general appearance of prosperity.

EDWIN SYDNEY STEPHENS.

Milan, Italy, August 30, 1904.







SCENES IN BRUSSELS

GERMANY.



**WATERLOO, THE RHINE, HEIDELBERG AND GERMANY.**

Fourteen miles south of Brussels, on an undulating prairie, lies the battlefield of Waterloo. Here in a open arena not more than two miles long and a half a mile wide, the gladiatorial little Corsican matched himself against the allied powers of Europe; here some thirty-five thousand men lost their lives; and here the future of England was established. At present there is a mound two hundred feet high in the center of the field from which there is a commanding view of all the surrounding country. The line of battle of the opposing sides as well as the plan of attack was very simple. The English and Prussians were facing the south, while Napoleon's army was facing the north. Napoleon gave an order for a charge on Wellington's centre, hoping to break his line half in two. But the emperor, from his position could not see the sunken road, or cut, as we would call it, because of a gradual incline which rose from him towards the north. When the infantry reached the cut they faltered but were immediately swept over the embankment by the onslaught of the cavalry from behind. The charge was continued until this chasm twenty-five feet deep and fifty feet wide was filled with the bodies of soldiers. They at last formed a bridge over which the remainder passed. Directly in front of this road Marshal Ney and his division were stationed. He made four different charges and each time his horse was shot from under him. But for the incident of the sunken road it is believed that Napoleon would have been victorious.

The brunt of the battle was not in the center or on the east as Napoleon had planned, but it took place on the extreme west, at the Hougomont farm. It was a very close conflict all along the

line and in some places it was hand to hand. Napoleon lost about seventeen thousand men and Wellington nearly as many. It was, as the French contend, a massacre and not a fight.

The battlefield has been preserved except that the trees have nearly all been destroyed and the embankment on the south of the sunken road has been cut away to provide earth for building the great memorial, Mount Lion. It is two hundred feet high and about three hundred feet in diameter at the base. It is said that all the earth was carried by women in baskets, working for eight pence or sixteen cents a day.

#### BRUSSELS.

Brussels is a beautiful city. It is a mixture of modern and mediaeval. It is full of beautiful flower gardens and terraces, while the public park and forest owned by the city is said to be surpassed only by the Bois de Boulogne in Paris. There are over a thousand acres of natural forest extending from within the city two or three miles towards the south. The preservation of forests is at the basis of a great part of the beauty of these European countries and we should follow the example in America. Brussels also has a certain quaintness of appearance. Alongside the modern electric and motor cars are seen both dogs and oxen in harness. Dogs are as common beasts of burden in Belgium as donkeys are in Ireland. They pull the bread and milk carts with apparently as much ease as horses. We saw one cart laden with a man and woman and drawn by a combination team of donkey and dog. Horses are hitched to the end of wagon tongues instead of on each side. It is possible to work them this way because the country is almost absolutely level.

Women do most of the work in the fields. They cut the hay,

rake and haul it away on ox carts. Women are employed in a greater number of occupations in Europe than they are in America. This is true of England, Ireland and Scotland as well as Belgium and Germany. In England they work in the fields and stand behind the drinking bars; in Belgium and Germany they do not perform the functions of barkeepers, but they drive the milk carts and carry their farm products to market. In the treatment of women America is far more chivalrous and considerate than is any other country we have seen.

#### BELGIAN AGRICULTURE.

Belgium is really a great aggregation of garden patches. Especially is this true of the western part. The land in that section is low and flat, striped all over with water ditches which serve the double purpose of separating the thousand little holdings, and of affording a means of transporting the farm products to the villages. The methods of cultivation are surprisingly primitive. Wherever a plow is used, it is drawn either by oxen, or by cows; but generally the land is cultivated by hand. Grain is cut with sickles. Scythes are seldom seen and mowing machines and self binders are practically unknown. The reason for this condition of agriculture, of course, is that the crops are too small to make the use of labor-saving machinery profitable.

#### THE RHINE.

The Rhine is a river somewhat wider than the Gasconade but not so wide as the Osage. It has a length of some two hundred and fifty miles. Of course everyone has heard of the beautiful scenery along this river. Most of it lies between Coblenz and Bingen; in fact, if one wants the scenery and that only, the best trip would be between these two places. In this section high



mountains rise directly up from the water and seem to close you in on all sides. Along the mountain sides are thousands of little vineyards planted in terraces, some of them not more than fifty feet square. This is where the best wine in Germany comes from. Occasionally on the top of a mountain peak are seen the ruins of an old castle or fortification. A few of these ruins are relics of the Romans, but most of them are the lairs of the ancient robber knights who lived by foraging upon their weaker neighbors. Their depredations finally became so exhaustive upon the country that the king issued a proclamation to the effect that they must either quit their piratical crimes, or be executed. They refused, and he had them all beheaded and their castles destroyed. That is why the castles are in ruins to-day. In some cases sentimental millionaires have erected modern castles over or near the old ones.

The most interesting points along the Rhine are Bonn, the seat of a great German University, the Lorelei Rock made famous by Goethe's poem, and Bingen. The last is now a railroad center and a town of some thirty thousand inhabitants, lying at the foot of the mountains. It is a very beautiful place.

On the whole, the trip on the Rhine affords some very charming and romantic scenery, but as far as natural beauty goes, it does not surpass the Hudson near West Point, the Thousand Islands of the St. Lawrence or Lake George. It has the advantage over these places in being older and having more historical significance. The Rhine is a great highway of commerce as well as passenger traffic. It is lined from mouth to source with hundreds of freight-laden vessels. A trip on it is worth all its costs.

#### HEIDELBERG.

This is a place known the world over on account of its great University. Very few people know anything about Heidelberg

beyond the fact that it is the seat of a great institution of learning like Columbia. But to the visitor the University, at least in summer, is the least interesting feature of the town. It does not possess the aesthetic attraction of beautiful buildings and picturesque grounds that is found at Oxford and Cambridge. On the contrary, the University occupies some dingy old buildings in the heart of the town with no grounds at all. But the real charm and interest of Heidelberg to the sightseer is the scenery and the old castle which overlooks the city. The castle is now partially destroyed, but the grounds around it are kept in beautiful condition, and they afford the city a splendid park. Heidelberg looks more like a summer resort than a college town. It is full of flowers and shrubbery and in the city park there is a sort of beer garden where the people sit and listen to a band concert every evening while they drink their wine or beer. The weather is cool enough to make an overcoat comfortable in the evening.

#### DUELING AT HEIDELBERG.

Duels are still fought by the Heidelberg students, but never with the intention of killing each other. The custom now is to protect every part of the body and head except the ears, cheeks and nose. The swords used are too light to break any bones. Every student wants as many scars as possible and they even go so far as open the wounds repeatedly in order to make them leave very deep marks. Duels are fought upon the slightest provocation; in fact the students will go out of their way to bring them about. They are generally fought by representatives of two clubs. They take place every morning during the school term, between nine and ten o'clock. A doctor is always present and examines each wound as soon as it is made. If it is serious he stops the duel. In this way fatal results are prevented.

## GERMANY GENERALLY.

Rural Germany like rural Belgium is divided up into very small farms. There are no farm houses scattered over the country, but the farmers live together in the villages. Their holdings are in very small and narrow strips. They cultivate corn, tobacco, wheat, oats, and all kinds of garden vegetables. Because of the scarcity of timber there are no fences separating one farm from another. In Germany women seem to do as much work on the farms as men. Horses, dogs and cows are the beasts of burden. Every foot of ground is cultivated and worked to its fullest capacity.

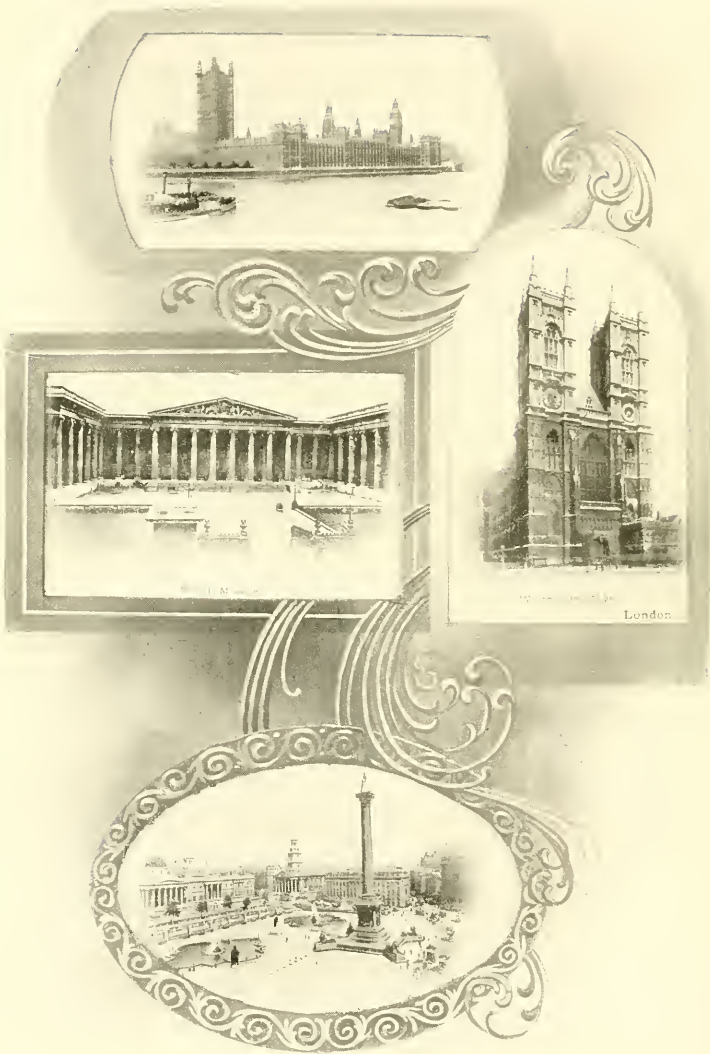
The cities of Germany are ahead of any we have seen. They are all adorned with many little parks and boulevards; flowers grow prolifically, and fountains play in every square. Not only this, but the buildings have a fresher and more uniform appearance, and the streets are kept cleaner than those in English or American cities. Nearly every street in the German cities is divided in the center by a double row of trees, and under these there is a walk and a place for horseback riding. A great deal of space is devoted to making the cities beautiful.

To sum up by comparison Germany is behind England and the United States agriculturally, but as far as cities are concerned the reverse is true.

EDWIN SYDNEY STEPHENS.

Heidelberg, August 24, 1904.





*IN LONDON—Houses of Parliament—British Museum—Westminster Abbey  
Trafalgar Square*

ENGLAND.





### LXIII.

#### LONDON AND ITS ENVIRONS.

Miles and miles of swaying omnibuses, loaded inside and on top with hundreds of men and women, tediously worming their way through narrow and winding streets, between low and dingy old buildings—such are the first impressions of an American in London. He is oppressed by the strangeness and antique appearance of his surroundings, and by the feeling of his own insignificance. The people look as if they had just stepped out of the novels of Dickens or Thackeray. The Yankee (we are all Yankees over here), with his ideas of a great city, expects to find in London advanced methods of transportation, new styles of architecture, and above all, perhaps the latest fashions in dress. But he is disappointed. There are no street cars, at least on the north side of the Thames, but the streets are literally swarming with cabs and buses. The truth is that there is no room for street cars. Most people here ride on top of the buses, and this is by far the best way to see London. Nor do the buildings come up (or down I might say) to our expectations, especially in point of height. They are only four or five stories high, and look as if they had been rained on for many years. The people, too, have an ancient and dingy appearance. They are not sleek and well groomed as our New Yorkers and Bostonians are, but look comically old-fashioned with the black cutaways, high hats, generally about a size too large, and their unshapely feet, covered with still more unshapely shoes. Americans are immediately distinguished by a glance at their well-shod feet. The whole place, people and all, looks old-fashioned, and if Dickens or even Thackeray should

arise from his grave to revisit London, he would probably not find it much changed. For is not the Old Curiosity Shop still standing just as Dickens described it, and Vauxhall, where the immortal and immoral Becky Sharpe held forth? And there is "Ye Olde Cheshire Cheese Inn," the favorite haunt of Dr. Johnson, Goldsmith, Burns and Garrick and a hundred other places just as old, if not as interesting. But this is mere rambling.

#### WESTMINSTER ABBEY.

Westminster Abbey may be called the tomb of the British nation. In it is inscribed the epitaph of the English people. Along its arched corridors and within its time-worn vaults are deposited the remains of kings and queens, soldiers, poets and statesmen from the fourteenth century until the present time. In the poets' corner lie the remains of the father of English poetry, Geoffrey Chaucer, and just across the aisle stand the majestic statues of two of England's greatest statesmen, William Pitt and William E. Gladstone. In the farther recesses of the poets' corner are monuments or tombs of Dryden, Shakespeare, Dickens, Milton, Gray and Garrick. On the monument to Milton and Gray the poet has written these eloquent lines:

*"No more the Grecian muse unrivalled reigns;  
To Britain must we our homage pay,  
She felt a Homer's fire in Milton's strains,  
A Pindar's rapture in the lyre of Gray."*

Could there be a more beautiful tribute to genius than that?

Perhaps the greatest honor ever bestowed upon an American is found in the fact that the bust of Longfellow occupies a place near the poets' corner. It was placed there, so the inscription says by the English people as a tribute of appreciation of an American author.

But poets are not the only ones memorialized in the Abbey. There are monuments to England's great statesmen and soldiers as well. Nelson and Wellington seem to be more honored than any others. In one corridor among a long line of tablets in memory of great soldiers there is one that must surprise every American who sees it. It is erected in honor of Major John Andre, so infamous in our eyes on account of his connection with the treason of Benedict Arnold.

This list might be continued indefinitely, but lack of space forbids. One other fact, however, may be mentioned in connection with Westminster Abbey. It is here that the kings and queens of England are crowned. The seat of the coronation chair is made, so tradition says, of the stone upon which Jacob rested when he dreamed of the angels and the ladder. It has been used in the Abbey for about five hundred years.

#### THE TOWER OF LONDON.

Equally as interesting and more ancient than Westminster Abbey is the Tower of London, the oldest parts of which were built by William the Conqueror and used by him as a fort and prison. The present structure consists of long rambling walls surmounted here and there with small towers of mediaeval appearance. Around the whole thing there is a moat and another wall. The Tower is now used as a sort of museum of armour and as barracks for the king's guards. There are also on display here all the coronation regalia now in possession of the royal house. They are enclosed in a glass case, surrounded by iron bars, but in plain view of all visitors. Within the walls of this tower kings and queens have languished in dark and narrow dungeons finally to be led out to their execution at the headsman's block, which stands in the

Tower yard. Here Anne Boleyn, Lady Jane Grey, Jane Seymour, and many others met their fate. The official guards of the Tower are known as beef eaters, a name probably derived from their healthy and well-fed appearance. They are old soldiers who have distinguished themselves in battle. On the whole the Tower is a most interesting and picturesque place, but we Americans may congratulate ourselves and our country that we have no such monument to the despotism and barbarity of former sovereigns.

#### PARLIAMENT.

A good many people think that the English House of Lords corresponds to our senate, and the House of Commons to our house of representatives. But this is not altogether true. In the first place seats in the House of Lords are hereditary, while in our senate they are elective. The members of the House of Commons, like our representatives, are elected by popular vote, but they hold their seats indefinitely, at any rate until their particular party goes out of power. Unlike our representatives, the commons do not receive any compensation for their services. They cannot even frank a letter or a telegram, to say nothing of their laundry. Another way in which they differ from our representatives is that from among them the cabinet is chosen, thus forming what is known as a responsible ministry. The office of member of Parliament is sought for one of three reasons: either for the honor, or for promoting the interests of one's constituents, or for promoting private ends.

Very few people from America have the privilege of seeing the two houses in session. For this privilege the writer is indebted to the most generous courtesy of Mr. M. J. Flavin, a member from Killarney, Ireland, who spared neither time nor effort in

getting us admitted to both houses, as well as to the Terrace where refreshments are served to the members and their guests. In their architecture both houses look more ecclesiastical than legislative. The seats are long pew-like benches, running lengthwise of the hall, and the members sit as close to each other as we do in church, or in any public audiences. There are no desks piled high with books, pamphlets, newspapers and letters which are so apt to distract the attention of the law-makers. The houses of Parliament are divided into what are called the Government and the Opposition. The former occupies the right side, the latter the left side. Most of the members sit with their hats on. In appearance they resemble the men in General Bingham's pictures of Missouri life about forty years ago. There are a great many Bentons, and Col. J. West Goodwin's white hat is seen on every hand. When the members wish to applaud the speaker they never clap their hands or stamp their feet, but simply grunt out the words, "hear, hear, hear," with their peculiar English pronunciation.

We visited the Commons at a very opportune time. They were discussing Chamberlain's finance bill and, of course, a majority of the most prominent men were present. There was Balfour, the lean and studious looking prime minister, and the dramatic Chamberlain, the Chancellor of the Exchequer, and Sir Henry Campbell-Bannerman, Mr. Balfour's most formidable opponent and probably his successor, and Sir George Wyndham, the brilliant young secretary, who holds the affairs of Ireland under his thumb, and Winston Churchill, and many others of less prominence. The whole house seemed to be united in opposition to Chamberlain's tariff policy, and they but reflect the sentiment of the English nation.

The scene in the House of Lords is very much the same as that in the lower house, except that the general appearance of the members is not so uniform. Here are found men all the way from the most distinguished and intellectual to the most pitiful and senseless looking English fop. The reason is that the Lords inherit their seats, while the Commons do not. Like the Commons, they sit with their hats on, that is, all except the Lord Chancellor who wears his wig and sits upon the wool sack at the end of the hall. Lords Roseberry and Roberts were both present when we visited the House of Lords. Both of them occupied seats of honor directly opposite the Lord Chancellor. The two present quite a contrast. Lord Roseberry, with his full face, ruddy complexion, and solid frame; and Lord Roberts, whom we should expect to find otherwise, with his hollow cheeks, pale face, half hidden by grizzly iron-gray sideburns, and his thin and stooping figure. Besides them were Lord Landsdowne and Lord Salisbury, son of the late Premier.

On the terrace, overlooking the Thames, tea is served to the members and their guests every afternoon from four until six. Here, almost any afternoon, can be found the leading men of England, sitting around the tables with their wives, daughters and friends or parading the walk.

#### A MISSOURI MASTODON IN THE BRITISH MUSEUM.

It is probably not known to many Missourians that the great Leviathan or mastodon described in the forty-first chapter of the book of Job was discovered in the year 1838 in what is now Benton county, Missouri, on the banks of a stream known as La Pomme de Terre; but such is the statement made by the discoverer of a huge skeleton which now stands in the natural his-



tory department of the British Museum. In a pamphlet which he wrote about his discovery, one Albert Koch, a showman and adventurer, states that a farmer in Gasconade county, in trying to discover the cause of an unpleasant odor in his well, dug up some huge bones. Koch, on hearing of this, went immediately to the place and secured, after much searching, bones enough to construct a skeleton thirty-two feet long and twelve feet high. Being familiar with the Bible, he remembered that Job had described just such a monster, so he immediately set about to compare his specimen with Job's description. After doing so he arrived at the conclusion that this was none other than the great Leviathan. All this, he declares in a little pamphlet entitled "A description of the Missourium or Leviathan, with its supposed habits and Indian traditions concerning the location from whence it was exhumed."

The skeleton now stands in the first place among the mastodons of the British Museum, and is larger than the skeletons of the two elephants which stand beside it. Since Koch's death it has been reconstructed, and now it is not nearly so large as he designed it. Indian arrows and battle axes have been found belonging to the same period, thus showing that the animal was contemporaneous with man. Mr. Smith Woodward, the keeper of the natural history department of the museum, to whose courtesy I owe the privilege of looking up the history of the Missourium, informed me that it was the first mastodon skeleton ever discovered, and for this reason it stands first in the museum.

#### ENGLISH CHARACTERISTICS.

To the American, London and the English people present some striking characteristics. The first thing that impresses him is the

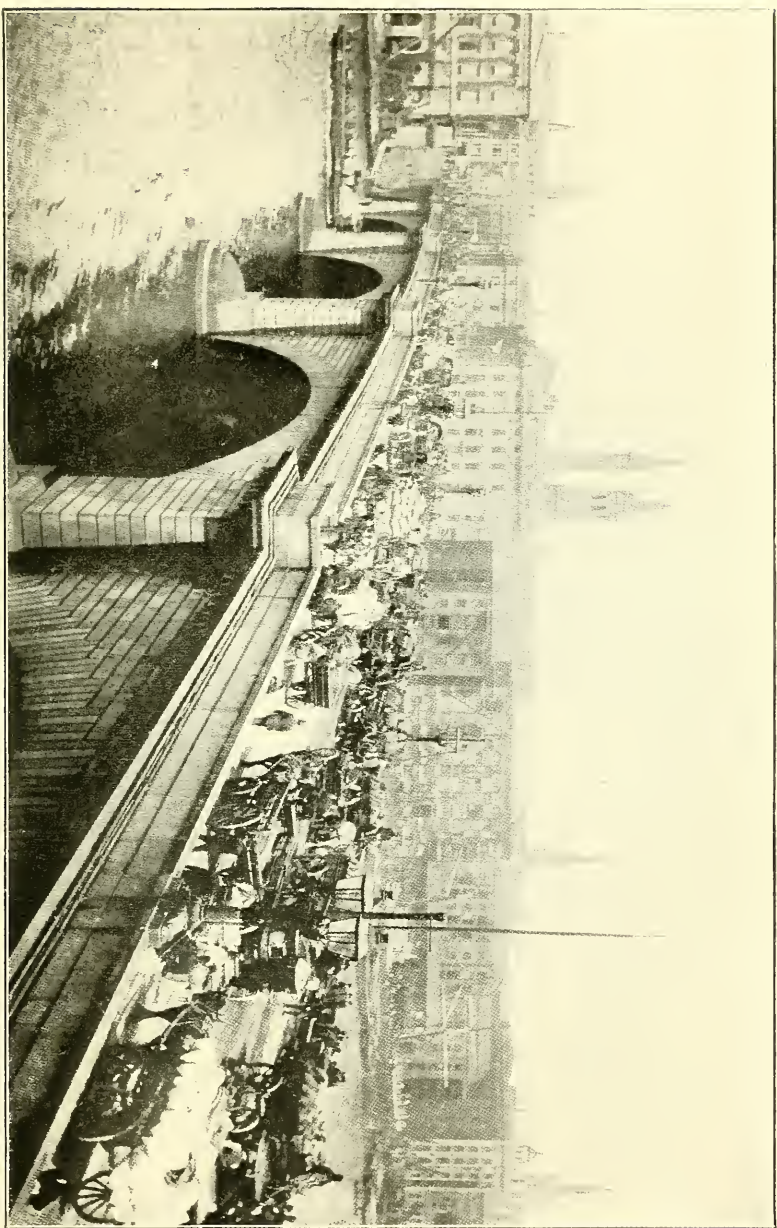


speech, pronunciation and intonation. The broad "a" is used by all classes, but only the lower classes misplace the "h." The guide at Windsor invariably spoke of the Ca-astle. The English intonation is so different from our's as to render it somewhat difficult to understand what is said until one has become accustomed to it. Another thing that impresses us is the extreme politeness of the people. No matter where you are or whom you meet, your questions are always readily and gladly answered. Especially is this true of the police who, by the way, are most efficient, and the order of London adds one more to our list of favorable impressions. The people seem to have the most profound respect for the law, and when its arm is raised they bow down before it.

The essential English characteristics, however, is not politeness or respect for law, but reverence for the past. It is this spirit which has erected monuments and cathedrals and has preserved such relics as the Tower, the Old Curiosity Shop, Ye Old Cheshire Cheese Inn with the same old tables, the same old wooden seats, the same old bar, that formed the favorite haunt of so many of England's great men. By this same spirit castles have been preserved and are now thrown open for the enjoyment of the people of all nations. This suggests another characteristic of these people—their democracy. The King's apartments at Windsor, the coronation regalia at the Tower, Warwick Castle and many other places which are open and practically free to the public, are evidences of this spirit. We Americans boast of our democracy and England flatters us for it, but we should not become conceited over it, for we have still a good deal to learn from our once despotic mother.

EDWIN SYDNEY STEPHENS.

London, July 26, 1904.



THE LONDON BRIDGE



## LXIV.

### RURAL AND HISTORIC ENGLAND.

Alternating green and golden fields, sloping gracefully down to the edge of clear and slow-flowing streams, lined on both sides with drooping willows, and, occasionally, on the top of a distant hill, half-hidden among green clumps of trees, an ancient and inspiring castle tower—this is rural and historic England. The most beautiful, the most picturesque, the most romantic section of Great Britain lies between London on the south and Chester on the north. Between these two points a great part of England's history has been enacted. There is Oxford, a city of colleges and the center of English culture and education since the fifteenth century. It was in this historic city that John Wesley promulgated his doctrine of Methodism and here Cranmer, Latimer and Ridley were tried and burned at the stake. Here, also, the poet Addison attended college and wrote some of his best verses. But forty miles beyond Oxford is Warwick, flanked on one side by the ruins of Kenilworth Castle, made famous by Scott and infamous by Leicester, and on the other side by Stratford-on-Avon—the birthplace of Shakespeare and the home of Anne Hathaway, before she became his wife. Some sixty or seventy miles still further to the northwest is the town of Chester, near which is Eaton Hall, the estate of the Duke of Westminster, and Hawarden, the home of the late William E. Gladstone.

#### OXFORD.

Oxford is a city of twenty-three colleges and about fifty thousand inhabitants, exclusive of students. The colleges form the substance of the town; the business portion is merely incidental.

The college buildings are of mediaeval architecture and have a great solidity and dignity of structure. They are all built around courts with massive gates surmounted by bell towers. The most famous of these is the old Tom Tower of Christ's Church College. The bell in it weighs seven and one-half tons, and has a very melodious tone. Every night at 9:10 it tolls the curfew, striking a hundred and one times. At that time every student must be in his room. Every night the college proctor, accompanied by two of the faculty, known as the two bull dogs, visit all the billiard halls and bars in the town. If any students are caught they are proctorized—that is, brought before the governing body of the college. It is said, however, that the fellows generally out-run the proctor and his bull dogs and so escape punishment.

Each college controls its own students and revenues, but they are all federated into one body, known as the convocation. This body merely lays out the curriculum for the whole university which is the same in all the colleges. There are no recitations, as we have in our American colleges, but every course is carried on by the lecture system. Students are not confined to one college, but they may take courses in any number of different ones. Most of them, however, prefer to be identified with one particular college, so they take most of their lectures there. There are about two hundred and fifty students in each college, or about six thousand in all, the same number as at Harvard.

#### STUDENT LIFE.

At Oxford there is the same system of college dormitories that we have at our eastern colleges. Room rent is much cheaper than we have it. A suite of rooms in the most exclusive quarters rarely costs more than three hundred dollars. Of course this does not

mean that the expenses in general are lower than ours, for there are various other ways of spending money. For instance, a good many Oxford students keep as many as five or six horses and go in for elaborate entertaining. It all depends upon the tastes and the wealth of the individuals. Students have their breakfast and luncheon served in their rooms. They are brought from the college kitchen at no extra charge. For luncheon the fellows generally dine five or six together, each member of a set taking his turn at entertaining the others in his room. Every student is required to dine five days out of the week in the college dining hall; the other two days they generally dine outside and more sumptuously. As I have said, every student must be in his room at 9:10 p. m.

The favorite sports of Oxford students are cricket, long distance running, association football and rowing. In the first two and the last they are superior to our college students. This is because they devote so much time to them. You do not travel a mile in England without seeing a man with a cricket ball and bat or one rowing on one of the beautiful streams. In long distance running, too, they are ahead of us. This was shown in the International Track Meet last Saturday in London. In the short runs, the high and broad jumps and the weight events Yale and Harvard won, hands down, but when it came to the half-mile, the mile and two-mile races, they were thoroughly outclassed. Englishmen don't go at their sports, as we do, as if they were hard work, but they make them more purely recreation and thus, perhaps, gain more benefit from them.

#### SOMETHING ELSE ABOUT OXFORD.

Oxford is pretty closely connected with the history of England. Christ's Church College was founded by Henry VIII, and the

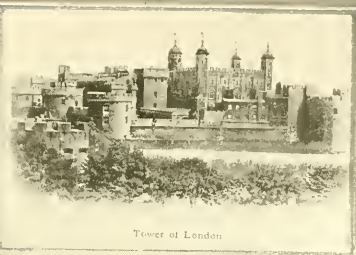


buildings were designed by Cardinal Wolsey. It was at Oxford that both John and Charles Wesley were educated and whence John promulgated his doctrine. Here Cromwell, Addison, Dryden, Gladstone, and the present King attended college. But, perhaps, the most famous historic fact about Oxford is that it was the scene of the trial and execution of the three martyrs, Latimer, Cranmer, and Ridley. Visitors are still shown the spot where the three were chained to the stake and burned.

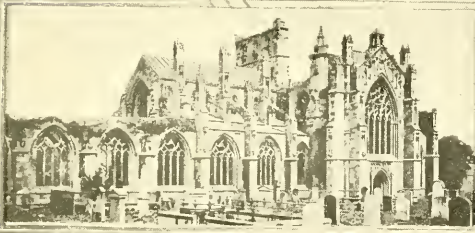
#### WARWICK, KENILWORTH AND STRATFORD-ON-AVON.

These are three beautiful and historic places along the banks of the river Avon, within sixteen miles of each other. Warwick Castle, the ruins of Kenilworth Castle, and Stratford, the home of Shakespeare. Warwick is not so well known nor yet so important historically as the other two, but it is certainly a most beautiful place. It has been the home of the Earls of Warwick for the past hundred and fifty years. The castle, with its high forbidding walls and towers, its beautiful gardens of shrubbery and flowers, and, inside, the numerous halls filled with portraits of the Warwick ancestors, is a veritable paradise of splendor. Out of the different windows of the castle there are magnificent views of the surrounding valley with glimpses here and there of the little Avon where it worms its way out from among the trees. The castle is still occupied by the Earl of Warwick, but during his absence visitors are admitted, a concession which reflects great credit upon the democracy of the owner. We did not have the pleasure of seeing Lady Warwick, but we saw her portrait, and if it is a fair likeness, she is undoubtedly one of the most beautiful women in England; for England is not noted, in these modern days, for beautiful women.





Tower of London



IN ENGLAND AND SCOTLAND—Tower of London—Home of Shakespeare—  
Warwick Castle—Melrose Abbey



Kenilworth, made famous by Scott's novel bearing that name, is a castle, now in ruins, about eight miles from Warwick. All that remains of the once magnificent structure are three towers, more or less brokenly connected by ivy-covered walls. These three towers were built at different times, the first in the fourteenth, the last in the first of the eighteenth century. But the most interesting fact in connection with this old castle is that it was the home of the Earl of Leicester, the favorite of Queen Elizabeth. There is a story that the Earl once entertained the Queen there for nineteen days. Great preparations were made for the occasion, the Earl going so far as to erect a new tower for the Queen to stay in and to make a breach in the wall through which she might pass. The prospects seemed most brilliant for the Earl until one night when he and his gentlemen guests were making merry in an upper chamber, Elizabeth, while walking in the gardens, came upon Amy Robsart, to whom the Earl was secretly married, but whom he had kept locked in a dungeon in a distant part of the castle. By bribing the guard she had gotten out of her prison and was about to make good her escape when she came upon her high and mighty rival. Of course that put an end to the festivities. Elizabeth returned to London and Amy Robsart was carried away to her death. This formed the basis of Scott's great novel.

Other prisoners besides Amy Robsart were confined in the dungeon of Kenilworth Castle. There were Robert Bruce, the Scottish patriot, and the Duchess of Gloucester, who languished in a cell twenty-five feet deep, without light or fresh air for two years. When one thinks of the horrible atrocities practiced upon their victims by those old nobles, one can not but approve Cromwell's action when he trained his cannon upon the castle walls and razed

them to the ground. The pains, trouble and expense to which people went in the good old times, seem almost ridiculous to us to-day. We should congratulate ourselves that though we may not have the grace and polish and so-called culture of those times, still we do not have to spend our time and wealth protecting ourselves against our fellowmen. There is just enough left of Kenilworth Castle to preserve its romance and to remind us of the way things "used to be."

#### STRATFORD-ON-AVON.

If, at Kenilworth we find relics of wealth and pomp and war, at Stratford we observe only evidences of poverty, humbleness and peace. Two greater extremes could hardly be found anywhere. William Shakespeare was born amid surroundings that we of the present day could but call abject. In the house of his birth there are stone and earthen floors, low ceilings, and walls uncovered with plaster, to say nothing of paper. The cooking was probably done in the dining room, while the youthful William climbed a ladder up into his garret room at night. But in spite of these unpretentious surroundings there emanated therefrom a genius such as the world had never known and who outshone his chivalric and pompous neighbor, Leicester, as far as day does the night. The Shakespeare house is too well known to need any description. It is a simple structure of plaster and wood, lighted by narrow windows of diamond-shaped glass.

About a mile from the Shakespeare house, across the meadows, is the home of Anne Hathaway, a low, rambling, thatched cottage. Here various relics of Shakespearean days are exhibited to the public at the inevitable price of 6d. There young Shakespeare sat at one end of the fire place with Miss Hathaway at the other

end, and here he wooed and won her with the fire between them. That, too, was in ye good olde daes.

It was in Stratford that Shakespeare was buried. His tomb is in the chancel of Trinity church, a modest country chapel of the church of England. On a slate-colored slab bearing the author's name, together with the dates of his birth and death, are these words, roughly cut into the stone:

*Good frend, for Jesus sake forbear*

*To digg ye dust encloased heare.*

*Blesse be ye man yt spares aes stones*

*And curst be he yt moves my bones.*

This is the only notice of the dramatist to be found in the church. In addition there is a statue and a memorial theatre. Among the portraits of famous actors found in the theatre, England is represented by David Garrick; America by Edwin Booth, Lawrence Barrett and Miss Ada Rehan. Covering the walls of the various rooms of this building are paintings of scenes in the various Shakespearean plays. The town of Stratford is one single memorial in itself. Every hotel, every store, every public house bears the name of Shakespeare. Here is another and more shining example of a man like Gray, who, amid simple surroundings, by a few strokes of his pen, made his name immortal and his birth and burial place a Mecca for pilgrims for nearly three hundred years.

#### ROADS, PRODUCTS, RAILROADS, ETC.

In driving through England, one is impressed by the magnificent roads, the most remote of which would put our Columbia streets to shame. English roads are made of macadam, receiving a new coat each year. There is an annual expense of about \$250 per mile, which is paid by taxes upon the abutting landowners. The

government has charge of the funds and the improvements, and this is the plan we must pursue in Missouri if we ever expect to have the same kind of roads.

Wheat, oats, barley, and timothy seem to be the chief English crops. They are cultivated on a very small scale, but every inch of ground is used and weeds are an unknown quantity. We have not seen a stalk of corn since we left America. Fences are either of stone, hedge or wire. Timber is too scarce to build rail or plank fences.

English railroads are entirely different from ours. Cars are built on the compartment plan, each division holding about eight persons. This is very pleasant when you have a party large enough to fill up the whole carriage, as they call it, but it would not be so nice if a man were locked up there with one of his worst enemies. No tickets are collected while the train is in motion; they are either taken at the beginning or end of the journey. Passengers never see the conductor or any other employes of the railway except the collector who bobs up occasionally when the train stops.

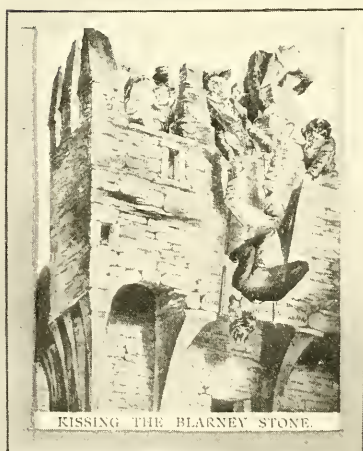
These are only a few of the peculiarities to be noticed in traveling through England. An endless number might be mentioned; in fact, the whole country is different from ours. It is older and better improved, and we have much to learn from its experience and history.

EDWIN SYDNEY STEPHENS.

Killarney, Ireland, August 3, 1904.







IN IRELAND

## IRELAND.



**IRELAND, BEAUTIFUL BUT BLIGHTED.**

In natural scenery and picturesqueness Ireland is superior to England, but in agriculture, in cities and in the condition of the people she is the inferior of the two. Here is a country with apparently fertile fields, splendid waterways, and inhabited by a people who, under normal conditions, have proven themselves able to cope fairly well with other peoples. But this beautiful country is not well improved, its fields are not cultivated; its cities do not look prosperous and the remnants of its population have the forlorn appearance of lost hopes. For this condition of affairs England is largely to blame, though not wholly. By her system of landlords and tenants she has stifled enterprise in the Irish farmer and driven him from the country. Most of the young men and women come to America, while the elders are content to remain at home and eke out an existence at about \$2.50 per week or less. The average weekly wages of operatives in the linen and lace factories is from \$2.50 to \$4.00 for men and \$1.25 for women and girls. The rent of land has been so high that with no hope of ever owning an acre of the soil he was cultivating, the farmer has foresworn all manner of improvement and many have abandoned their farms to the old women and have moved into the cities. But at least England has realized that she has been injuring herself, and at the same time getting less and less out of Ireland. Parliament has recently passed a land law by which a tenant may obtain title to land after a certain number of years of renting and the payment in annual instalments of whatever balance may remain. The landlord is compelled to sell to the tenant at a price to be determined by arbitration if the parties to the transaction cannot

agree upon terms. The conveyance is made by the government and in case the tenant does not have enough to pay for the land in full, it takes a mortgage. In this way all difficulties between landlords and tenants are avoided.

#### FARMS, HOUSES, PEAT PRODUCTS, ETC.

The average Irish farm covers about four acres and this is divided by hedge or stone fences into five or six small lots, in which graze one or two goats and a donkey. Then there is the inevitable patch of potatoes which seems to be about the only cultivated crop they have. Occasionally you see a half-acre of oats or barley, but it is the exception. Women are seen working in the little hay fields and hoeing in the potato patches. A portion of nearly every farm is devoted to the digging of peat, the chief article of fuel in Ireland. The process of mining this fuel is very simple. With the use of an ordinary spade, blocks of sod and earth are cut out of the ground and piled up in the sun to dry. Then they are ready for burning and the oldest woman in the family loads some of them on a two-wheeled cart, hitches a donkey to it and starts off to the nearest village to exchange her product for groceries.

The Irish farmhouse contains a kitchen, bedroom, pig pen and cow shed. Two rooms embrace all these. Nearly all the houses have thatched roofs and plastered walls. In one end of the kitchen—living room—is a small fire-place, where the family meal is cooked. Peat is invariably used both for heating and cooking. It makes a fire very similar to that of hard coal. Peat is incipient coal.

The Irish farmer's daily budget is very simple. On Sunday he and his family have half a pig's head, bread made of flour,

two eggs for the father and mother, and goat's milk for the children. On Monday the family generally dines upon the remnants of Sunday's feast; the remainder of the week they do without meat, eating eggs and bread and drinking milk.

#### IRISH METHODS OF TRANSPORTATION.

The only beast of burden is the donkey. He pulls the plow in the potato patch, hauls the peat to market and the farmer's family to church. He is the most abused inhabitant of the country and doubtless he holds his unenviable position because of his docility. Any other animal, even a Missouri mule, would rebel against the treatment that this poor beast receives. It is a common sight to see one little donkey pulling a cart loaded with four or five men, one of them sitting almost on his back, and flogging him with a two-inch sapling.

Everything is on two wheels in Ireland. Instead of cabs, they have jaunting cars, two-wheeled carts with a seat for two people over each wheel. These vehicles are by far the best ones for seeing the country and the cities. Being very light a horse can carry them at a greater speed than a cab. This two-wheeled system extends to the family vehicles, too. Hardly any one rides in a carriage or covered buggy, but all classes, from the farmer with his donkey to the banker with his rubber-tired "car," use the other kind. Even the heavy transfer wagons in the cities are on two wheels. It may be very convenient, but the inventor of the system certainly was not a member of an American humane society.

#### THE CITIES OF IRELAND.

There are three principal cities in Ireland: Dublin, Belfast, and Cork. Like the country districts, they show signs of much

poverty and little wealth. This is especially true of Cork, which is the most typical of the country. The buildings are plain and the shops are small and dingy. You see no liveried carriages in the Irish cities such as you see in London and other English cities. Dublin and Cork are very dirty. The former is divided by a river which is an open sewer. Besides this, the streets and houses have the appearance of neglect and uncleanness. Belfast is the most prosperous looking and at the same time the cleanest city in the country. It looks more American than any city we have seen. Besides being one of the largest shipbuilding centers in the world, Belfast is where we get our finest linen.

#### BLARNEY CASTLE.

The four most popular places in Ireland are Blarney Castle, Glengariff, the Lakes of Killarney and the Giants' Causeway. Blarney Castle, which contains the famous Blarney Stone, is about eight or ten miles from Cork, in the south of Ireland. The Castle is now deserted and partially destroyed, but by climbing one hundred and eight steps in a winding stair you can reach the top of the tower, where the magic stone is. I know of no better way to describe the position of the stone than to say that it forms a part of the base of a collar which encircles the top of the tower, and is too large for it by about twelve inches. By lying on your back on the top of the tower wall and grasping the two iron rods that support the stone you can lower yourself to a sufficient osculatory position. This is the present way of kissing the Blarney Stone, and it is not very difficult, especially when you are held firmly by both feet and have the support of your hands in addition. Formerly, however, it was a more serious operation, which consisted of lowering oneself over the outside of the collar instead



of approaching from the inside. The tradition about the stone is expressed in the following lines:

“There is a stone there, whoever kisses,  
Oh! he never misses to grow eloquent.  
'Tis he may clamber to a lady's chamber  
Or become a member of Parliamint.  
“A clever spouter he'll shure turn out, or  
An out-and-outer to be let alone.  
Don't hope to hinder him, or to bewilder him;  
Shure he's a pilgrim from the Blarney Stone.”

Like all other feudal castles, Blarney has its dungeons, but hers are in a better state of preservation than any others we have seen. Each cell is just about large enough for one man to crouch down in. Light and air come through a hole about two and a half inches in diameter. The niches in which the prison chains were fastened are still there and show that, once a prisoner was bound, there was faint hope of his escape. But perhaps the most interesting feature about this old castle is a subterranean passage which lies directly under the tower. We have all read in novels of these mysterious entrances, but never thought of them apart from the general fabrication of an imaginative mind. Here, however, is the thing in reality. The passage is about ninety feet long and varies in height from two to four feet. It was evidently used to connect the dungeons with the tower and to afford a place of safety in case the castle was attacked. A narrow staircase leading up out of the passage is now closed, but was formerly used to connect this part with rest of the castle.

#### GLENGARIFF.

Glengariff is a beautiful little place situated at the head of Bantry Bay, an arm of the Atlantic ocean, in Southern Ireland, which

extends up into the mountains. There is nothing there but the scenery and an old fort built in 1815 to protect the harbor from the attacks of French vessels. High mountains, beautifully wooded, and cut here and there by tumbling torrents of water form the chief beauty of Glengariff. There is no town there but only three or four hotels, supported almost entirely by tourists who come and spend a day and night. There are no railroads in this section; all traveling is done by coach.

#### THE LAKES OF KILLARNEY.

Glengariff is in the county of Cork. Just over the mountain range lies the county of Kerry whose chief attraction is the Lakes of Killarney. This is the most beautiful section of Ireland. Nestled down between high mountains are three large lakes, each about three miles long and from one to two miles wide. The town of Killarney is entirely dependent upon the trade of tourists who visit the lakes. The place is a typical pleasure resort and is well supplied with hotels. In fact the hotels do the largest part of the business. The stores in Killarney would hardly be worthy of a cross-roads postoffice in Missouri. The streets are filled with old women and their donkey carts and with tattered and mud-bedraggled children, who will follow a foreigner for a mile begging for a penny. These youngsters are met with all over Ireland. On the mountain roads they will follow the coaches for miles, calling out something that sounds like, "something for beer, sir." At least that is what some American ladies understood it to be; but when they began exclaiming their horror that such small children should indulge in strong drink, the driver broke out in a laugh and explained that they were saying "something if you please, sir." By the way it is difficult to understand the Irish

or the English language as spoken by many of these people. The language is the same as ours, but the emphasis and pronunciation is very different.

But to return to Killarney. Like Glengariff the chief attraction of the place is the scenery, although it is claimed that there is good fishing in the lakes. Few tourists, however, go there for anything but to see the lakes and the mountains. The three lakes are called the Upper, Lower and Middle. Their beauty is best appreciated by rowing upon them. In this way one can appreciate the size of the mountains rising straight up from the edge of the water. The different colors of green formed by the variety of vegetable growth on the mountain sides are most pleasing.

The climate of southern Ireland is delightfully cool even in August, and it is a very pleasant place to spend the summer. The only drawback to it is that rain falls very nearly every day and with very little warning. But it stops as suddenly as it comes, and, strange to say, no matter how wet you get, you suffer no ill effects. Killarney, with its lakes, its mountains, and numerous good hotels, is perhaps the best summer resort in Ireland. The next most popular resort is Portrush and with it the Giants' Causeway. These are at the opposite end of the island at the most northern point of Ireland. Portrush, a favorite bathing place, is remarkable for its excellent beach. A great many people from England spend the summer there.

#### THE TROUBLE WITH IRELAND.

This finishes our travels in Ireland. We have gone from Dublin to Cork, and from Bantry to Portrush. Between these places lies some of the prettiest scenery, and apparently the most fertile soil that we have seen since we left America. In such a region,

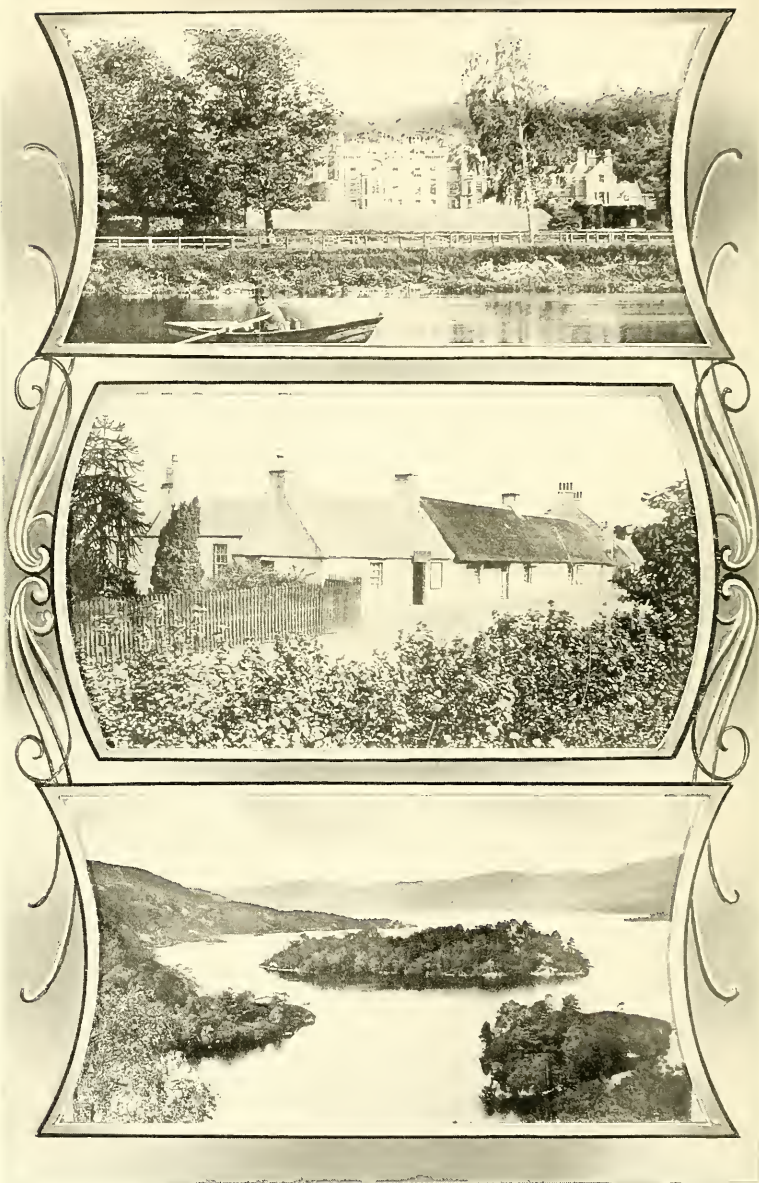
especially as it is so closely allied to England, one might expect to find a dense and thriving population. But on the contrary we have traveled miles and miles without seeing half a dozen houses, and those were of the poorest kind. Ireland is very thinly settled. Only here and there is a village with ten or twelve little thatched cottages. In fifty years the country has lost half its population. In 1855 it had a population of eight millions; now it has four millions. Most of the young men and women have gone to America, while their parents and grandparents have remained at home to live in poverty. A town of Ireland fills one with compassion and pity for these unfortunate people. When he remembers the poets, the statesmen, the orators, the men and women of genius in all lines who render the name of Ireland illustrious one can but be impressed not only with sympathy, but with a certain indignation that the cruel hand of fortune should have dealt so harshly with a people beloved and admired the world over.

In wit and humor, in the sparkle of spontaneous genius, in eloquence and in the realm of the emotional and the imagination the Irishman holds a unique place in the world's history. He has not only enriched literature, but he has intensified patriotism and has made love of country a holier sentiment. May the day not be distant when he may be relieved from the thraldom in which he has been so long held, and when his emerald isle may emerge from the shadow, which was never darker than it is to-day.

EDWIN SYDNEY STEPHENS.

Belfast, August 8, 1904.





*SCOTLAND—Abbottsford, Home of Sir Walter Scott—Ayr, Home of Robert Burns—Loch Lomond*

SCOTLAND.





## SCOTLAND AND THE BRITISH ISLES GENERALLY.

The land of literature is the land of beautiful scenery. Shakespeare had his "gentle Avon," Wordsworth, Southey and Coleridge their Windermere, Ambleside, and Derwentwater, Robert Burns, his "Bonnie Doone," and Sir Walter Scott, his Midlothian. There seems to be something in the very mountains and lakes of northern England to fill the soul with song and verse. There is Lake Windermere lying peacefully in the green-wooded hills of Furness, a narrow sheet of water winding for fourteen miles in and out of shady coves and decorated here and there with beautiful little islands. A man could hardly help being poetical amid such surroundings. Poetry crops out in the names common to this section—Windermere, Ambleside, Grasmere, and Keswick. These were the haunts of the English Lake poets. It was here that Wordsworth and his sister and Coleridge delighted to take their strolls through the cool sequestered glades, and follow the winding paths over the neighboring mountains. No doubt in so doing they would labor tediously up a long incline and finally come to the summit where they could look down on one side and see the green valleys, dotted here and there with cozy little cottages, and across on the opposite mountain they could see perpendicular white streaks where torrents tumbled down to water the meadows below. On the other side, across the green tops of pine, birch and yew trees they saw the lakes, great basins of water held high above the sea in the lap of the mountains. And if the poets strayed as far as Glaramara they looked down into the peace-

ful Derwentwater surrounding an ancient castle with traditions inviting poetic celebration. Who could be prosaic here? Even we cold and commercial Americans are thrilled with its beauty.

AYR, THE HOME OF BURNS.

If Windermere and Derwentwater were grand enough to inspire Wordsworth, Southey and Coleridge, Ayr and the Doone were simple enough to give birth to "Tam O'Shanter" and the "Cotter's Saturday Night." Along the banks of the Bonnie Doone the poet Burns was born, reared and buried. It was about this region that most of his poetry was written. There still stands the humble cot where he was born and where his father, the "priest-like farmer" lived and died. There the poet whiled away an aimless life, making poetry, as he ploughed in the fields, as he wandered over the mountains or while he loafed about the village tavern. There are the ruins of the old Allaway Kirk where Tam O'Shanter looked in on the night of his terrible ride and saw Old Nick directing the witches' dance; and there are the Twa Brigs O'Doone that the poet has made so famous by his verses. It was the simple things that inspired Burns, and no matter what he might be doing, if his sentiments were once aroused, he stopped to express them in poetry. In this way his Ode to a Mouse where are found the famous lines: "The best laid schemes o' mice and men gang aft a-gley" and that other unmentionable ode where he exclaims:

*"Oh wad the power some giftie gie us  
To see ourselves as ithers see us."*

were written. No one but a genius could have drawn such eloquent sentiment from such simple surroundings.

## THE SCOTCH LAKES AND THE TROSSACHS.

Within fifty miles of Glasgow lies the most majestically beautiful scenery in Britain. For some twenty or thirty miles there is one succession of clear and placid lakes, heather-covered mountains and green-pastured valleys. On the south is Loch Lomond stretching for twenty miles through the foothills until it reaches the majestic Ben Lomond which crowns it. The lake is not monotonously regular, but finds its way in and out of shady alcoves and around projecting headlands, presenting constantly new and beautiful pictures to the eye.

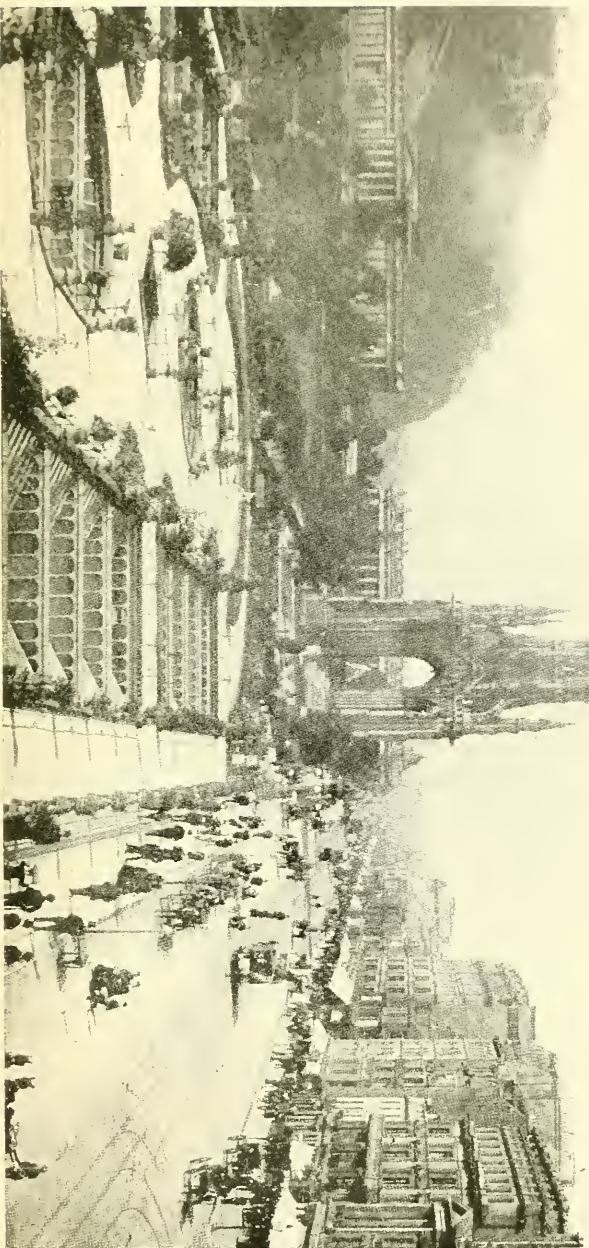
At the head of Loch Lomond we left the lake and ascended the mountain range. From the top we looked back and saw Ben Lomond silhouetted in the morning sun and through a gap in the range we caught a glimpse of the lake stretching off to the south. After we had followed the winding mountain road with mountains rising on both sides, all specked with grazing sheep and cattle, we came in view of Ben Venue with its massive brow frowning upon the gentle Lake Katrine as she lay glittering in the sun hundreds of feet below. A few more miles of coaching, a short sail across a beautiful lake and we were among the Trossachs. Here we took another coach and ascended the mountain range again. It was a glorious day with the sun shining bright upon the torrent-washed mountain side and the thermometer hovering comfortably about seventy. So we climbed and climbed, surrounded on all sides by mountain ranges, heather purpled and green. As far as the eye could reach there was nothing but the wilderness of peaks over-hanging a narrow valley below us. Finally we reached the summit of our climb and began to descend,

still with our view of the outside world cut off. But suddenly as we rounded a curve there burst upon us a panorama of marvellous beauty and grandeur. Stretching for thirty miles from north to south, and rising gently towards the west lay the rich valley of the Forth. The golden waving grain, the green and rolling meadows, the pasture land watered by the serpentine little Forth formed an enormous cornucopia of plenty and beauty.

At the foot of the mountains we came upon the little village of Aberfoyle where we took the train for Edinburgh.

#### EDINBURGH.

This is the greatest city we have seen. I do not mean that it is great in point of size or by reason of its commercial importance, but on account of its beauty, its quaintness and its historical significance. The city is situated on several hills whose slopes are not built up with rambling houses such as we have in some of our hilly American cities, but they are terraced and covered with beautiful flowers and shrubbery. Princess street, the main thoroughfare in Edinburgh, is said to be one of the most beautiful streets in the world. It is lined on one side with business houses, which, by the way, have considerable architectural beauty; and on the opposite side are the Princess Gardens, the public park of the city. To the west rises the commanding Castle Rock, the home of the ancient sovereigns of Scotland. Next to the tower of London Edinburgh Castle is the most historically important place in Great Britain. Here and at Holyrood palace not far away Mary Queen of Scots resided. In the tower on Castle Rock the Duke of Argyle was imprisoned prior to his execution. The castle is now used as military barracks and is of course kept in a perfect state of preservation. Holyrood Palace, the more sumptuous of the



SCENE ON PRINCESS STREET, EDINBURGH, SCOTLAND—Showing Monument To Sir Walter Scott





two royal residences, is still used by the King and Queen when they visit Edinburgh. It was in this palace that Rizzio was murdered through the conspiracy of Lord Darnley and the enemies of the ill-fated queen.

Edinburgh, like London, is full of monuments and memorials of Scotland's and England's great men. On the top of one of its many hills stands a majestic tower in memory of Lord Nelson and in the beautiful Princess Gardens is the splendid memorial to Sir Walter Scott. It was around Edinburgh that many of his stories centered, notably the "Heart of Midlothian." The heroine of this novel was imprisoned in the central part of the city.

My impressions of Edinburgh, before I saw it, were that it was a smoke-clouded city, bristling with church steeples, but these impressions were erroneous. Although it is a city of churches, it is not gloomy at all. On the contrary it is perhaps the brightest and freshest city in the British Isles. The air is pure and bracing and when the bright sunlight falls upon the beautiful terraces and flower gardens it gives them the freshness of spring.

#### ABBOTSFORD, DRYBURGH AND MELROSE.

Not far from Edinburgh are Abbotsford, Melrose Abbey and Dryburgh Abbey, the home, the favorite haunt, and the grave of Sir Walter Scott. Abbotsford is an ideal author's home. It commands a magnificent view of the Tweed with mountains rising in the background, while surrounding the mansion are woods and gardens, the latter designed and cared for by the author himself. The house is a veritable museum of armor, pictures and curios. Scott seemed to have a great fondness for collecting little mementos to which any sentiment attached. For instance he had in his library a whole case of trinkets presented to him by

his various friends. There are the writing case and pen of Napoleon, locks of hair of the Duke of Argyle and Bonnie Prince Charlie, the snuff box of his old forester and even the skull of Robert Bruce.

The house at Abbotsford was designed entirely by Sir Walter and most of the beautiful carving on the ceilings was copied from Melrose Abbey amid whose ruins the author delighted to sit by the hour weaving the plots of his novels. This old Abbey, now a wreck, was built in the twelfth century and has several times been destroyed and rebuilt. First Edward II partially demolished it; then it was rebuilt by David I. of Scotland only to be set fire to by Richard II. after camping his army within it over night. Then Cromwell, the iconoclast, helped to complete the destruction of this beautiful temple. For a long time it was used as a public quarry and it is said that there is hardly an old house in Melrose that does not contain some of the abbey's stones.

Melrose Abbey teems with historical associations. Within its walls are buried Kings and Queens and mighty warriors. Here lie the remains of King Alexander II. and of the black Douglas together with the bodies of a great number of this illustrious family. But the most interesting fact connected with these old ruins is that it was under the chancel that the magic heart of Bruce was buried. Under a simple headstone without any protection, or memorial tablet it lies in the center of the chancel. Melrose Abbey with its crumbling walls and inspiring traditions and Abbotsford on the Tweed, with its books and armor and mementos, combined with indomitable energy and determination made Walter Scott, the author.

Not far away, in the ruins of Dryburgh Abbey, and in keeping with the tastes and sentiments of the author, Scott lies buried.

## SOME CONCLUSIONS AND COMPARISONS.

A trip through England, Ireland and Scotland has enabled us to draw some conclusions and to compare this country with our own. Scenically Ireland is the grandest, but Scotland the freshest and prettiest of the three countries. The mountains of Ireland are higher and more rugged than those of Scotland, while the lakes of Killarney are larger, but not so beautiful as Loch Lomond or Loch Katrine. The rivers of Ireland run with waters of an amber color, while those of Scotland are clear as crystal. The three countries as a whole afford more beautiful scenery than could be found in a similar space in the United States, but nowhere on this side is there to be found such grandeur and such gorgeous coloring as we have in the western part of our country.

Agriculturally, England is the superior section of the British Isles. She raises more different kinds of crops and at the same time in larger quantities than either of the other two. This is on account of the superiority of her soil. The peat and bog in Ireland and Scotland render a considerable part of them unfit for anything but grazing purposes. The only cultivated crops in Ireland are potatoes and oats. Scotland is almost entirely devoted to pasturage. On her hills sheep flourish in great numbers. There are occasional fields of oats, hay or turnips. England raises wheat, oats, barley and rye chiefly. Hay is also grown to a considerable extent. In richness of soil the United States is superior even to England, but over here they cultivate more intensely than we do, fertilizing thoroughly and tilling every inch of ground. No corn is cultivated at all.

In climate it would be hard to choose between England and Ireland. Scotland is very pleasant during the summer but grows

intensely cold at other times. In the two lower countries there are no great extremes either of heat or cold. It is considered "terrifically hot" if the thermometer reaches eighty-five and "terrifically cold" if it falls to five above zero.

British city hotels are inferior to those in America. They are not provided with as many conveniences as ours and are, generally speaking, more expensive. On the other hand the English hotels in the smaller towns are superior to ours. They are more home-like and the service is better. English country hotels are largely under the management of women. They secure the guests, keep the books and even attend the bar which is part and parcel of the hotel office. They perform the functions of their office as well as men and with more courtesy.

The railroads are so different from ours that it is difficult to compare them on the basis of quality. Most of the trains contain small compartments or carriages, with a capacity of from six to ten persons, which are entered from the side; so that an English car, instead of having a door at each end, has a long row of doors on each side. Tickets are collected at the station when the train stops. There is no way, on most trains, for the ticket collector to go from one compartment to another while the train is moving. Trains run very rapidly and as the country is very small most people travel in the daytime; there is therefore little need of sleeping cars.

In street car facilities the United States is ahead of any of these countries. In many places they are still using horse cars and buses and where there are electric or cable cars they run very slow. Passengers ride on the top of omnibuses and cars in preference to sitting inside.

England is an older country than America and the people do

things more deliberately and with greater precision. But our country is larger, and more prolific and we can afford to move rapidly and waste somewhat. Perhaps when we are as old as our mother we may have to do as she does.

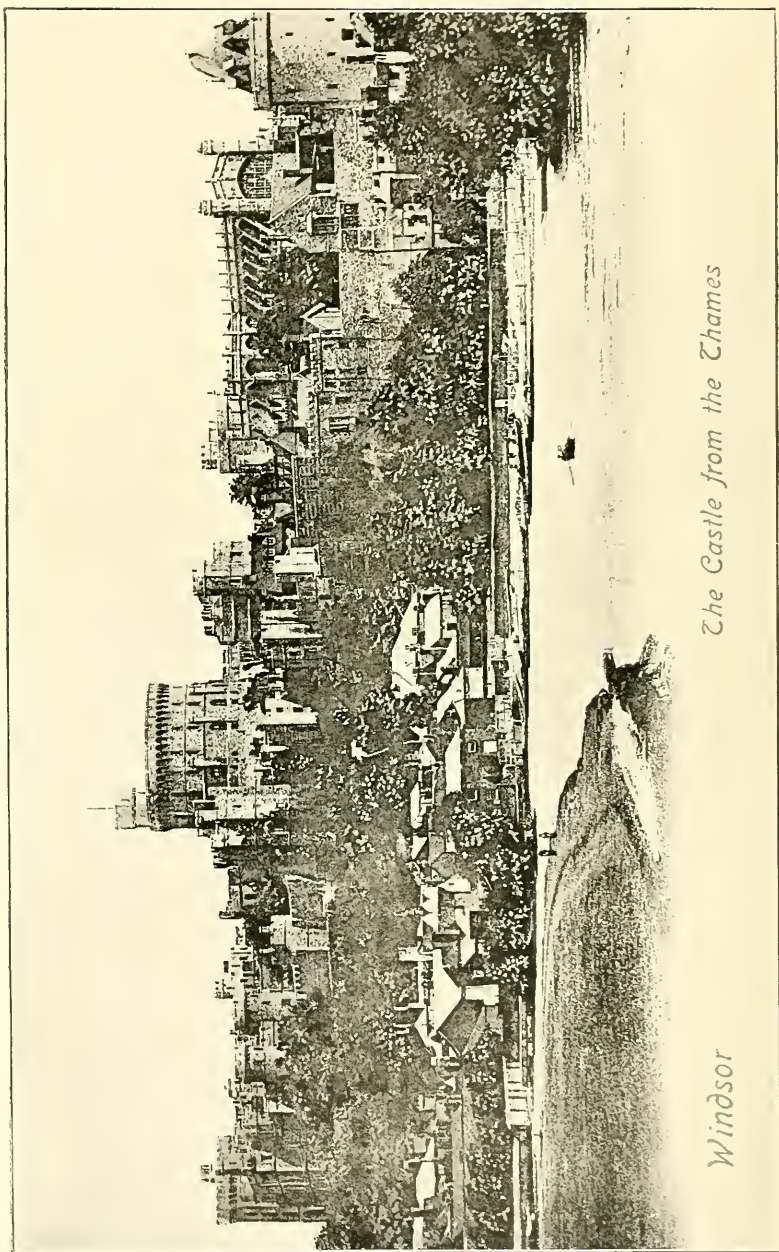
EDWIN SYDNEY STEPHENS.

London, August 17, 1904.









*Windsor*

*The Castle from the Thames*

EUROPE IN GENERAL.



## LXVII.

### SOME THINGS SEEN AND HEARD IN EUROPE.

To the American Europe is more interesting than America. This is because it is novel, has so much more history and so many more objects of interest to entertain and instruct, situated in close and convenient relation to each other. There is not so much hurry and one is not jostled about as in this country. More time and opportunity are afforded to see things and the people are more courteous and less brusque.

#### THE RAILROADS.

Railroad travel is safer than in the United States. There is rarely a railroad collision and trains run on time. Nearly all the railroads have double tracks and the road beds are excellent, as are the rails and ties, the latter in several countries being of iron. In Great Britain the railroads, in crossing public highways, either run above them on bridges or under them. On the continent there are gates and sentinels at every crossing. The cars in England are but little over half as large as those of the United States, and are divided into compartments, entrance being from the side. The smaller freight cars are used because they can be easily lowered into ships for the purpose of unloading and loading them. Distances are short, most of the freight is hauled to the British ports by steamships and there is not the need of railroads that there is in this country. The trains run rapidly, but their stops at stations are quite long. There are no bells on the engines.

The way a train starts from a station is something novel as well as amusing. There is a series of warnings. First some one rings a dinner bell. Then the guard or conductor blows a mouth whistle. Then the engine whistles. This is followed by some one blowing a horn, and by the engine whistling again, and then the train may start or it may not. The system for handling baggage is abominable. In fact there is no system. There is no checking. Trunks are piled into the baggage car and each traveler claims his own at the end of his journey. The result is confusion and inevitable loss of baggage. Most travelers carry only hand baggage, a fact that adds to the burden of travel. Tickets are taken up at the end of the journey and not while it is in progress.

#### GOOD ROADS.

In public highways Europe is in advance of the United States. A dirt or even a gravel road is almost unknown. All are of macadam or stone and from eighteen inches to two or three feet in thickness. In many places they are embowered by trees and are very beautiful. They are kept clean and are as smooth as floors. There are no tollgates. The roads are kept up by the government at a cost of about \$250 per mile annually. But automobiles practically monopolize them and have nearly run all other modes of conveyances off of them.

#### NO COUNTRY PEOPLE.

Almost every body in Europe lives in the towns. There are but few farm houses, and outside the great estates of the nobility there are few residents of the country. The people live in the cities, towns or villages and from thence go out into the country

and operate their farms. Many of these villages have a deserted look in the day time, but swarm with life at night. It is strange to see the rural districts of countries two thousand years old practically uninhabited. The older a people the greater their desire to gather in communities and the less practicable is a scattered population.

#### SMALL FARMING.

Europe is for the most part a garden truck country. There are no large farms as in America, unless there be the exceptions of big oat or barley or wheat fields in some of the estates of the nobility in England. Indian corn is not grown in Great Britain or Northern Europe and in a very limited way in Italy, France or Spain. The chief products are potatoes, cabbage, turnips, hay, oats, barley and wheat, and farms are very small, in many places mere garden patches. In Italy and Switzerland and much of Germany and France grapes are the chief, almost the only product.

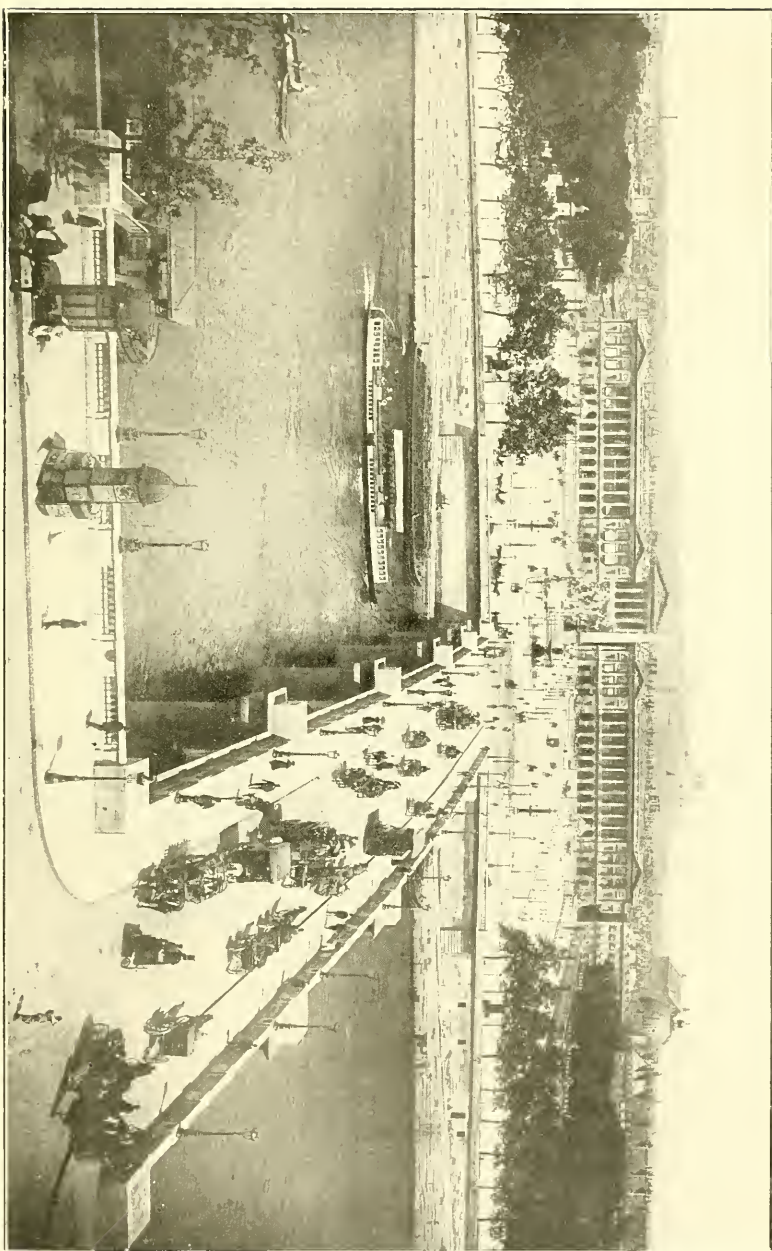
#### FRUIT.

There is not much fruit of any kind in England, but a great deal upon the continent. I do not recall having seen an apple or a peach orchard in Great Britain, and but few in Germany, but the peaches and apples and grapes of Italy are excellent, unsurpassed in the world. Vineyards literally cover the bluffs along the Rhine, and all European streams and Italy and Switzerland are almost a continuous vineyard. In Italy the grape vines are run upon trees which are planted at convenient distances for that purpose.

## BEASTS OF BURDEN.

In Great Britain the beasts of burden are the horse and donkey ; in Belgium, Germany and Switzerland the horse, the donkey, the cow and the dog and in Italy oxen are used almost exclusively for draught work and for plowing, while little horses haul the cabs in the cities. In Naples every horse is small and of the masculine gender, and their endurance is astonishing. It is not uncommon to see one of these little creatures whirling at full speed a vehicle loaded with four or five men. In Brussels, dogs nearly always muzzled, are driven to carts. At times you will see a dog hitched up with a donkey, and again with a woman. An interesting spectacle is that of horses hauling vehicles while a basket full of oats is suspended from their heads. They eat as they go about. The best horses in Europe are to be found in France. They are imported chiefly from the Argentine Republic of South America and are nearly as large as the Norman horse. In Naples horses are driven without bits in their mouths. A contrivance that presses against the head just above its mouth is used. In Paris the tails of nearly all the horses are cut off and the horses hitched to cabs have little sheep bells suspended under their throats. Their jingling are a perpetual babel of noise. The average European is merciless in his treatment of dumb brutes. But he is also careful in feeding them. Their food is weighed and fed regularly, their stables and stalls kept scrupulously clean and hence they are not troubled with flies. Besides the climate of Europe is more favorable to horses than is that of our country and they can endure much more. While not always the most beautiful they are the swiftest, the most powerful and the toughest horses in the world. The mule is practically





*BRIDGE ACROSS THE SEINE—Near Place De La Concorde in Paris*



unknown in Europe, but the amusing little donkey is everywhere. Cows serve the double purpose of family milchers and doing draught work.

PLACES OF INTEREST.

The most interesting country in Europe is Great Britain. All parts of England and Scotland are full of interest to Americans. The most attractive scenery in Great Britain is in Southern Ireland in Glengariff and the lakes of Killarney and in Northern England and in Scotland in the region of Lake Windermere, Lomond and Katrine and in the Trossachs. Edinburgh in many respects is the most attractive of British cities. Next to Great Britain, Italy has more points of interest to travelers. The cities of Venice and Rome are most fascinating. But the place which is most attractive in Italy to travelers is Pompeii, the buried city, while next in interest to it is Vesuvius. Paris is more interesting to the tourist than London, and the palace at Versailles, south of Paris, is probably the most beautiful spot in all Europe. In natural scenery Switzerland surpasses all other countries of Europe if not of the world.

AS TO CLEANLINESS.

A gentleman who was my companion upon the steamer returning from Europe related an experience which illustrates the remarkable cleanliness of the European and the results of it. He spends each summer at Frankfort and had noticed that the hams at the hotel were unusually sweet and well flavored. He inquired the reason, and the man who reared and fed the hogs which yielded the meat showed him the great care he took in feeding and caring for them. They were only fed the cleanliest food,

no slops or decaying vegetable matter of any kind. The place where they were confined, instead of being the ordinary filthy pen was kept comparatively clean at all times. There was a granitoid place which was washed daily and every night the hog was carefully bedded down on clean straw, and so neat in his habits did the animal become that if at any time the keeper failed to provide fresh straw he would turn over the old straw he had slept on the night previously and himself place the fresh straw on top. Moreover the hog himself was treated to a bath and rubbed off once a week. The result was that his skin was as tender and clean as a human being's, and his flesh after he was butchered was pure, tender and juicy and far more delicious than the American hog. The stock pens at Berlin and other European cities are kept clean and special attention is paid to keeping cattle as well as hogs and sheep in a tidy condition. The result of all this is not only to obviate diseases, but to secure a more satisfactory meat than is possible when methods are less cleanly. This same cleanliness as to hogs and cattle prevails throughout England, Germany and most of Northern Europe, but does not exist in Italy or Turkey. Few places are filthier than Naples or Constantinople.

#### THE CLIMATE.

The proximity to the sea gives nearly all European countries a constant supply of fresh, pure air and the northern latitudes relieve the summers of oppressive heat. The summer nights are invariably pleasant both in Great Britain and upon the continent. In Scotland, England and Ireland in July and August the weather is ideal, and in October it is equally pleasant in Italy. If the traveler will start in England in June and end in Italy in October he will be blessed with delightful weather at all times.

## HOTELS.

European hotels are very different from those in America. But they are very like each other. A hotel in England, Ireland and Scotland is practically duplicated in its methods of management all over the continent. The only difference is that in Great Britain outside of London the hotels are managed chiefly by women, while on the continent they are conducted by men. In England the clerks and cashiers are women, who sometimes also fill the place of barmaids. There are no lobbies in the hotels as in this country. The rooms are clean and neat, and the fare for the most part good. Meals are served a la carte or table d' hote at prices about the same as in the United States. Here are the three meals served in nine-tenths of the hotels of Europe: Breakfast—coffee and cold rolls and eggs or honey or marmalade; lunch—soup, roast-beef, chicken, dessert; dinner—soup, fish, roast-beef, vegetables, chicken, lettuce, dessert. Coffee as a rule is not good, and warm bread is unknown. Corn-bread and biscuit have never found their way across the Atlantic. As a rule waiters are men robed in dress-suits. Tipping is a nuisance that is universal. Waiters, porters, chambermaids, elevator and bell boys, all levy tribute upon travelers. Nowhere else in the world has the commercial value of politeness become such a fine art as with an European hotel employee. His smile, tone of voice, and general attitude embody a mute appeal which are well nigh irresistible. Hotel rates are about the same in Europe as in America. There are no barber shops or boot-blacks in the hotels. Barbers are called hairdressers and will come to one's room in the hotel and ply their avocation when sent for.

*Hotels in  
Europe are  
clean &  
well  
as in U.S.*

## AMERICANS IN EUROPE.

European railroads and hotels swarm with American tourists. Hence it becomes necessary for all employees to speak English, and there is no difficulty in getting about on account of ignorance of the language. But a knowledge of French or of German is very helpful. The traveler sometimes encounters situations where a lack of knowledge of the language renders him helpless. In these days of foreign travel it is important that every boy and girl should speak German and French and if possible Italian. The most important of these is French.

## NO FLIES OR MOSQUITOES.

One of the merits of Europe, especially of Great Britain and northern Europe, is its exemption from flies and mosquitoes. Possibly they may be there, but they did not exhibit themselves during the past summer. The only flies we saw were at Pompeii in Southern Italy and the only mosquitoes were in Venice. The absence of flies is attributed to the great cleanliness in the cities and the houses. The streets, stables and rear premises are kept clean at all times. There is also but little if any malaria in northern Europe and only in southern Europe in the rainy season.

## COURTESY AND CULTURE.

The average European is both courteous and cultivated. It matters not what his station in life, whether he be a nobleman or a hotel waiter, he enunciates distinctly, speaks correctly, and gives evidences of culture. Many of the employees at hotels and





*IN ITALY—The Coliseum and Forum in Rome—Pompeii and Bay of Naples*





upon the railroads are college graduates and speak several languages. Besides they are universally courteous and polite. There is an absence of that brusqueness characteristic of the average American who deals with the public. In Italy the men kiss each other on both cheeks when they meet, besides embracing one another, and are more affectionate than the women are one to the other.

## LXVIII.

### A LAST WORD ABOUT EUROPE.

Of European cities Paris is most popular with Americans. Many of the hotels are filled with American guests. The streets swarm with Americans, and it is the exceptional Parisian establishment in which some one does not speak English. The Champs Elysees, the broad thoroughfare extending from the Arc de Triomphe to the Place de la Concorde, and the garden of the Tuileries, now a public park, is the most beautiful street in the world. Beyond the Arc de Triomphe is the Bois de Boulogne, the Forest Park of Paris. The column Vendome, the tomb of Napoleon, the Notre Dame Cathedral and the Grand Opera are the chief features of interest. Architecturally and commercially the city is inferior to New York. The buildings are not specially handsome and the stores, fitly called "shops," contain less than can be found in those of any great American city. There are many jewelry and millinery stores, but practically everything they contain is in the front show windows. Socially and politically the city is impure and corrupt.

### AT SHAKESPEARE'S HOME.

One of the most interesting regions in all Europe is that wherein is situated Stratford-on-Avon, the birthplace of Shakespeare. Not far distant are Warwick and Kenilworth castles and the intervening country is picturesque and beautiful. The little river Avon flows through grassy banks and under bending elms and is a most delightful feature of the landscape. But Stratford itself, with its numerous spots and buildings so intimately associated with the life of the great dramatist, is a place from which the vis-

itor can scarcely tear himself away. There is the house, a plain two-story structure in which he was born, and there the little church in which his ashes rest. There also is a theater built as a memorial of him where his plays are enacted and there is a monument to his memory, upon which are chiseled these beautiful lines from his plays:

"Good night, sweet prince, and flights of angels sing thee to thy rest;

Consideration like an angel came and whipt the offending Adam out of him.

I am not only witty myself, but the cause that is in other men.

Out, out brief candle, life's but a walking shadow, a poor player that struts and frets his hour upon the stage and is heard no more."

There is something peculiarly touching and impressive to stand amid the scenes so closely related to the world's greatest genius and to note how humble and simple were his birth and life. A few days later we visited the birthplace and home of Robert Burns at Ayr and could but be impressed with the similarity between the homes and habits of life of these two who easily are the most honored of all British poets.

#### TWO IMPRESSIVE SPOTS.

The two places which left the deepest impress upon me were quite distant from each other and very different in the history they recalled and the sentiments they evoked. One was the country churchyard near Windsor and not far from London wherein Gray wrote and to which he dedicated his elegy. We visited it at near the close of day as the "glimmering landscape faded upon the sight" and when the holy hush of evening was in sympathy with

all the tender sentiments of that, the most remarkable of poems. We read the poem beneath "the yew tree's shade," within sight of "the ivy-mantled tower" and fancied we could hear the "drowsy tinklings" of "the distant folds." The curfew still "tolls the knell of parting day" at Windsor not far distant, and the picture of "the weary ploughman" and "the lowing herds" is as ever present as when the poem was written. It is said that Gray spent seven years in writing this poem. It gave his name to immortality.

Another spot which fills one with emotions thrilling and inexpressible is the palaces of the Caesars at Rome. Probably no other one place in the world calls up such interesting history as that in the center of modern Rome wherein lie the Tiber, the Forum, the Coliseum, the Circus Maximus, the Arches of Constantine and Titus and the palaces of Augustus Caesar, Domitian and Caligula. The work of exhuming has been in rapid progress of late years until nearly all the Forum has been dug up and it is possible now to get a definite idea not only of the splendid architecture of the period, but also of the general appearance of all the most interesting and important structures of ancient Rome. Standing amidst these classic ruins it is not difficult in imagination to repeople them with the kings, the senators, the orators, the soldiers, who once made Rome glorious.

#### SOME THINGS EUROPE DOES NOT HAVE.

It is difficult to get a drink of pure water in most of Europe and the wine is a poor substitute. The coffee is poor and so are the cigars. Cream is practically unknown, and milk is inferior. By the way, in Italy, notably in Naples, goat milk is drunk, and the goats are driven in herds to the dwellings and milked in front of them. Poor provisions are made for heating the hotels,

*this  
is not  
true*



*IN PARIS—Column Vendôme—Napoleon's Tomb—Arch of Triumph—The  
Madeliene and The Place de la Opéra*





and in some of the hotels the only light furnished is candles. Everywhere guests must supply their own soap.

## ART IN ITALY.

Italy is a country of vineyards and art. At stations along the railroad will be seen small shops where sculpture is made and sold, and the cities are filled with statuary and paintings. In Venice the most beautiful glass is manufactured and sold; in Florence Mosaics and in Naples coral and tortoise shells. All these cities teem with galleries of paintings and sculpture, ancient and modern. At the risk of offending the judgment of critics we must be permitted to express the opinion that the modern art is superior to the ancient.

## CROMWELL AND NAPOLEON.

The two great characters of modern times who have left the deepest impress upon the history of Europe are Oliver Cromwell and Napoleon Bonaparte. All of the titled monarchs of all the European nations have not wrought such changes in government or civilization or accomplished results so abiding or left such enduring fame as the great commoner of England and the little corporal from Corsica. And yet neither was of royal birth. Both owed their renown to their own indomitable energy and genius.

## WORK WOMEN TOO HARD.

The grudge I have against Belgium and Germany and Switzerland is that they put too much hard manual labor upon women. In these countries women plant, and plow, drive wagons, stack and load hay, in fact do all kinds of farm work, however burdensome. They seem to do more of this kind of work than do the

men. It is difficult to understand how they can do so much work of this kind and also care for their homes and rear children. They do not object to it, and appear to be healthy and strong, but the work is too hard for women.

#### EUROPEAN LANDSCAPES.

It would be difficult to imagine anything more picturesque than rural England. The smooth roads, lined with overlapping elms, the stone fences buried in ivy, the clear and beautiful streams, the green fields, the undulating country, the harmonious and equable distribution of forests, and fields or meadow, the tasteful architecture of the homes, and an occasional ruined castle make a combination of pleasing and attractive beauty not equalled on the continent or anywhere else. In Belgium, Germany and Italy the country, except in mountainous regions is flat and not specially attractive. All forests in Europe are young, and in France where a tree is cut down another one has to be planted in place of it.

#### RAILROAD TUNNELS.

There are few railroad tunnels in Great Britain for the reason that the country is not mountainous. But in Switzerland and Italy they are very numerous. In Switzerland the St. Gothard tunnel is nine and a half miles long and it requires eighteen minutes to run through it. Mount Cenis tunnel on the border between Italy and France is eight and a half miles long and the time in running through it is twenty-six minutes. Instead of running around mountains in Europe railroads go through them. Between Boulogne and Florence there is a constant succession of tunnels and between Pisa and Genoa there are ninety-eight in sixty-six miles.

## AS TO MORALS.

There is no more immorality in Europe than in America. While more wine and beer are drunk there is apparently less drunkenness than in our country where whiskey is the chief beverage. I do not remember to have seen a drunken man in Germany, Italy or France, but I saw many thousands drinking beer and wine. I did see drunken men in England and Scotland where whiskey is drunk. Religious conditions are, however, hardly as good as in our country. As to the honesty of the people the European is no worse than the American. The traveler suffers but little if any from attempts to defraud or swindle him.

## CONCERNING WOMEN.

If the truth must be told the European woman is not as pretty as the American woman. The hard outdoor work they have to do renders them more masculine. The prettiest women in Europe are in France, but even in that country there is a lack of that refinement and delicacy which is characteristic of American women. Usually when you see a pretty woman in Europe you can count on her being from America. The sight of women smoking cigarettes and carrying canes is one met with in Europe that rather shocks the sensibilities of the American.

## HOUSEKEEPING IN PARIS.

In Paris the cooks are in charge of the homes. They buy the provisions and supply the table, and by law are entitled to five per cent commission upon all purchases. In other words the tenants of the home board with the cooks who are paid to buy, cook and serve the food, the housekeeper making a separate arrange-

ment for the care of the rooms. Servants are nearly all white. There are very few negroes in Europe. Only the wealthy employ servants. The European is much more economical than the American.

#### AS TO BUILDINGS.

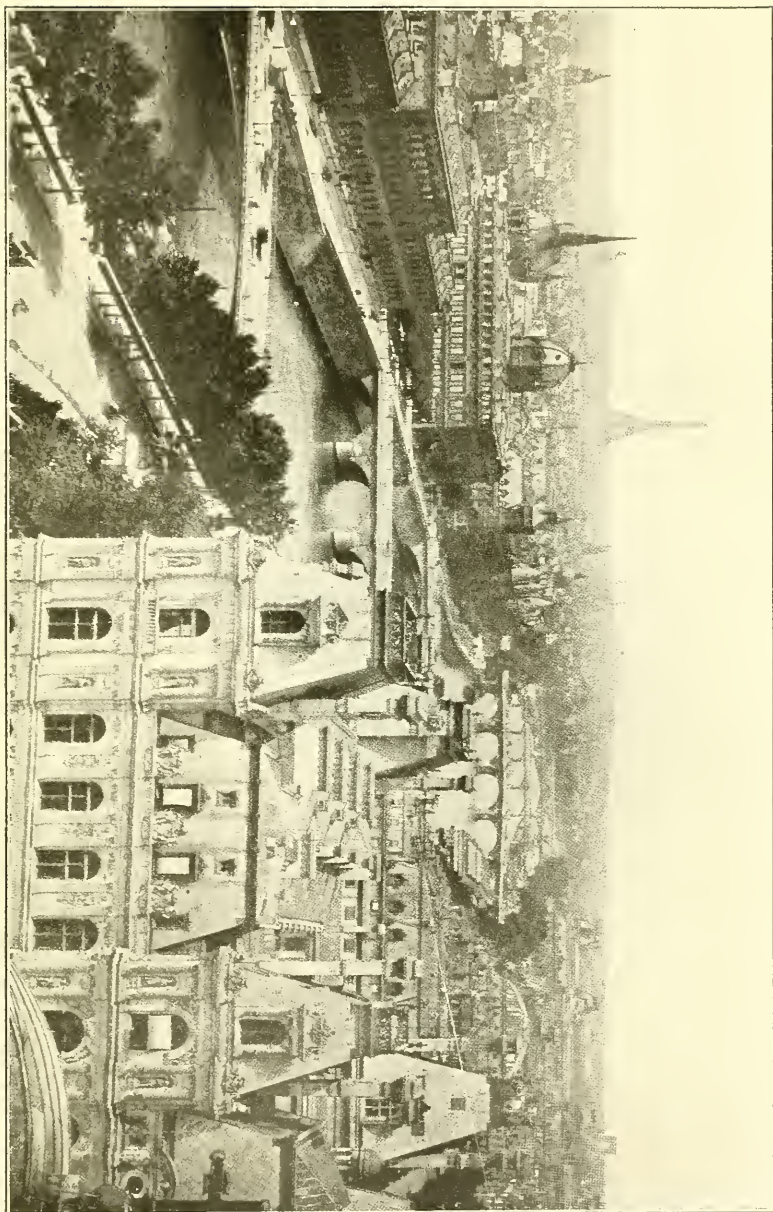
It is very rare that a handsome residence is seen. Most of the dwellings are plain. All houses are covered with red tile and nearly all are of yellow stone or brick. There are no frame buildings anywhere. There are no skyscrapers in the cities as in this country, and few buildings of over four stories. As a rule buildings are two stories, and nearly all of them have an ancient look. In Switzerland and Italy it is not uncommon to see the second story of residences filled with hay.

#### CATHEDRALS AND PALACES.

By all odds the handsomest structures are the cathedrals and royal palaces. In England the Episcopalians have the finest cathedrals and on the continent the Catholics. The greatest cathedral in Europe is that of St. Peter's at Rome. St. Paul's in the same city is also a splendid structure. Next to these are St. Mark's in Venice or the cathedral at Milan. In England Westminster Abbey and St. Paul's at London, and the cathedrals at York, Durham, Glasgow and Chester are specially notable. The palaces of the kings in Germany, England, and Italy are gorgeous in their furnishings.

#### EUROPEAN RIVERS.

There are no rivers in Europe of half the size of the Missouri or Mississippi. The Thames in England, the Seine in France,



*BIRD'S-EYE VIEW OF PARIS*





the Rhine, the Tiber or the Po are not larger than is the Gascogne at its mouth. They are made navigable by dredging and by constant improvement, and are utilized to the fullest extent. The Tiber is a muddy stream, as is the Thames, but most of the European rivers are clear. The Rhine is the most picturesque, but not as much so as the Hudson, of New York.

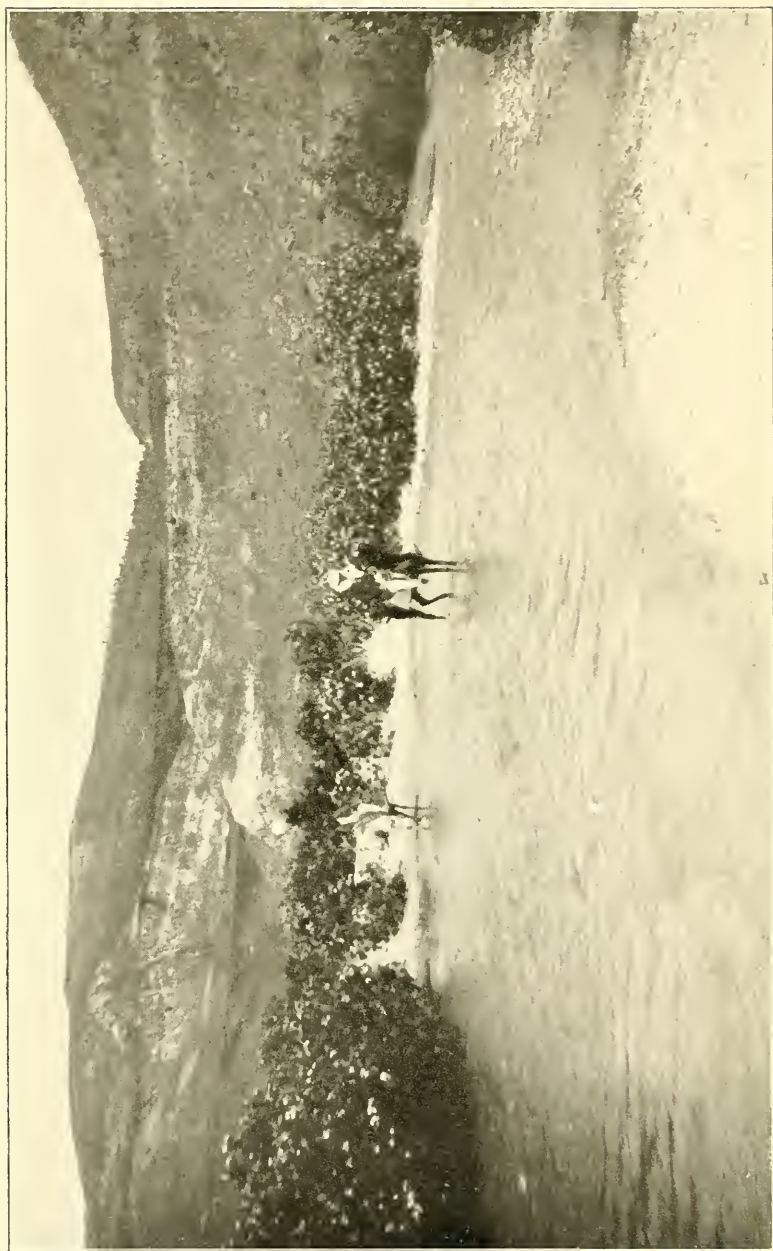
#### THE PREVALENCE OF SOLDIERS.

If we are to judge from the number of soldiers to be met with everywhere European countries must be in constant apprehension of war. At least ten times as many soldiers are seen by a tourist in Europe as can be seen in traveling through America. They are everywhere, along the highways, in the cities, at the stations. Militarism is in the air, all trainmen and policemen dress in military uniform as do even the porters in the hotels. More soldiers are seen in Italy than in any other country, although there are many in Germany and England. The Swiss, Scotch and English have the most attractive uniforms.









*THE BROOK JABBOK—Where Jacob Wrestled With the Angel*

FOREIGN MISSIONS.



**FOREIGN MISSIONS.**

The chief problem of the age is that of Christian missions. Over twenty-one millions of dollars are being contributed by Christian nations to support sixteen thousand missionaries in heathen lands. To these contributions may be added several millions of dollars raised upon the foreign field and many thousands of native workers who are aiding the missionaries in their work.

The missionaries and contributions are nearly all from America and the British Isles, being about equally divided between them. Only a small proportion is from other lands.

Foreign missionary endeavor, as we know it, is about a century old, but its chief progress has been within the past decade, having been nearly as great within that period as it had been in the nine decades prior. And yet the fact remains that only about one-third of the human race is under the influence of Christianity. The other two-thirds are heathen, or to state it differently, five hundred millions are dominated by Christianity and one thousand millions by heathenism.

We have said that the most important problem of the day is that of missions. This is strictly true. For despite the carping of critics or the opposing view of unsympathetic and superficial observers the fact is that the Christian missionary has been and is the pioneer of progress and enlightenment in all parts of the world. There are very few sections of the earth in which he may not be found, and there is not a country which has been opened up to civilization but that its lighted torches have been first carried there by these evangelists of progress.

Today the chief work of education, of medical relief, and of rescue from death by starvation and in other forms is being accomplished not by statesmanship, not by commerce, not by war, but by these brave, self-sacrificing missionaries of Christianity.

We make this statement after having visited many of the heathen lands and made personal investigation of existing conditions.

One of the reasons which prompted this tour was that such investigation might be made and that by personal observation a true knowledge might be obtained as to the actual facts concerning which there is a wide diversity of opinion.

In traveling around the world by way of the east the first spot at which one touches, the Hawaiian Islands, is both an object lesson and a prophecy of Christian missions. It is an evidence of what they have done and may do. The islands are called "The Paradise of the Pacific." Nature has wrought wonderfully to make them in scenery, in climate, and in vegetation what this title would indicate. But man has made their intellectual and moral adornment, their development and their culture a reflex of their physical conditions. Less than a century, but little over a half century ago they were the abode of savages. Some say they were infested with cannibals, but this the natives of the present day deny. They were redeemed by missionaries, who introduced civilization, planted the banners of peace and progress and did all the pioneer work of their present prosperous and highly enlightened state. The world contains no more striking and concrete testimonial to the beneficence of Christian missions than the Hawaiian Islands.

When Commodore Perry entered Mississippi Bay in 1853 and first unlocked the doorway to Japan he had aboard a Baptist



missionary. From that day to this there has been a steady growth of missions in that remarkable country. While there are less than 70,000 Protestant Christians there can be no denying that Christianity has been the initial force that has brought 27,000 public schools, two large Universities, 2,000 higher educational institutions and has made education compulsory within twenty-five years.

While it is true that Christianity has not the hold in Japan that it has in some other countries it is plain that heathenism is decaying. One has but to visit its heathen temples, beautiful as some of them are, to be convinced that Buddhism and Shintoism have no longer the hold upon the people they once had.

The religious problem in Japan now is infidelity, not heathenism, no religion rather than a false one.

Confucianism, which for over three thousand years, has held the millions of China within its grasp, has within the past few years been gradually yielding its hold upon the people. Many of its temples have been dismantled and destroyed, or converted into schools and those that remain are the resort chiefly of the mendicant, vicious or ignorant classes.

All over the empire are splendid Christian colleges and elementary training schools, established and sustained by mission funds, which are accomplishing a great work in the elevation and education of the people. There are 389 intermediate, high schools and colleges and 2196 day schools attended by over 54,000 students. All these are being instructed in western learning, a great improvement upon the effete native schools, where students are only taught the ancient Confucian classics which are of no practical value, and in the study of which the memory is abnormally exercised in knowledge that is useless and to the neglect

of other faculties. No wonder that the people are like so many children.

It has been a hundred years since the first missionary, Robert Morrison, went to China. Now there are 4000 missionaries in the Empire and the number is increasing continually. Since the suppression of the Boxer rebellion the treatment of missionaries has greatly improved, and the attitude of the government has become very friendly. The unselfishness of the missionaries in ministering to the starving in periods of famine and in not resenting persecution has finally made a deep impress upon the Chinese mind which has hitherto not understood how there could be other motive for human action than that of selfishness.

Missions in China as elsewhere are conducted in four different ways, viz.: By evangelism, by education, by medical hospitals and attendance, and by house to house visiting. All four methods are employed with great effect.

To work in either of these departments requires a knowledge of the language, tact, patience, energy, consecration and special preparation. The popular idea that any sort of an incompetent or sentimentalist will answer for a missionary is egregious error. There is no kind of effort which requires a wider range of high qualities. It was a pleasure to note that the missionaries, both men and women, were people of above the average type engaged in similar work in the home land. While their labors are onerous they seem passionately in love with them and in not a single instance was one heard to express a desire to abandon them.

It is difficult to tell in which department of mission work the most good is being accomplished. The people flock to hear preaching, and are attentive and devout, equally if not more so than

are those in so-called Christian lands. Some of them are quite intelligent and active Christians.

There can be no doubt of the valuable work done in the schools and colleges. The truth is that what is being effected in the way of education is almost exclusively the work of missionaries. But for the latter the people would be in the grossest ignorance. There are numerous excellent universities where are taught courses of study equal to those in the average American school of higher learning and the students are equally as apt as in the home land. The Bible is taught in them all. Thus the seeds of truth are sown at a receptive and impressionable period.

Too much can not be said in praise of the hospitals, of the medical relief afforded these people so long the victims of charlatantry and ignorance. But for the missionaries they would still be without relief. The lives saved during the times of famine alone should be more than compensation for all the money expended in missions. The physical attention given to patients is always supplemented by religious instruction and evangelistic appeal.

The work of house to house visiting is one of the most gracious and effective forms of mission work. It is chiefly done by women and the good effected can not be overstated. Woman is the great burden bearer in China and their home life is a dark one which is greatly brightened by the ministry of Christian women.

Here are some of the practical benefits which Christianity has brought to China:

Elevation of woman.

Suppression of footbinding.

Gradual abolition of opium habit and traffic.

Education of the people.

Intelligent medical attention.

Good government.

Purity of the Home.

These and many other blessings it has brought, is bringing not to China only but to all heathen lands.

Christianity has solved for Japan the vexed problem of Korea. This hermit nation, the source of two wars, one between China and Japan, and another between Russia and Japan, and whose turbulence and lawlessness have been giving Japan ceaseless trouble, is about to become a peaceful, law-abiding community under the elevating and regenerating power of Christian missions. One of the greatest Christian movements in the history of the race has been in constantly accelerating progress there for several years. Over a thousand churches have been organized and the evangelistic spirit has seized the people with such power that robbery and marauding have ceased, industry has supplanted idleness and what Japan has hitherto found it impossible to accomplish by force the Prince of Peace is bringing about through His benign and enlightening agencies.

We may look in vain for any parallel in history to the transformation that has been wrought in the inhabitants of the Philippine Islands since America came in possession of them ten years ago. That this change has been due more to the influence of Christianity than to all other causes will be conceded.

A change scarcely less remarkable is that which has taken place in Burmah since Adoniram Judson began his work there a hundred years ago. While less than 75,000 out of the six million are Christian the change has been most marked in the splen-

did system of education, the hospitals and churches and the elevation of the people.

It has been but little over a century since the English cobbler, William Carey, began his work in India, but nowhere has Christianity left a deeper impress than in that idolatrous land. Its great universities, its normal and public schools, its hospitals and its churches are striking memorials of nearly all the elevation that has come to that unhappy people within this period.

In Egypt, in Palestine and Turkey the work of Christian elevation is in progress. Nowhere in the world are there within a community of equal size a larger number of intelligently conducted hospitals than in Jerusalem. They may be found all over Palestine, orphanages, eye and leper and surgical and other hospitals upon the spots where the Savior began His work of healing and of love.

It is not possible within the compass of this paper to give facts and figures indicative of the growth and development of Christianity in foreign lands or to point out in detail the moral, intellectual, physical and religious benefits it has brought to the people. Suffice it to say that they are plainly manifest to all unprejudiced observers.

That Christianity is upon the threshold of greater victories there would seem to be no doubt. It has but entered upon its work, has but begun to demonstrate its superiority to the native religions and to attract the considerate attention of the people.

The world is at peace. The nations whose commercial and intellectual and social power is beginning to obtain supremacy in heathen lands are Christian nations. The unselfish and elevating influences of Christianity as compared with the selfish and degrading characteristics of the heathen religions are grad-

ually through schools and hospitals and the godly and exemplary lives of the missionaries making themselves felt and winning the approval of the people.

Those in the home lands who are contributing to the support of missions in foreign fields are discovering that money so appropriated is not wasted, but is wisely invested and is yielding large results both in the good it is doing to its beneficiaries and to the reflex action it is exerting upon those who are fulfilling the Divine Commands and who are reaping the Divine promise that "it is more blessed to give than to receive," and the other like unto it, "give and it shall be given unto you," "for with the same measure that ye mete withal it shall be measured to you again."

## LXX.

### THE HEATHEN RELIGIONS.

In order to have a proper appreciation of the work and necessity of Foreign Missions there should be some understanding of the difference between Christianity and the other religions from the grasp of which it is the purpose of missionary effort to rescue. There has not been, is not any race or nationality that has not some kind of religion. There is implanted in every human breast an instinctive sense of homage to some higher power. All men are born with an intuitive consciousness of the existence of a creator and of an obligation to serve Him. But that all religions are therefore equally meritorious and elevating and that all men should be left undisturbed to follow their consciences no sane man who has been a witness to the degrading influences of idolatrous religions and whose reason has compelled a comparison of them with Christianity can for a moment believe.

In preceding chapters reference has been made to the various forms of heathenism and it will not be necessary to repeat them. But as a summing up and in order to understand what these various religions require of their devotees, a separate chapter with reference thereto may be of interest. The attempt will not be made to enter into any exhaustive analysis of these various beliefs or any elaborate description of their forms of worship or of the effects upon their worshippers. Only in a general way will attention be called to them and to the nations which believe in them and a brief comparison of them with Christianity will be made.



While there are many religious faiths which are non-Christian there are four principal heathen religions, viz.: Buddhism, Shintoism, Hinduism and Mohammedanism. Confucianism can hardly be called a religion. It is regarded more in the light of a philosophy. There are also many who will deny that Mohammedanism is heathen. For much of the Koran is taken from the Bible, and the existence of Christ is admitted, but only as a prophet. He is not regarded as Divine.

After having spent several months mingling with people who profess these religions and having given some study to them, the solemn conviction is here expressed that the work of Christianity in saving those who are called heathen would be materially aided if missionaries had a proper understanding of heathen creeds. There is much in these creeds that is good, much upon which Christianity may build, much in accord with the teachings of Christ. Many a missionary has made the fatal mistake of denouncing them in toto and thus arousing the resentment and antagonism of those whom they were trying to reach. It was because the English committed this error that they brought upon themselves the horrible massacres of Calcutta and Cawnpore and Lucknow. Many a missionary has lost either his influence or his life in not understanding the important fact that no man will tolerate ridicule or denunciation of his religious belief. The more ignorant and the more in error the more intolerant and dangerous he is liable to be.

There are certain good things which all these heathen religionists hold in common and to which Christians can generally assent. Here are a few:

They all teach respect and love of parents. The Shinto and Buddhist and Confucian and Hindu religions place special em-

phasis upon reverence of ancestors. They even go to excess and require that children shall be practically under parental control as long as their parents live and shall serve the latter until death. In these days of irreverence there is much in this fidelity to parents which Christians may study with profit.

So far as we could observe the heathen are very devout, especially are the Mohammedans and Hindus, more devout than Christians. They pray oftener and with more regularity. They are faithful to their creeds and are not tossed about by every wave of doctrine.

They are temperate in the use of intoxicating drinks. Some of these religions formerly punished drunkenness with death. None of them encourage or foster saloons. We do not recall to have seen a drunken man among the millions of heathen in the Orient. All the drunken men we observed in that part of the world, we regret to say, were among those who came from lands claiming to be Christian, our own being largely represented.

In the matter of love of parents, reverence, and temperance the heathen set us good examples.

Their religions also teach the importance of bodily cleanliness, of frequent bathing, and they contribute regularly and liberally to the support of their worship.

To reverence, filial obedience and temperance they add cleanliness and liberality. And many of these religions inculcate brotherly love and kindness.

There are also running through them all certain customs and observances quite similar to those of Christianity, so many of them that one can not resist the conclusion that they are off-shoots or perversions of it.

In nearly all their forms of worship are certain sacrificial offer-

ings embodying the same idea of vicarious suffering as is that of the atonement contained in the ancient Hebrew rites, foreshadowing the great sacrifice upon Calvary.

The Altar of Heaven at Pekin, the Temple to Jupiter at Baalbek and the Parthenon or the Temple to Athenae at Athens, four of the largest heathen temples in the world, were constructed after the plan of Solomon's Temple with surrounding courts, brazen lavers and altars of sacrifice in the outer courts, while the temples themselves are of the same general plan of construction as that of Solomon with the two rooms and evidently designed for a similar mode of worship.

As these were all built subsequent to Solomon's Temple one can not resist the conclusions that they were copies of it and that therefore their forms of worship and the religions they represented must have descended in some way from it.

In these temples are to be found carvings of a Tree of Life and seeming portrayals of Eden, while there are many designs recalling the ancient Mosaic law.

The Hindus and possibly other idolatrous religions have the idea of a Trinity in their godhead and there is much in the teachings of Buddha and Confucius and the Hindu philosophers quite similar to those of Christ.

Here are the five cardinal principles of Confucius: Propriety, righteousness, knowledge, benevolence, sincerity, all of which square with Christianity.

Most, if not all of these religions teach an existence after death, but in a very different form from that taught in the Bible.

Most of them teach the transmigration of souls, that after death the soul enters either into that of some other human being, or into some form of animal life. The Hindus believe that

every animal or bird or insect contains the soul of some person who has died. Hence many of them refuse to kill any kind of animal, even a fly or a gnat or a serpent under the superstition that in doing so they might be slaying an ancestor.

This is as far as they go in their idea of immortality, that life is reproduced in other life indefinitely. One theory is that every deformed or afflicted person inherits his affliction as a curse from some ancestor, or rather they consider disease or affliction as an evidence of an evil spirit in the person so afflicted. Therefore their religion does not teach them to minister to the weak, but to regard them as the victims of the disfavor of the gods. Instead of helping the weak they would destroy them and a heathen hospital or eleemosynary institution is something almost unknown.

The Buddhist or Hindu or Shinto looks forward not to life after death but to annihilation as a blessing. They have none of the blessed hope of immortality which animates the Christian and cannot understand that spirit of love and unselfishness which is the chief element of Christianity.

It is true that fraternalism and love of each other are taught and practiced, but for selfish reason, because it is better for the one who loves and not for the sake of the person upon whom affection is bestowed.

Confucius had a golden rule, but it was negative, not positive as is the golden rule of the Bible. It ran as follows: "Do not unto others as ye would not have others do unto you." It lacked the element of unselfishness contained in the teachings of Christ.

The social lives of the heathen are corrupt and immoral. Polygamy, concubinage, prostitution are not only tolerated but encouraged. Even the gods are said to practice them. The

purity of the home, the sanctity of the marriage tie is continually and flagrantly violated. Women are looked upon as inferior beings and are not placed upon a position co-ordinate with man. They are not educated, are made burdenbearers, and the advent of a girl baby is regarded such a misfortune that formerly they were publicly drowned or strangled. While this is now forbidden by law there is but little doubt but that these hideous murders are still practiced secretly.

The Hindus regard monkeys and cows and peacocks and pigeons as sacred. They even bow down and worship them. They believe the waters of the Ganges and the City of Benares to be hallowed and they have gods innumerable.

While the Mohammedans believe in but one God they have numerous absurd superstitions and legends and their morals are but little better than are those of the Buddhists, the Shintoists, the Confucianists or the Hindus.

The blessed doctrines of immortality and love and purity which characterize the religion of Christ do not animate these heathen religions. While Christianity everywhere elevates, heathenism always degrades and one has but to observe the effects of each upon the people to be convinced of the immeasurable superiority of Christianity over all other religions.

No unprejudiced or intelligent observer can hesitate a moment in a decision between them.

That Christianity is destined to make much more rapid progress in the near future than it has in the past there can be do doubt.



*Breathes there a man with soul so dead,  
Who never to himself hath said:  
    This is my own, my native land,  
Whose heart hath ne'er within him burned,  
As home his footsteps he has turned  
    From wandering on a foreign strand?*





















8 25 1910

One copy del. to Cat. Div.

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 020 196 969 4